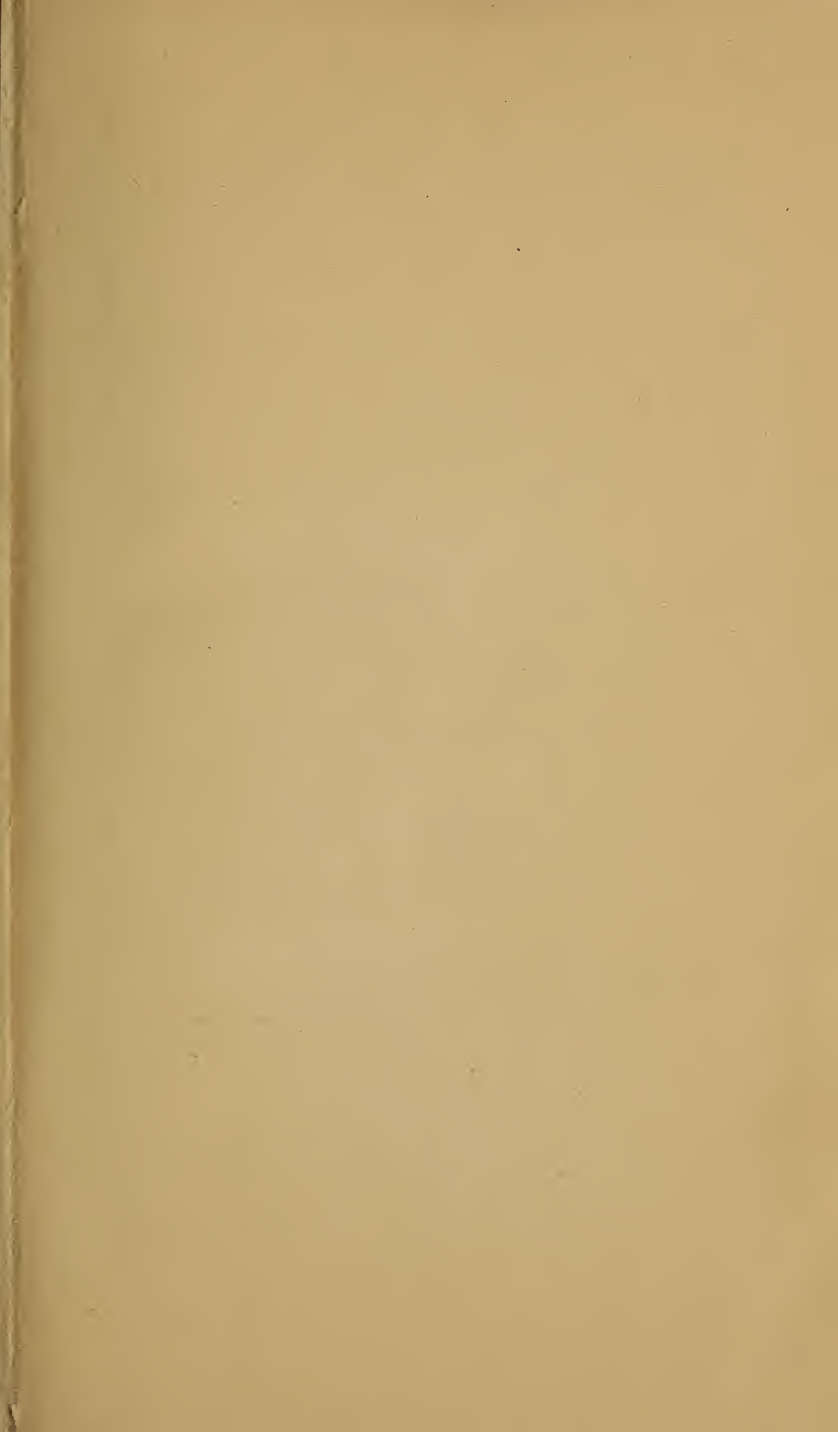




Class PC 2109
Book F 65



Deposited in Dist. Clk's office Sept

INTRODUCTION

(17th. 1840

TO

See Vol. 15 P. 246

THE FRENCH LANGUAGE:

COMPRISING

A FRENCH GRAMMAR,

WITH

AN APPENDIX

OF IMPORTANT TABLES AND OTHER MATTER;

AND

A FRENCH READER,

CONSISTING OF SELECTIONS FROM THE CLASSIC LITERATURE OF
FRANCE, ACCOMPANIED BY

EXPLANATORY NOTES,

AND

A VOCABULARY

ADAPTED TO THE SELECTIONS.

BY

DAVID FOSDICK, JR.

ANDOVER:

PUBLISHED BY GOULD, NEWMAN, & SAXTON.

NEW YORK:

CORNER OF FULTON AND NASSAU STS.

1840.



PC 2109
.F65

Entered according to Act of Congress in the year 1840, by
GOULD, NEWMAN, AND SAXTON,
in the Clerk's Office of the District Court of Massachusetts.

4070

PREFACE.

THE study of the French language is now so common among the youth of this country, in pursuing what is called a liberal course of education, that a want of acquaintance with it on the part of one not considerably advanced in years is remarked as denoting scanty opportunities of instruction. To meet the demand thus occasioned, elementary books have been greatly multiplied within a few years. There yet appear, however, "ample room and verge enough" for improvement in their plan and execution. The present volume is designed to afford, in itself, sufficient resources for the attainment of a very considerable acquaintance with the language. It combines a Grammar, a Reader, and a Dictionary, and it is hoped will be found an adequate equipment for serious action, thus obviating the usual necessity of purchasing three several books at the outset. Should the first endeavors of the student be found successful and encouraging, this book may be the stepping-stone to the perusal of any productions of French literature towards which attention may be directed.

The Grammar is not intended as a mere abridgment. Completeness has been one of my aims in its preparation. Its materials have been derived mainly from the best French Grammars to which I had access, and, to some little extent, from my own direct observation. I have endeavored to reproduce here every important principle of French grammar which has in any way met my knowledge. The general scheme which I have pursued is, I believe, new, save that it is the same as that of my German Grammar, published rather less than two years ago. The declension, agreement, and government of words are not treated of in different and distant parts of the book, but all that relates to one part of speech is presented under one separate head, yet, I trust, without confusion. Accuracy and convenience of method, both in the main and in detail, constitute one of the most essential requisites in a Grammar of any language. The contents should be so arranged that an inquirer may always know just where to look for the explanation of any grammatical fact, instead of being obliged, as he too often is, to search hither and thither without chart or compass.

It is common to introduce into French Grammars Exercises for practice in writing French. This custom, which tends to augment the size of Grammars so much, I have not followed, for two reasons: first, because a Grammar does not seem to me a strictly suitable re-

pository for such Exercises; and, secondly, because I am persuaded there is a much better way of learning to write French. Let the learner begin by translating some very easy French into English, and when he has forgotten the words of the original text (perhaps a day or two afterwards,) let him attempt to retranslate the English into French. Comparison of the result with the original will show him his faults and lead to amendment.

It will be seen that I have given a rather minute account of French pronunciation. It is probable that some of my statements will not find universal assent on the part of good French scholars. The truth is, there is a want of exact uniformity among the best speakers of the language. An ear not very nice will readily detect differences of considerable importance. By way of analogy, observe what a discrepancy exists among the best authorities on the subject of *English* pronunciation! I have struggled to do the best I could. I shall doubtless be thought wrong by one man, where another, in general equally competent to judge, will think me right. The perplexities of the case will, I trust, induce lenient criticism.

The Selections in this volume have been made from the productions of the chief elegant writers of France, especially from those which afforded convenient opportunity of presenting entire pieces, or at least extracts not unintelligible and useless when withdrawn from their connection. I trust they will not be found to involve too much difficulty for beginners. The requisition of considerable effort, with proper aid, best promotes progress. The Explanatory Notes consist mostly of references to principles in the Grammar which illustrate the text.

As most of this volume was printed while I was living twenty or thirty miles from the press which issues it, I have labored under unusual disadvantage in correcting the sheets. Some typographical errors owe their existence to this circumstance. A few mistakes of considerable importance which have met my eye since the sheets were struck off are noticed at the foot of page x. I have observed some others which are of little consequence, and can easily be corrected without mention. I am aware that the book exhibits many imperfections, and fear that many of which I am not at all aware will be detected by abler scrutiny. It is easier, however, to discover faults when a work is completed, than to avoid them in its preparation. Trusting that my book will not encounter an alertness to censure, I here leave it to speak for itself.

DAVID FOSDICK, JR.

ANDOVER, MASS. }
Sept. 1, 1840. }

CONTENTS.

PREFACE,	Page. 3
--------------------	------------

GRAMMAR.

PART I. ELEMENTS OF WORDS.

CHAPTER I. ALPHABET,	13
CHAPTER II. PRONUNCIATION,	14
I. <i>Simple Vowels</i> ,	14
II. <i>Compound Vowels</i> ,	17
III. <i>Diphthongs</i> ,	18
IV. <i>Simple Consonants</i> ,	21
V. <i>Combined Consonants</i> ,	29
VI. <i>Peculiar sound of Consonants with</i> <i>Vowels</i> ,	33
VII. <i>Peculiar sound of Vowels with</i> <i>Consonants</i> ,	37
VIII. <i>Silence of Vowels</i> ,	39
IX. <i>Silence of Consonants</i> ,	41
X. <i>Syllables and Words</i> ,	45
XI. <i>Emphasis</i> ,	47
CHAPTER III. ORTHOGRAPHY,	48
I. <i>Syllables</i> ,	48
II. <i>Letters</i> ,	49
III. <i>Accents</i> ,	50
IV. <i>Other marks</i> ,	50

PART II. FORMS OF WORDS.

CHAPTER I. ARTICLE,	53
I. <i>Variation</i> ,	53
II. <i>Determination of Form</i> ,	54
III. <i>Position</i> ,	54
IV. <i>Additional Peculiarities</i> ,	55
CHAPTER II. SUBSTANTIVE,	63
I. <i>Variation</i> ,	63
General Statement,	63
Gender of Substantives,	63
Number of Substantives,	65
II. <i>Determination of Form</i> ,	68
III. <i>Position</i> ,	69
IV. <i>Additional Peculiarities</i> ,	71
CHAPTER III. ADJECTIVE,	72
I. <i>Variation</i> ,	72
General Statement,	72
Gender,	72
Number,	75
II. <i>Determination of Form</i> ,	77
III. <i>Position</i> ,	79
IV. <i>Additional Peculiarities</i> ,	81
CHAPTER IV. PRONOUN,	82
I. <i>Variation</i> ,	82
General Statement,	82
Personal Pronouns,	82
Possessive “	83
Relative “	84
Absolute “	85
Demonstrative Pronouns,	85
Miscellaneous “	86
II. <i>Determination of Form</i> ,	88

Personal Pronouns,	88
Possessive Pronouns,	92
Relative and Absolute Pronouns,	94
Demonstrative Pronouns,	97
Miscellaneous Pronouns,	100
III. <i>Position</i> ,	100
IV. <i>Additional Peculiarities</i> ,	103
 CHAPTER V. VERB,	 112
I. <i>Variation</i> ,	112
General Statement,	112
Auxiliary Verbs,	115
Regular Verbs,	121
1st Conjugation,	122
2d " 	125
3d " 	129
4th " 	132
Verb with <i>être</i> ,	137
Irregular Verbs,	140
Defective Verbs,	141
Impersonal Verbs,	141
Pronominal Verbs,	143
II. <i>Determination of Form</i> ,	149
I. Voice,	149
II. Mode,	149
A. Infinitive,	149
B. Participles,	150
C. Indicative,	153
D. Conditional,	154
E. Subjunctive,	155
F. Imperative,	158
III. Tense,	158
IV. Number and Person,	162
III. <i>Position</i> ,	165
IV. <i>Additional Peculiarities</i> ,	166

CHAPTER VI. PARTICLES,	174
I. <i>General Statement</i> ,	174
II. <i>Position</i> ,	176
III. <i>Additional Peculiarities</i> ,	178
APPENDIX,	183
A. Words in which <i>u</i> preceded by <i>g</i> or <i>q</i> is pronounced as part of a diphthong,	183
B. Words in which <i>u</i> preceded by <i>g</i> or <i>q</i> is silent,	184
C. Words which begin with silent <i>h</i> ,	187
D. Words ending with <i>er</i> in which final <i>r</i> is sounded,	192
E. Words in which final <i>s</i> is sounded,	193
F. Words in which final <i>t</i> is sounded,	195
G. Proper Names of countries and districts larger than cities which do not take the Definite Article,	196
H. Expressions in which common Substantives are used without the Definite Article,	197
I. Substantives of two genders with a different signification in each,	202
J. French Numerals,	204
K. Adjectives of different signification before and after a Substantive,	208
L. Verbs conjugated with <i>être</i> instead of <i>avoir</i> ,	209
M. Irregular Verbs,	210
N. Adverbial expressions which require the Subjunctive or Indicative Mode,	277
O. Interrogation and Negation in French,	278
P. Use of the Prepositions <i>à</i> and <i>de</i> before Infinitives and Substantives,	284

SELECTIONS.

PART I. PROSE.

Amour de la Patrie,	291	Montesquieu, . . .	310
Obscurité du Style,	291	La Bruyère, . . .	310
Avarice, . . .	291	Mahomet, . . .	311
Sincérité, . . .	292	Les Grecs et les Italiens,	312
Fermeté d'Esprit, . . .	292	Les peuples de la Bétique,	313
Amour Filial, . . .	292	Un Combat de Taureaux,	314
Modestie de Platon, . . .	293	De la Nature, . . .	315
Exagération, . . .	293	De la Piété et de l'Hy-	
Boileau et un Jésuite,	294	pocrisie, . . .	316
La Cupidité doublement		L'Art d'Ecrire, . . .	317
Punie, . . .	295	De la Grâce, . . .	318
L'Homme, . . .	295	L'Eloquence, . . .	320
Le Riche et le Pauvre,	297	La Religion des Romains,	321
Respect à la Vieillesse,	298	Vanité, . . .	322
Jerusalem, . . .	299	Extrême variété de la	
Constantinople, . . .	300	Nature, . . .	323
Venise, . . .	301	La Paresse, . . .	324
Alexandrie, . . .	302	Mépris de la Mort, . . .	324
Chillon, . . .	304	La Mort, . . .	326
Buffon, . . .	306	Fragilité Humaine, . . .	328
Marius, . . .	306	Rapidité de la Vie, . . .	329
Sylla, . . .	307	Immortalité de l'Ame,	329
César, . . .	308	L'Evangile, . . .	330
Fénélon Ecrivain, . . .	309		

PART II. POETRY.

La Tete et la Queue du		Le Tigre et le Renard,	336
Serpent, . . .	333	Le Fleuve, . . .	337
Le Chauve-souris et les		Les Deux Voyageurs,	337
deux Belettes, . . .	334	Maniere de Lire les	
L'Yvrogne et sa Femme,	335	Vers, . . .	338

L'Enseignement Mutuel,	339	La Moderation,	348
La Rose,	340	Les Hirondelles,	349
La Violette,	340	Mort de Jeanne D'Arc,	350
Le Coin du Feu,	342	Bonaparte,	352
Existence de Dieu,	343	L'autre Monde,	354
La Mauvaise Honte,	344	Extrait de l'Hymne au	
La Mort,	346	Christ,	355
VOCABULARY,			357

INDEX OF AUTHORS.

AMABLE TASTU (MME.),	346	FONTANES,	317
ANONYMOUS,	291-3, 337, 339	HARPE (LA),	306
ARNAULT,	337	LAMARTINE,	352, 354, 355
BARANTE (DE),	310	MASSILLON,	329
BARTHELEMY,	298	MAURY,	309
BERANGER (J.-P. DE),	349	MONNIER (LE),	336
BERQUIN,	295	MONTESQUIEU,	321, 322
BOILEAU,	344	NEUFCHATEAU (F. DE),	338
BOSSUET,	328	PASCAL,	323
BRUYERE (LA),	297	PIERRE (ST.),	326
BUFFON,	315, 316	ROCHEFOUCAULT,	324
CHATEAUBRIAND,	299, 300	ROUSSEAU (J.-B.),	343
CHENEDOLLE,	340	ROUSSEAU (J.-J.),	330
CONDORCET,	311	SEVIGNE (MME. DE),	293, 294
DELAVIGNE,	350	SISMONDI,	312
DELILLE,	342	STAEI (MME. DE),	301
DUBOS,	340	VERTOT,	306, 307, 308
DUMAS,	304	VILLEMAIN,	320
FENELON,	313	VOLNEY,	302
FLORIAN,	314	VOLTAIRE,	318, 348
FONTAINE,	333, 334, 335		

ERRATA.

p. 19, line 4, 5. Instead of "as a in the English word father," read
as a in § 5.

p. 86, § 379. Instead of "*Autres*," read *Autrui*.

p. 110, § 509. Instead of "preposition *en*," read *Pronoun en*.

p. 286, under No. IV. the verb *Pouvoir* is omitted.

A

GRAMMAR

OF

THE FRENCH LANGUAGE;

WITH AN

APPENDIX.

BY

DAVID FOSDICK, JR.

ANDOVER:

PUBLISHED BY GOULD, NEWMAN, AND SAXTON,

NEW YORK:

CORNER OF FULTON AND NASSAU STS.

1840.

ON THE

THE FINEST LANDS

AND THE

THE FINEST LANDS

THE FINEST LANDS

THE FINEST LANDS

THE FINEST LANDS

THE FINEST LANDS

THE FINEST LANDS

FRENCH GRAMMAR.

PART I.

ELEMENTS OF WORDS.

CHAP. I.

§ 1. ALPHABET.

<i>Letters.</i>		<i>Names.</i>		<i>Eng. representation.</i>
A, a	. .	Ah	. .	Ah
B, b	. .	Bay	. .	B
C, c	. .	Say or Kay	. .	S or K
D, d	. .	Day	. .	D
E, e	. .	A	. .	Ay
F, f	. .	Eff or Fay	. .	F
G, g	. .	Zhay or Ghay	. .	Zh or G
H, h	. .	Ahsh	. .	H
I, i	. .	Ee	. .	E
J, j	. .	Zhee	. .	Zh
K, k	. .	Kah	. .	K
L, l	. .	Ell or Lay	. .	L
M, m	. .	Emm or May	. .	M
N, n	. .	Enn or Nay	. .	N
O, o	. .	O	. .	O
P, p	. .	Pay	. .	P
Q, q	. .	—	. .	Q
R, r	. .	Air or Ray	. .	R
S, s	. .	Ess or Say	. .	S

T, t	.	.	Tay	.	.	.	T
U, u	.	.	—				—
V, v	.	.	Vay	.	.	.	V
X, x	.	.	Eeks or Ksay	.			X
Y, y	.	.	E <i>Grec</i>	.	.		E or Y
Z, z	.	.	Zed or Zay	.	.		Z

Observations.

§ 2. OBSERV. I. When a letter is represented in the foregoing table as having two names, the first is the old mode of designating it, and the second is one recently introduced, which has not yet universally supplanted the old.

§ 3. OBS. II. When the names assigned to letters in the foregoing table end in *ay*, this termination is to be pronounced in a short, quick manner, more like *ai* in *said* than like *ay* in *say*.

§ 4. OBS. III. The names of the letters Q and U are not stated, because these names cannot be adequately represented by any English combination of letters. The sounds of these letters will be described hereafter. The name and the sound of the letter U are identical. The name of the letter Q is formed by prefixing the sound of the English Q or K to that of the French vowel U.

CHAP. II.

PRONUNCIATION.

SOUNDS OF THE SIMPLE VOWELS.

§ 5. *a*. The sound of this vowel is not, as is commonly stated, exactly that of *a* in the English word *father*, but intermediate between that and the sound of *a* in the English word *call*; e. g. *âge*, age, *rare*, rare. (See Obs. I. § 15.)

§ 6. *e*. This vowel without an accent is either mute or sounded much like *e* in the English word *water* ; e. g. *robe*, *robe, je, I, devenir*, to become. (See Obs. II. § 16.)

§ 7. *é*. The vowel *e* with the acute accent is sounded as *a* in the English word *ale* ; e. g. *thé*, tea, *été*, summer.

§ 8. *è*. The vowel *e* with the grave accent is sounded much as the first *e* in the English word *there*, but rather shorter ; e. g. *règle*, rule, *modèle*, model.

§ 9. *ê*. The letter *e* with the circumflex accent is sounded much the same as the last *e*, but the mouth must be opened wider in uttering it and the voice must dwell upon it longer ; e. g. *tempête*, tempest, *bête*, foolish.

§ 10. *i*. Sounded as *e* in the English word *me* ; e. g. *il*, he, *ici*, here.

§ 11. *o*. This vowel without an accent is pronounced like *o* in the English word *ore* ; e. g. *parole*, wood, *école*, school.

§ 12. *ô*. The vowel *o* with the circumflex accent is pronounced very long, as *o* in the English word *note* ; e. g. *côte*, coast, *apôtre*, apostle.

§ 13. *u*. There is no sound in English which corresponds with that of this vowel. (See Obs. III. § 17.)

§ 14. *y*. This letter has the same sound as the French *i*, i. e. the sound of *e* in the English word *me* ; e. g. *lyre*, lyre, *dynastie*, dynasty. (See Obs. IV. § 18.)

Observations.

§ 15. OBS. I. Well-educated Frenchmen could in nearly all cases readily detect the foreign origin of an American or Englishman by his manner of sounding the French letter *a*, even supposing there were no other indication within their notice. The Grammars of the French language commonly mislead the learner on this point.

§ 16. OBS. II. It must be remarked, that the statement given concerning the sounds of the different vowels does not apply universally ; for where another vowel or a consonant

follows, belonging to the same syllable, the sound of the vowels is often peculiar. The varieties of sound which they assume in different connections will be specified hereafter. (See §§ 20 seq. 30 seq. and 107 seq.) The sound which I have ascribed to unaccented *e* does not belong to it except when this vowel terminates a syllable. For further illustration of this letter, see § 174 seq., besides the places just referred to.

§ 17. OBS. III. To produce the letter *u*, place the lips in the very position which they would occupy in whistling, and then form a vowel-sound, *emitting the breath exactly as in whistling*. Teachers of French commonly direct the learner to place his lips in the position I have designated, and then merely to try to pronounce the English *u*. This direction is defective and generally useless; for the *pure English u* may be sounded nearly as well with the lips in that position as while they are in any other. There is this difference between the English *u* and the French, viz. that the former requires a motion of the tongue after it is commenced, but the latter none, it being a mere vocal emission of the breath, while the lips and tongue are in one continued position.—A second mode of obtaining the pronunciation of this letter is as follows. Utter the sound of *oo* in the English word *moon*. In the midst of the prolonged utterance of this sound, suddenly thrust the tongue forward against the lower teeth, and the desired sound of the French *u* is the result.

§ 18. OBS. IV. At the beginning of a syllable and between two vowels in the same word, the French letter *y* has the same sound as in the English word *yard*; e. g. *yeuse*, holm-oak, *royaume*, kingdom, *moyen*, means. This is sometimes called, I think improperly, a *consonant* sound. It is the same as that of the vowel *i* in many English words, in *filial*, for example.

§ 19. OBS. V. All the vowels are sometimes short and sometimes long; by which variation, however, I do not in-

tend, as might be supposed by the learner on account of the application of the terms in English grammar, any difference in the quality of the sound. All that is meant is, that the same sound is more or less protracted. No invariable rules can be given concerning the length of syllables in French any more than in English. The proper pronunciation of words in this respect must be acquired chiefly through the ear. It may be remarked, however, that an accented syllable* is naturally longer than one unaccented, and that a vowel marked with a circumflex accent is always very long.

SOUNDS OF THE COMPOUND VOWELS.†

§ 20. *ai*. Sounded commonly as *ay* in the English word *day*; e. g. *aimable*, lovely, *vaine*, vain. (See Obs. I. § 26.)

§ 21. *au*. Sounded as *o* in the English word *vote*; e. g. *auteur*, author, *cause*, cause.

§ 22. *ei*. Sounded as *ai* above; e. g. *veine*, vein, *baleine*, whale.

§ 23. *eu*. Sounded as *u* in the English word *turn*; e. g. *peuple*, people, *jeune*, young. (See Obs. II. § 27.)

§ 24. *oi*. Sounded as *ai* above; e. g. *Anglois*, English, *avoit*, had. (See Obs. III. § 28.)

§ 25. *ou*. Sounded as *ou* in the English word *soup*; e. g. *foule*, crowd, *route*, road.

Observations.

§ 26. OBS. I. When there is a circumflex accent over the *i* of the compound vowel *ai*, the sound becomes like that of the simple vowel *e* with the circumflex accent, i. e. like that

* By *accented syllable* in this remark I do not mean a syllable marked with a stroke called an accent, but one on which peculiar stress is laid in pronunciation. (See § 181 seq.)

† By a *compound vowel* is here intended a combination of two or more vowels representing a single sound different from that of either of the simple vowels.

of the first *e* in *there* (see § 9); e. g. *paitre*, to feed, *maitre*, master.

§ 27. OBS. II. The compound vowel *eu* is sounded differently sometimes, and always when there is a circumflex accent over the *u*. (See § 126.)

§ 28. OBS. III. This is the only sound which *oi* has as a compound vowel, and, from the influence of Voltaire's example, now sanctioned by the French Academy, although at first discountenanced by it, the compound vowel *ai* is by most good writers substituted for *oi* with this sound. There are other sounds of *oi* which are specified hereafter in §§ 34 seq. 38, 39, and 121.

§ 29. OBS. IV. When *y* is combined with the vowel *a* it is sounded as *i* would be in the same connection, and, if another vowel follows, the *y* has likewise the sound mentioned in § 18. OBS. IV; e. g. *crayon*, pencil, *frayeur*, fright. The compound vowel *oy* is sounded in French as in the English word *royal*; e. g. *royaume*, kingdom, *joyeux*, joyous.

SOUNDS OF THE DIPHTHONGS.

§ 30. A diphthong is a combination of vowels which requires more than one separate sound. These separate sounds, however, are commonly uttered as nearly as possible in one syllable, though in poetry they often stand for two.

§ 31. Diphthongs may be composed (1) of two simple vowels, (2) of a simple vowel and a compound one (in the order in which I have mentioned them, or the reverse), or (3) of two compound vowels; e. g. (1) *ia*, (2) *iai*, *oua*, (3) *ouie*.

§ 32. Those combinations of vowels which are not otherwise designated in this chapter are to be considered as diphthongs, and to be sounded rapidly in the manner stated above in § 30. Only three of the diphthongs are pronounced differently from the ordinary utterance of their component parts. The sounds of these three I proceed to describe.

§ 33. *œ*. In a few words these two vowels sometimes oc-

cur (N. B. the *e* with a circumflex accent,) as a diphthong, although it is now considered most correct to write *oi* instead. When this diphthong occurs, the *o* is sounded long, as *o* in the English word *note*, and the *é* is sounded as *a* in the English word *father*; e. g. *poêle*, stove, now usually spelt *poïle*.

§ 34. *oi*. These two vowels, when they form a diphthong, are sounded exactly as the preceding diphthong, *oé*. It has been remarked in § 28, that in cases where *oi* would not be a diphthong, but would have the sound of the compound vowel *ai*, it is now commonly changed to *ai*. But, as some books still retain the old method of spelling, it may be well to state rules by which the different sounds of *oi* in this old method may be accurately determined.

§ 35. RULE I. The letters *oi* are sounded as *ai* (1) in the terminations of the imperfect and conditional tenses of all verbs; e. g. *j'avois*, I had, *j'aurais*, I should have, *je recevois*, I received: (2) in the following names of certain nations and provinces; *Anglois*, English, *Béarnois*, Bearnese, *Bourbonnois*, Bourbonnese, *Écossois*, Scotch, *Ferrarois*, Ferrarese, *Hollandois*, Dutch, *Irlandois*, Irish, *Lyonnois*, Lyonnese, *Milanois*, Milanese, *Nivernois*, Nivernese, *Oléarnois*, Olearnese, *Piedmontois*, Piedmontese, *Polonois*, Pole, *Portugois*, Portuguese, *Sessonnois*, Sessonnese: and (3) in the first syllable of *foiblir*, to grow weak, and the second of *connoître*, to know, and of *paroître*, to appear. N. B. In all the derivatives of these three verbs the *oi* has the same pronunciation; e. g. *foiblesse*, weakness, *affoiblir*, to weaken, *affoiblissement*, weakening, *connoissance*, knowledge, *connoisseur*, connoisseur, *méconnoître*, to forget, *reconnoître*, to recognise, *apparoître*, to appear (as a ghost), *comparoître*, to appear (as a witness), *disparoître*, to disappear, *reparoître*, to reappear.

§ 36. RULE II. In all other cases (see Obs. I. § 38.) *oi* is a diphthong, and is sounded as directed in § 34; e. g. *Bavarois*, Bavarian, *Carthaginois*, Carthaginian, *Chinois*, Chinese,

Danois, Dane, *Gèneroïs*, Genevese, *Gènoïs*, Genoese, *Hessois*, Hessian, *Hibernois*, Irish, *Hongrois*, Hungarian, *Liégeois*, Liegese, *Siamois*, Siamese, *Suédois*, Swede, *que je sois*, that I may be, *recevoir*, to receive, *pouvoir*, to be able, *croître*, to increase, *croire*, to believe. (See Obs. II. § 39.)

§ 37. *ua*. These two letters are commonly either sounded separately like an ordinary diphthong (§ 30.) or like *a* alone, the *u* being silent (§ 131.); but, in some instances (not in all) when they are preceded by the consonant *g* or *q*, they form a peculiar diphthong, the *u* having a sound which it often has in English, viz. that of *ou* in *soup*, and the *a* having its ordinary French sound; e. g. *lingual*, lingual, *équateur*, equator.*

Observations.

§ 38. OBS. I. Except when *oi* occurs with a diæresis (see § 204.) over the *i* (*oi*), in which case the two letters are not either a compound vowel or a diphthong, but are sounded separately in entire independence of each other; e. g. *héroïne*, (*hā-rō-ēen*) heroine. The diæresis has the same effect upon the sound of all other combinations of vowels; e. g. *hâir*, to hate, *aïeul*, grandfather, *Saül*, Saul, *poëte*, poet.

§ 39. OBS. II. There has been very much dissension among the best French grammarians in regard to the true pronunciation of the diphthong *oi*; nearly all, indeed, giving the same sound to the *o*, (though by a few this is represented as having the sound of *oo* in the English word *moon*,)—but some sounding the *i* nearly as *a* in the English word *hang*,

* For a pretty extensive list of the words in which *ua* is pronounced thus, see App. A. It will be noticed that the sound of *gu* or *qu* in these words is the same as the sound of the same letters in the corresponding English words, whenever there are such corresponding words in English. The only difference is in the sound of the vowel *a* which follows *gu* or *qu*.—Some pronounce the *u* in *duègne*, duenna, also, like *ou* in the English word *soup*, on account of its Spanish origin.

others as *e* in the English word *water*, a third party as the first *e* in the English word *there*, a fourth as *a* in the English word *father*, a fifth nearly as *a* in the English word *wall*, (that sound which I have given to it,) a sixth as *e* in the English word *water* when *oi* is followed by any consonant except *s* or *x*, and nearly as *a* in the English word *wall* when followed by *s*, *x* or *e* mute, and a seventh giving it, according to its different connections, each of the five different sounds which I have described. Good usage, I believe, may be said now to be centering upon the uniform pronunciation of this diphthong as I have represented above.

SOUNDS OF THE SIMPLE CONSONANTS.

§ 40. *b*. This letter is sounded precisely as in English ; e. g. *barbe*, beard, *Babel*, Babel.

§ 41. *c*. This letter has two different sounds in French :

(a) Whenever it occurs, without a *cedilla* (§ 198.), before either of the vowels *a*, *o*, *u*, it is sounded hard, like *c* in the English word *cat* ; and so also before any consonant, excepting, in some cases, the letter *h* (§ 78.) ; e. g. *cable*, cable, *col*, neck, *culte*, worship, *clair*, clear, *crème*, cream, *contact*, contact. (See Obs. I. § 59.)

(b) Whenever it occurs before either of the vowels *e*, *i*, *y*, or, with a *cedilla* (§ 198.) beneath it, before *a*, *o*, or *u*, it is sounded like the English *s* in *sense* ; e. g. *ceci*, this, *cycle*, cycle, *forçat*, galley-slave, *leçon*, lesson, *reçu*, received. (See Obs. II. III. §§ 60, 61.)

§ 42. *d*. This letter is sounded as in English, except when it is at the end of a word and is followed by a word beginning with a vowel or an *h* mute (§ 139 seq.), in which case, it is sounded as *t* in the English word *cat*, or (to exhibit an analogy between the English and the French in regard to this letter,) as *d* at the end of the English words *cracked*, *stuffed* ; e. g. *date*, date, *grand homme*, great man, *pied-à-terre*, foot on the ground,

§ 43. *f*. This letter is sounded as in English, except when it is at the end of a word and is followed by a word beginning with a vowel or an *h* mute, in which case it is sounded like *v* in the English word *five*; e. g. *frais*, fresh, *filles*, girls, *ce bœuf est vif et fort*, this ox is lively and strong, *neuf enfans*, nine children, *neuf hommes*, nine men. (See Obs. IV. § 62.)

§ 44. *g*. This letter has three different sounds in French.

(a) Whenever it occurs before either of the vowels *a*, *o*, *u*, or before any consonant, unless it helps to form a peculiar sound in combination with that consonant (§ 79 and 80.), it is sounded hard, as in the English word *go*; e. g. *garde*, guard, *goutte*, drop, *figure*, figure, *glace*, ice, *gnome*, gnome, *grêle*, hail.

(b) Whenever it occurs before either of the vowels *e*, *i*, *y*, it is sounded as *z* in the English word *azure*; e. g. *agé*, aged, *gibier*, game, *gypse*, gypsum. (See Obs. V. § 63.)

(c) In the words *long*, long, *rang*, rank, and *sang*, blood, if the next word begins with a vowel, and also in the word *bourg*, market-town, in all cases, (see Obs. VI. § 64.) its sound is that of the English *k*; e. g. *suer sang et eau*, to toil hard, *rang élevé*, elevated rank, *long entretien*, long conversation, *bourg fermé*, closed market-town. (See Obs. VII. § 65.)

§ 45. *h*. When this letter is not silent (§ 139 seq.) it is sounded as *h* in the English word *hard*, commonly with more force than is given to it in English; e. g. *héros*, hero, *hideux*, hideous.

§ 46. *j*. This letter is always sounded like *z* in the English word *azure*, i. e. just as the soft *g* in French (§ 44. b.); e. g. *jeu*, game, *joujou*, plaything.

§ 47. *k*. This letter is always sounded as in English; e. g. *Kan*, Khan, *kali*, name of a sea-weed. (See Obs. VIII. § 66.)

§ 48. *l*. This letter has two different sounds in French:

(a) It has a liquid sound, like that of *lli* in the English word *brilliant*, in all words ending in *ail*, *eil*,* *euil*, and *ouil*, and

* This termination includes, it must be noticed, such words as *œil*, eye, *recueil*, collection, *accueil*, reception, etc.

also in a few words ending in *il* with a consonant immediately preceding ; e. g. *sérail*, seraglio, *conseil*, counsel, *écureuil*, squirrel, *fenouil*, fennel, *Avril*, April.* (See Obs. IX. § 67.)

(b) In other cases, when it is sounded at all (§ 144.) it is sounded as *l* in the English word *lily* ; e. g. *lis*, lily, *législateur*, legislator.

§ 49. *m*. This letter, except in certain connections (§ 92 seq.), is sounded as in English ; e. g. *mais*, but, *ami*, friend.

§ 50. *n*. This letter, likewise, except in certain connections (§ 92 seq.), is sounded precisely as in English ; e. g. *nonne*, nun, *nenni*, no.

§ 51. *p*. The sound of this letter is the same in French as in English ; e. g. *pape*, pope, *pépin*, kernel.

§ 52. *q*. The sound of this letter is the same in French as in English, viz. that of *k* in *king* ; e. g. *coq*, cock, *équateur*, equator. (See Obs. X. § 68.)

§ 53. *r*. The sound of this letter is that of the English *r* rolled or trilled ; e. g. *rural*, rural, *rare*, rare.

§ 54. *s*. This letter has two different sounds in French :

(a) Whenever it occurs between two vowels in the same word, or at the end of a word before another beginning with a vowel or *h* mute, it is commonly sounded (if at all, § 151 seq.) soft, like *s* in the English word *rose* ; e. g. *plaisir*, pleasure, *rose*, rose, *les amis*, the friends, *ces hommes*, these men. (See Obs. XI. § 69.)

(b) Elsewhere it is commonly sounded hard, as *s* in the English word *so* ; e. g. *sage*, wise, *espace*, space. (See Obs. XII. § 70.)

§ 55. *t*. This letter has two different sounds in French :

(a) It is commonly sounded as *t* in the English word *tone* ; e. g. *texte*, text, *totalité*, total.

(b) It is frequently sounded as *c* in the English word *cedar*, especially before *ie* and *ion* ; e. g. *patience*, patience, *action*, action. (See Obs. XIII. § 71.)

* The letter *l* is liquid too in the proper names *Milhaut* and *Par-dalhac*.

§ 56. *v.* This letter has the same sound in French as in English; e. g. *veuve*, widow, *vivant*, living.

§ 57. *x.* This letter has four different sounds in French:

(a) Its most usual sound is that of the hard English *x* in *box*; e. g. *sexe*, sex, *oxygène*, oxygen, *excéder*, to exceed, *exsuder*, to exude, *extrême*, extreme. (See Obs. XIV. § 72.)

(b) It is sounded like the soft English *x* in *example*, in all words beginning with *x*, *ex* or *hex* followed by a vowel or silent *h*; e. g. *Xavier*, *Xavier*, *Ximenes*, *Ximenes*, *examiner*, to examine, *exercice*, exercise, *exister*, to exist, *exorde*, exordium, *exubérance*, exuberance, *exhiber*, to exhibit.*

(c) In the following words it is sounded like *ss* in the English word *assail*: *dix*, ten, *six*, six, *soixante*, sixty, *Aix*, *Aix*, *Auxerre*, *Auxerre*, *Auxonne*, *Auxonne*, *Bruxelles*, Brussels, *Cadix*, Cadiz, *Luxeuil*, *Luxeuil*, and *Xaintonge*, Saintonge. (See Obs. XV. § 73.)

(d) In the following words it is sounded like *z* in the English word *gaze*: *deuxième*, second, *deuxièmement*, secondly, *dixième*, tenth, *dixièmement*, tenthly, *dix-huit*, eighteen, *dix-neuf*, nineteen, *sicain*, stanza of six verses, *sixième*, sixth, *sixièmement*, sixthly; and so also at the end of a word when the next word begins with a vowel or an *h* mute (when the next word begins with a consonant the *x* is silent, § 155.); e. g. *lieux enchantés*, enchanted places, *deux hommes*, two men. (See Obs. XVI. and XVII. §§ 74, 75.)

§ 58. *z.* This letter is sounded as *z* in the English word *zone*; e. g. *douze*, twelve, *zizanie*, tare. (See Obs. XVIII. § 76.)

Observations.

§ 59. OBS. I. In a few words which fall under the description here given the *c* is softened by common usage nearly or quite to the sound of *g* in the English word *go*; viz. in *second*, second, (and its derivatives), *bécasse*, woodcock, *bécas-*

* So, of course, in the derivatives of such words; e. g. in *præxister*, to præexist, *præexistence*, præexistence.

sine, snipe, *czar*, *czar*, *Claude*, *Claude*, *Reine-Claude*, green gage (plum), and *secret*, secret. It is universally pronounced thus in the first of these words, *second* (and its derivatives); but in regard to the rest there is not entire agreement, some pronouncing them as we have represented, and others retaining the hard sound of *c*.

§ 60. OBS. II. In two words, derived from the Italian language, *vermicelle*, vermicelli, and *violoncelle*, violoncello, *c* before *e* is pronounced as *ch* in the English word *chaise*.

§ 61. OBS. III. The French words in which double *c* is followed by *e* or *i* are pronounced in exact conformity with the two rules here given. Thus, e. g., in the words *accent*, *accent*, *accéléré*, accelerated, *accident*, accident, the double *c* is sounded just as in the corresponding English words, the first being hard, like *c* in *cat*, from its position before the consonant *c*, and the second being soft because it stands before the vowel *e* or *i*.

§ 62. OBS. IV. *Neuf*, however, in the expressions, *neuf en tout*, nine in all, and *neuf à dîner*, nine to dine, is pronounced with the usual hard sound of *f*.

§ 63. OBS. V. The French words in which double *g* is followed by *e* or *i* are pronounced conformably to the two rules which have been stated. Thus, e. g., in *suggérer*, to suggest, and *suggestion*, suggestion, the first *g*, standing before a consonant, is sounded hard, as *g* in the English word *go*, and the second, standing before the vowel *e*, is sounded like *z* in the English word *azure*.

§ 64. OBS. VI. This statement does not apply to *compounds* of which this word forms a part. In these the *g* is generally silent (§ 138.), and in *bourgmestre*, burgomaster, the *g* is pronounced as in the English word *go*.

§ 65. OBS. VII. The first *g* in the word *gangrène*, gangrene, and its derivatives, *gangréner*, to gangrene, *gangréneux*, gangrenous, is almost universally sounded in the same

manner, precisely as if the words began with *c*. This pronunciation is authorised by the French Academy.

§ 66. OBS. VIII. The letter *K* has little or no claim to be considered as belonging to the alphabet of the French, since they no longer use it except in a few words of infrequent occurrence borrowed from foreign languages. Formerly some words were spelt with this letter which are now spelt with *c*; e. g. *Kalendes*, *Calends*, *Kalendrier*, *calendar*, now *Calendes* and *Calendrier*. Even these words, however, were all of foreign origin.

§ 67. OBS. IX. The following are all the words ending in *il* with a consonant immediately preceding in which the *l* has the liquid sound: *Avril*, *April*, *babil*, *prattle*, *Brésil*, *Brazil* or *Brazil-wood*, *cil*, *eyelashes*, *fenil*, *hay-loft*, *gentil*, *heathen*, *grésil*, *small hail*, *mil*, *millet*, *péril*, *peril*. In the word *gril*, *gridiron*, it is liquid when it is not wholly suppressed, as it commonly is when this word is used in familiar discourse (§ 144.)

§ 68. OBS. X. I know of no French words but *cinq*, *five*, and *coq*, *cock*, in which this letter is not immediately followed by the vowel *u*, as it is invariably in English. For a very peculiar pronunciation of *q* see § 75.

§ 69. OBS. XI. In the following words it is sounded *hard* between two vowels: *contresigner*, *to countersign*, *désuétude*, *desuetude*, *entresol*, *one-story lodgings*, *gisant*, *lying*, *havresac*, *knapsack*, *monosyllabe*, *monosyllable*, *parasol*, *parasol*, *polysyllabe*, *polysyllable*, *préséance*, *precedence*, *présupposer* (*first s*), *to presuppose*, *résaisir* (*first s*), *to rescize*, *résaluer*, *to resalute*, *tournesol*, *sun-flower*, *vraisemblable*, *probable*, *vraisemblance*, *likelihood*, and all other compounds formed of one word ending with a vowel and another beginning with *s*.

§ 70. OBS. XII. In the following words it is sounded *soft*, although it does not stand between two vowels: *Alsace*, *Alsace*, *Arsace*, *Arsace*, *Asdrubal*, *Asdrubal*, *asbeste*, *asbestos*,

Augsbourg, Augsburg, *balsamine*, balsam, *balsamique*, balsamic, *bisbille*, quarrel, *Breisgau*, Breisgau, *Israel*, Israel (and its derivatives), *Esdras*, Esdras, *intransitif*, intransitive, *Isboseth*, Ishbosheth, *Lesbos*, Lesbos, *Louisbourg*, Louisburg, *Philipsbourg*, Philipsburg, *presbytère*, presbytery (and its derivatives), *Presbourg*, Presburg, *Ryswick*, Ryswick, *sbire*, constable, *second*, second,* *Sdili*, Delos, *Sedan*, Sedan, *Sganarelle*, Sganarelle, *svelte*, slender, *Thisbé*, Thisbe, *transaction*, transaction, *transalpin*, transalpine, *transeat*, pass out, *transiger*, to transact, *transitif*, transitive, *transition*, transition, *transitoire*, transitory.

§ 71. OBS. XIII. It is so sounded (1) in all substantives ending in *tion*, unless this termination be immediately preceded by an *s* or an *x*, e. g. *action*, action, *nation*, nation (but hard in *question*, question, *mixture*, mixture); (2) in all adjectives and nouns ending in *tial*, *tiel*, *tient*, or *tieux*, and in their feminines and other derivatives, e. g. *martial*, martial, *partial*, partial, *quotient*, quotient, *captieux*, captious; (3) in the following words terminating in *tie*: *argutie*, cavil, *aristocratie*, aristocracy, *Béotie*, Bœotia, *burocratie*, bureaucracy, *calvitie*, baldness, *Croatie*, Croatia, *Dalmatie*, Dalmatia, *démocratie*, democracy, *diplomatie*, diplomacy, *épizootie*, contagious disorder among cattle, *eutropétie*, good nature, *facétie*, facetiousness, *Galatie*, Galatia, *impéritie*, ignorance, *inépétie*, foolery, *inertie*, inertia, *minutie*, trifle, *péripétie*, sudden turn of fortune, *primatie*, primacy, *prophétie*, prophecy, *suprématie*, supremacy, *théocratie*, theocracy, and in their derivatives; (4) in the following words terminating in *tien*: *Capétien*, Capetian, *Dioclétien*, Dioclesian, *Domitien*, Domitian, *Egyptien*, Egyptian, *Gratien*, Gratian, *Helvétien*, Helvetian, *Titien*, Titian, *Venitien*, Venitian, and in their deriva-

* Thus, e. g., *il est le second de sa classe*, he is the second in his class. It is true, the *s* is here between two vowels, but not "between two vowels in the same word," and therefore its soft sound is a deviation from the general rule. (See § 54. a, cf. *Id.* b.)

tives ; and (5) in the verbs *balbutier*, to stammer, *initier*, to initiate, and in all their inflexions and derivatives.

§ 72. OBS. XIV. It has been usual, in treating of French pronunciation, to represent the letter *x* as having *five* different sounds, distinguishing between the *x* in *extrême*, for example, and that in *excéder* or *exsuder*. In the former word it is said to have the sound of *ks*, and in the latter only that of *k*. The distinction seems to me groundless. It is not made in our own language between the *x* in *extreme* and that in *exceed* or *excise*. Both languages, I believe, give the same sound to *x* in all these words beginning with *ex* followed by a consonant. In case the consonant sound following is that of *s*, the *s* sound in the *x* naturally coalesces with it in both languages ; but this is no reason for supposing the *x* to have a peculiar sound in such words.

§ 73. OBS. XV. In the words *dix*, ten, and *six*, six, the letter *x* is sounded like *ss* only in case these words are not connected with a substantive immediately following ; as, e. g., in the following expression : *de seize ôtez dix, reste six*, from sixteen take ten, and six remains. When either of these numerals is immediately followed by a substantive which it qualifies, the *x* is generally not pronounced at all if the substantive begins with a consonant (§ 155.), and it is sounded like *z* if the substantive begins with a vowel or *h* mute, according to the rule in § 57. d.

§ 74. OBS. XVI. In the following words the letter *x* is sounded hard, like the English *x* in *box*, under all circumstances : *borax*, borax, *climax*, climax, *index*, index, *larynx*, larynx, *lynx*, lynx, *onyx*, onyx, *perplex*, perplexed (commonly, however, spelt *perplexe*), *phénix*, phenix, *préfix*, appointed, *sphinx*, sphinx, *syrinx*, shepherd's pipe, *storax*, storax, *thorax*, thorax, in all proper names ending with this letter, and generally in all words coming from the Latin, Greek, or any foreign language.

§ 75. OBS. XVII. The letter *x* in *Don Quixote* is sounded

by the French like *sh* in the English word *shore*. By a further anomaly, the *q* in the word is most commonly pronounced like *g* in the English word *go*.

§ 76. OBS. XVIII. In the following words the letter *z* is pronounced hard like *s* in the English word *so*: *Alvarez*, *Alvarez*, *Fez*, *Fez*, *gaz*, *gas*, *Metz*, *Metz*, *Rhodes*, *Rhodes*, *Rodriguez*, *Rodriguez*, *Sanchez*, *Sanchez*, *Senez*, *Senez*, *Suarez*, *Suarez*, *Vasquez*, *Vasquez*.

SOUNDS OF COMBINED CONSONANTS.

§ 77. I shall, of course, notice only such combinations of consonants in a single syllable as exhibit deviations from the rules which have been laid down respecting the sounds of single consonants. When in any syllable two consonants occur together which are not here specified as possessing a peculiar sound on account of their combination, each is to be sounded separately, according to the rules before given, unless one or both of them be silent (§§ 133—174). The combinations of consonants in French are much the same as in English. (See Obs. I. and II. §§ 84, 85.)

§ 78. *ch*. These two consonants occurring together have two different sounds in French:

(a) In all words properly French in their origin, or which are derived from the Latin *only*, *ch* is sounded as *sh* in the English word *share*; e. g. *chercher*, to seek, *vache*, cow.

(b) In all words coming from the Greek, Hebrew, or Arabic, *ch* is commonly pronounced like *ch* in the English word *chorus*; e. g. *orchestre*, orchestra, *archange*, archangel. (See Obs. III. and IV. §§ 86, 87.)

§ 79. *gl*. These consonants occurring together have almost invariably the same sound in French as in the English word *glad*; e. g. *glace*, ice, *régler*, to regulate. In two words, however, borrowed from the Italian language, they have the liquid sound before attributed to *l* in some instances, (§ 48. a.) that of *lli* in the English word *brilliant*: viz. *im-*

broglie (now more commonly spelt *imbroille*), confusion, and *De Broglie* (proper name of a family).

§ 80. *gn*. These consonants occurring together have two different sounds in French :

(a) They have almost always the liquid sound which they possess in the English word *bagnio*, or the sound of *ni* in the English word *onion* ; e. g. *régner*, to reign, *vigne*, vine. (See Obs. V. § 88.)

(b) In all words beginning with these consonants they are sounded as *gn* in the English word *ignorant* ; e. g. *gnome*, *gnome*, *Gnostique*, Gnostic. So also even in the midst of a few words. (See Obs. VI. § 89.)

§ 81. *ll*. These consonants occurring together have two different sounds in French :

(a) They have often the liquid sound of *lli* in the English word *brilliant*. They always have this sound when they are preceded by *ai*, *ei*, *eui*, or *oui* ; e. g. *bailler*, to deliver, *conseiller*, to counsel, *avillade*, leer, *cueillir*, to gather, *feuille*, leaf, *bouillon*, broth.

(b) When they have not this liquid sound they are sounded as in the English word *village*. This latter sound they always have in words beginning with *ill* ; e. g. *illégal*, illegal, *illusion*, illusion. (For other cases in which *ll* is not liquid, see Obs. VII. and VIII. §§ 90, 91.)

§ 82. *ph*. These consonants occurring together in French are sounded like *f*, as in the English word *philosopher* ; e. g. *phrase*, phrase, *phosphore*, phosphorus.

§ 83. *sh*. These consonants occurring together in French are sounded as in the English word *shake* ; e. g. *shérif*, sheriff.

Observations.

§ 84. Obs. I. The French combinations of consonants in a single syllable which have not been mentioned are the following : *bl* (e. g. *table*, table), *br* (e. g. *bras*, arm), *cl* (e. g. *clair*, clear), *chm* (§ 87.), *chr* (e. g. *Christ*, Christ), *cr* (e. g.

écrire, to write), *dr* (e. g. *cadran*, dial), *fl* (e. g. *ronfler*, to snore), *fr* (e. g. *défrayer*, to defray), *gr* (e. g. *agréable*, agreeable), *phr* (e. g. *paraphrase*, paraphrase),* *pl* (e. g. *plaisir*, pleasure), *pr* (e. g. *pourpre*, purple), *sc* (e. g. *scandale*, scandal, *ascétique*, ascetic†), *sg* (e. g. *Sganarelle*, Sganarelle), *sl* (e. g. *sloupe*, sloop), *sm* (e. g. *miasme*, miasma), *sn* (e. g. *Basnage*, Basnage), *sp* (e. g. *espoir*, hope), *st* (e. g. *reste*, remainder), *sv* (e. g. *svelte*, slender), *tl* (e. g. *Tlaspi*, Tlaspi), *tr* (e. g. *albâtre*, alabaster), *vr* (e. g. *œuvre*, work.) In *th* the *h* is always silent (§ 143.)

§ 85. OBS. II. When a consonant is doubled, the only effect which is produced by the repetition is increased force of utterance; e. g. *erreur*, error, *moisson*, harvest.‡

§ 86. OBS. III. The following is a very considerable list of the French words in which *ch* is pronounced thus: *Achab*, *Ahab*, *Achaïe*, *Achaia*, *Achélaus*, *Achelous*, *Anacharsis*, *Anacharsis*, *anachorète*, anchorite, *anchilops*, tumor in the eye, *Antiochus*, *Antiochus*, *archange*, archangel, *Archangel*, *Archangel*, *archaïsme*, archaism, *archétype*, archetype, *archiépiscopal*, archiepiscopal, *archiépiscopat*, archbishopric, *archonte*, archon, *Bacchus*, *Bacchus* (and all its derivatives), *brachial*,

* In *phr*, as well as *chr* and *chm* preceding, the *ph* has the sound specified in § 82, and the *ch* that specified in § 73. b, and then the sound of the following consonant is subjoined. The first two instances are the same as in English. In English the *ch* of *drachm* is silent.

† In this latter case, as in similar cases in English, the *s* may be considered as belonging to one syllable and the *c* to the following, the *c* being soft before *e*, *i*, or *y* (§ 41. b). In such words as *science*, *science*, *sceptre*, *sceptre*, the *c* has the soft sound before the vowel, and the *s* coalesces with it, just as in English.

‡ This accounts for the frequent insertion of an additional *s* in a compound word of which one of the component parts ends with a vowel and the other begins with *s*; e. g. *dessus*, above, *desservir*, to injure one, *ressortir*, to go out again. It is designed to avoid the soft sound of *s* between two vowels (§ 54. a).

brachial, *Calchas*, Calchas, *catéchumène*, catechumen, *chalcedoine*, chalcedony, *chalcographie*, chalcography, *Chaldaïque*, Chaldaic, *Chaldéen*, Chaldean, *chalibé*, chalybeate, *Cham*, Ham, *Chanaan*, Canaan, *chaos*, chaos, *Charon*, Charon, *chélidoine*, chelidony, *Chéronée*, Cheronea, *Chersonèse*, Chersonesus, *Chieti*, Chieti, *chiliarque*, captain of a thousand, *Chio*, Scio, *chiragre*, chiragra, *chirographie*, hand-writing, *chiromancie*, chiromancy, *chiromancien*, chiromancer, *chœur*, choir, *chondrille* (name of a plant), *chorèbe*, chorebus, *chorège*, choragus, *choriste*, chorister, *chorus*, chorus, *Chosroès*, Chosroes, *Civita Vecchia* (name of an Italian city), *Dyrrachium*, Dyrrachium, *écho*, echo, *eucharistie*, eucharist, *ichnographie*, ichnography, *ichoreux*, ichorous, *ichthyologie*, ichthyology, *Lachesis*, Lachesis, *lichen*, lichen, *loch*, lake, *Machabées*, Maccabees, *Machiavel*, Machiavel, *Melchisédec*, Melchisedec, *Michel Angelo*, Michael Angelo, *Nabuchodonosor*, Nabuchodonosor, *orchestique*, art of dancing, *orchestre*, orchestra, *patriarchat*, patriarchate, *Pulchérie*, Pulcheria, *scholie*, scholium, *tachygraphie*, short-hand (and derivatives), *technique*, technical (and derivatives), *Tycho Brahe* (name of a philosopher), *Zacharie*, Zechariah, *Zurich*, Zurich.

§ 87. OBS. IV. To this rule (b) there are the following exceptions: (1) of proper names, *Achéron*, Acheron, *Achille*, Achilles, *Chypre*, Cyprus, *Joachim*, Joachim, *Zachée*, Zaccheus; (2) of other words, *anarchie*, anarchy, *archevêque*, archbishop, *archiduc*, archduke, *architecte*, architect, *architrave*, architrave,* *cherubin*, cherubim, *chirurgie*, surgery, *chirurgien*, surgeon, *chymie*, chemistry, *monarchie*, monarchy, *schisme*, schism, *schismatique*, schismatic, *schiste*, schist; in all of which the *ch* has the soft sound, that of *sh* in the English word *share*. The *ch* in *drachme*, *drachm*, is pronounced like *g* hard.

§ 88. OBS. V. This liquid sound of *gn* may be reduced to the sound of the letters *ny* in English, referred to different syllables.

* And so all French words beginning with *archi*, except two mentioned in the preceding section.

Thus, *bagnio* is pronounced *ban-yo*. In all cases where liquid *gn* occurs in the midst of a French word, if the sound of English *n* be annexed to the previous syllable, and the sound of *y* be prefixed to the next syllable, the *gn* will be pronounced correctly. .

§ 89. OBS. VI. *Gn* is hard in the midst of the following words: *agnat*, agnate (and its derivatives), *Agnus Castus*, chaste tree (not in *agnus* when alone), *cognat*, cognate (and its derivatives), *diagnostique*, diagnostic, *Gnostique*, Gnostic, *ignée*, igneous (and its cognates, such as *ignition*, ignition, *ignivore*, ignivorous, etc.), *inexpugnable*, inexpugnable, *magnat*, magnate, *magnésie*, magnesia, *pignoratif*, pignorative, *Progné*, Progne, *règnicole*, denizen, *stagnant*, stagnant (and its cognates).

§ 90. OBS. VII. *Ll* is *never* liquid when immediately preceded by any other vowel than *i*, except in the proper name *Sully*; e. g. *allégorie*, allegory, *elle*, she, *collusion*, collusion, *ébullition*, ebullition, *Sylla*, Sylla.

§ 91. OBS. VIII. *Ill* not at the beginning of a word has invariably the liquid sound, except in the following words, with their inflexions and other derivatives, if they have any: *Achille*, Achilles, *armillaire*, armillary, *calville* (sort of apple), *campanille*, steeple, *codicille*, codicil, *distiller*, to distil, *fibrille*, slender fibre, *fritillaire*, fritillary, *Gille*, Gill, *imbécille*, imbecile, *instiller*, to instil, *Lille*, Lille, *maxillaire*, maxillary, *mille*, thousand or mile, *osciller*, to oscillate, *pupille*, pupil, *scintiller*, to scintillate, *sille* (satirical poem among the Greeks), *sibylle*, sibyl, *titiller*, to tickle, *tranquille*, tranquil, *vaciller*, to vacillate, *vaudeville*, vaudeville, *ville*, city, *village*, village.

PECULIAR SOUNDS OF CONSONANTS FROM CONNECTION WITH VOWELS.

§ 92. The consonants *m* and *n* are the only ones the sound of which is changed by their connection with a vowel; and these are thus affected only in certain circumstances.

§ 93. The peculiar sound of these consonants which is referred to is commonly called *nasal*, because it is uttered, as we say, through the nose. It is nearly, if not quite, impossible to describe this sound so that one who has not heard it can imitate it with much precision; and indeed it is very difficult to attain it exactly, even with the aid of a vocal pattern. The nearest resemblance to it in English enunciation is the sound of *ng* in such words as *sang*, *sing*, *song*, *sung*. Perhaps the difference between the sound of *ng* in these words and that of the French nasal *m* or *n* cannot be at all appreciated by most persons from any attempt at description. Probably most must have recourse to oral example. Some, however, it is possible, may not find the following statement utterly useless.*

§ 94. From careful attention in pronouncing slowly the English words which I have mentioned (*sang*, etc.), dwelling long enough upon the vowel in each word to make the enunciation of the succeeding consonants apparent, it can be perceived, I think, that just before closing the sound of the consonants there is a pressure of the middle part of the tongue against the roof of the mouth, which nearly or quite stops the sound of the voice. Now, the peculiarity of the French nasal sound in question consists mainly, I think, in not thus shutting up the sound of the English *ng* by the pressure which I have mentioned. The speaker commences the *ng*, proceeding considerably beyond the preceding vowel, but he does not fairly go through with the English sound. Instead of shutting up the voice as in English, he retains a sound which may be prolonged at pleasure. I should say further,

* A mode of obtaining this sound less elegant than that which I am about to describe, but perhaps not less certain, is to hold the nose entirely stopped and then sound a vowel nasally, i. e. allowing the sound to enter the upper part of the nose and proceed as far as it can while the nose is stopped below. Begin in this way with the French vowel *a*, then try *e*, then others. Then try to utter the same sound without holding the nose,

that not only the nasal consonant sound, but the preceding vowel, is pronounced in French *lower down in the throat* than in English.

§ 95. The following rules, with the accompanying statement of exceptions, will, it is supposed, determine when the letters *m* and *n* have, and when they have not, this peculiar nasal sound in French.

§ 96. RULE I. The letters *m* and *n* when immediately preceded by a vowel and followed by a consonant are pronounced nasally; e. g. *ambre*, amber, *ancre*, anchor, *dent*, tooth, *insulte*, insult, *onde*, wave, *umblé*, umber, *junte*, junto.

§ 97. EXCEPT. I. When *m* or *n* is doubled, their sound is not nasal, but like the English *m* or *n*; e. g. *immortalité*, immortality, *immémorial*, immemorial, *ammoniac*, ammoniac, *solennel*, solemn, *innover*, to innovate, *connaissance*, knowledge, *innombrable*, innumerable.*

§ 98. Exc. II. The letter *m* preceded by *a* is never nasal in the following words, nor, also, in any derivatives from them: *Abraham*, Abraham, *Ammon*, Ammon, *amnistie*, amnesty, *Amsterdam*, Amsterdam, *mammillaire*, belonging to the breasts, *Priam*, Priam, *Roboam*, Rehoboam.

§ 99. Exc. III. The letter *m* preceded by *e* is never nasal in the following words, nor, also, in any derivatives from

* In words beginning with *emm*, however, which are compounded of *en* and some other word, the *en* being changed to *em* on account of the following *m*, the first *m* is nasal, as *n* would be before *m*. Such are the following words, with their derivatives: *emmener*, to carry away, *remmener*, to carry back, *emmagasiner*, to store, *emmailleter*, to swathe, *emmancher*, to haft, *emmanteler*, to cover with a cloak, *emmariner*, to man a ship, *emménager*, to provide furniture, *emmieller*, to flatter, *emmitoufler*, to muffle up, *emmortaiser*, to mortise, *emmuseler*, to muzzle.

So, too, in the following words the first of the two *n*'s is sounded nasal: *ennui*, ennui, *ennuyer*, to weary, *ennuyeux*, wearisome, *s'ennuier*, to get benighted, *ennoblir*, to ennoble, *hennir*, to neigh, with any compounds or other derivatives from these words.

them : *Agamemnon*, *Agamemnon*, *Bethléem*, *Bethlehem*, *Clitemnestre*, *Clitemnestra*, *décemvir*, *decemvir*, *dilemme*, *dilemma*, *Emmanuel*, *Emmanuel*, *Emmaüs*, *Emmaus*, *gemme* (an epithet for mine-salt), *harem*, *harem*, *Haarlem*, *Haarlem*, *hem ! hem ! idem*, *idem*, *indemniser*, to indemnify, *indemnité*, indemnity, *item*, *item*, *Jérusalem*, *Jerusalem*, *lemme*, *lemma*, *Memnon*, *Memnon*, *Memphis*, *Memphis*, *novemvir*, *novemvir*, *Salem*, *Salem*, *septemvir*, *septemvir*.

§ 100. Exc. IV. The letter *m* preceded by *i* is *never* nasal in the following foreign words : *Ephraïm*, *Ibrahim*, *intérim*, *Naïm*, *parnassim*, *Sélim*.

§ 101. Exc. V. The letter *m* preceded by *o* is *never* nasal in the following words, nor, also, in any derivatives from them : *automnal*, *autumnal*, *calomnie*, *calumny*, *insomnie*, want of rest, *somnambule*, *somnambulist*, *somnifère*, *somniferous*, *somnolence*, *somnolency*.

§ 102. Exc. VI. The letter *m* preceded by *u* is *never* nasal in the following foreign words : *album*, *criterium*, *decorum*, *dictum*, *factum*, *forum*, *géranium*, *ladanum*, *laudanum*, *médium*, *minium*, *opium*, *palladium*, *postscriptum*, *quinquennium*.

§ 103. Exc. VII. The letter *m* preceded by *y* is *not* nasal in the word *hymne*, *hymn*.

§ 104. Exc. VIII. The letter *n* preceded by *e* is *never* nasal in the following words, nor, also, in any derivatives from them : *abdomen*, *abdomen*, *amen*, *amen*, *ben* (name of an Arabian oil), *Eden*, *Eden*, *endécagone*, *endecagon*, *ensiforme*, *ensiform*, *examen*, *examination*, *gramen*, *grass*, *hymen*, *hymen*, *lichen*, *lichen*, *Pensilvanie*, *Pennsylvania*, *pollen*, *pollen*, *solen*, kind of shell-work.

§ 105. RULE II. The letters *m* and *n* when immediately preceded and followed by a vowel are *not* nasal ; e. g. *amitié*, friendship, *Emilie*, *Emily*, *imiter*, to imitate, *haine*, hatred, *onéreux*, onerous, *univers*, *universe*.*

* Hence the masculine of nouns ending in *n* preceded by a vowel

§ 106. Exc. I. The letter *n* has a nasal sound in the words, *enivrer*, to intoxicate, *enorgueillir*, to puff up, as also in all derivatives from them. These words are sounded exactly as if there were two *n*'s instead of one; *n* nasal belonging to the first syllable, and the common English *n* being sounded with the vowel in the second syllable. Thus, they are pronounced as *ennui*, etc. (See note to § 97.)

PECULIAR SOUNDS OF VOWELS FROM CONNECTION
WITH CONSONANTS.

§ 107. *e*. (a) This letter, when it is followed by *m* or *n* nasal (see §§ 93 seq.) is sounded always (with the exception mentioned in the next section,) precisely as the French *a* (§ 5); e. g. *emploi*, employment, *emmener*, to carry away, *pensée*, thought, *patience*, patience, *en*, in, *Rouen*, Rouen.

§ 108. *e*. (b) This letter, when it is preceded by *i* and followed by *n* nasal, *at the end of a word* or in any inflection of verbs whose Infinitive ends in *enir*, is sounded nearly as *a* in the English word *hang*, or, more exactly, between this sound and that of *e* in the English word *strength*; e. g. *mien*, mine, *rien*, nothing, *lien*, band, *Chrétien*, Christian, *il vient*, he comes, *il tiendra*, he will hold, *je reviens*, I return.*

§ 109. *e*. (c) This letter, when followed by double *m* or double *n*, is always pronounced as in the last section; e. g.

has a nasal termination, while in the feminine, formed by the addition of *e*, the *n* is sounded as in English: e. g. (masc.) *sain*, (fem.) *saine*, healthy; (masc.) *fin*, (fem.) *fine*, fine; (masc.) *cousin*, (fem.) *cousine*, cousin.

* The case is the same in the plurals of nouns whose singular ends with *en*; e. g. in *miens*, *liens*, and *Chrétiens*, plurals of three words above mentioned. The letter *e* is not sounded thus, however, in *gens*, *talens*, *encens*, etc. plurals of *gent*, nation, *talent*, talent, *encens*, incense, etc. because the singular does not terminate with *en*.—Compounds of such words as end in *n* nasal preceded by *ie* retain the sound above assigned to *e*; e. g. *bienséance*, decency, *bientôt*, soon.

femme, woman, *femmelette*, little woman, *ardemment*, ardently (and *all* adverbs ending in *emment*), *hennir*, to neigh, *nenni*, no, *solennel*, solemn. So also in *indemniser*, to indemnify.

§ 110. *e*. (d) This letter, when followed by *r* in the same syllable at the end of a word, is sounded like *ai* in the English word *air*, unless the *r* be silent (§ 150). Thus, in *aimer à continuer en difficulté*, to love to continue in difficulty, the syllable *er* is pronounced in both instances like the English word *air*.

§ 111. *e*. (e) This letter, without an accent, when followed by a silent consonant at the end of a word, is sounded like *a* in the English word *fate*; e. g. *aimer*, to love, *danger*, danger, *les*, the, *mes*, my.

§ 112. *i*. This letter, when followed by *m* or *n* nasal (§ 92 seq.), has a sound like that of *e* in § 108, i. e. between the sound of *a* in the English word *hang* and that of *e* in the English word *strength*; e. g. *impur*, impure, *impropre*, improper, *enfin*, at last, *bénin*, benigne, *infame*, infamous.

§ 113. *u*. (a) This letter, when followed by *m* or *n* nasal, is sounded like the compound vowel *eu* (§ 23), i. e. nearly as *u* in the English word *turn*; e. g. *un*, a, *parfum*, perfume, *brun*, brown, *commun*, common.

§ 114. *u*. (b) This letter, followed by *m*, whether nasal or not (§ 92 seq.), is sounded as *o* in the English word *comma*, in the following foreign words, and also in any derivatives from them: *album*, *centumvir*, *criterium*, *decorum*, *dictum*, *duumvir*, *factum*, *forum*, *géranium*, *maximum*, *médium*, *minimum*, *minium*, *muséum*, *opium*, *palladium*, *pensum*, *postscriptum*, *triumvir*, *rhumb*.

§ 115. *u*. (c) This letter, followed by nasal *n*, is sounded as *o* in the English word *song* in the words, *juncaire* (name of a plant), *junte*, junto, *nuncupatif*, verbal, *nundinal*, nundinal, *opuntia* (name of an Indian fig-tree).

§ 116. *ai*. (a) This compound vowel, when followed by liquid *l*, nasal *m*, or nasal *n*, is pronounced as *c* in § 108, and

i in § 111, i. e. between *a* in the English word *hang* and *e* in the English word *strength*; e. g. *faillir*, to fail, *bail*, lease, *caillou*, flint, *faim*, hunger, *crainte*, fear.

§ 117. *ai*. (b) This compound vowel, when followed by *r*, is sounded as *ai* in the English word *air*; e. g. *faire*, to do, *plaire*, to please.

§ 118. *au*. This compound vowel, when followed by *r*, is sounded as *au* in the English word *auricular*; e. g. *Maure*, Moor, *aurore*, dawn.

§ 119. *ei*. This compound vowel, when followed by nasal *m* or nasal *n*, is sounded as *e* in § 108, *i* in § 111, and *ai* in § 116, i. e. between *a* in the English word *hang* and *e* in the English word *strength*; e. g. *Rheims*, Rheims, *plein*, full.

§ 120. *œi* and *uei*. These combinations of vowels, when followed by *l*, are sounded like the compound vowel *eu* (§ 23), the *l* being sounded liquid (§ 48. a.); e. g. *œil*, eye, *accueil*, reception, *écueil*, rock, *enorgueillir*, to make proud, *orgueil*, pride, *recueil*, collection, and all the many derivatives from these words.

§ 121. *oi*. This diphthong, when followed by *n*, is not sounded as usual. The *o* is pronounced as directed in § 34, but the *i* is pronounced as directed in § 112; e. g. *coin*, corner, *soin*, care.

§ 122. It may be stated as a general principle of pronunciation, that, when a vowel sound is followed by a consonant, the vowel-sound is *longer* than it would otherwise be; e. g. *j'aimai*, *j'aimais*, I loved.

SILENCE OF VOWELS.

§ 123. *a*. This vowel is silent in the following words: *aoriste*, aorist, *Août*, August, *Saône* (name of a river), *saoûl*, tipsy, *taon*, gad-fly, and in all derivatives from these. So also in words from a foreign language which begin with the diphthong *æ*; e. g. *Æsope*, *Æsop*, etc.

§ 124. *e*. (a) This vowel is always silent when it occurs un-

accented at the end of a word after another vowel ; e. g. *année*, year, *amie*, friend, *plaie*, wound, *voie*, way, *laitue*, lettuce, *queue*, tail, *je paye*, I pay.*

§ 125. *e*. (b) This vowel is always silent when it occurs unaccented before the vowel *a* or *o* ; e. g. *il gagea*, he betted, *geai*, jay, *Jean*, John, *mangeant*, eating, *douceâtre*, sweetish, *chapeau*, hat, *flageolet*, flageolet, *geôle*, gaol, *asseoir*, to set, *villageois*, villager.†

§ 126. *e*. (c) This vowel occurring before *u* is silent : (1) always when the *u* has a circumflex accent ; e. g. *jeûne*, fast : (2) in all the forms of the verb *avoir*, to have, in which *eu* occurs ; e. g. *eu*, *eut*, *eûmes*, *eûtes*, *eurent*, *eussions*, etc. : and (3) in the three words, *gageure*, bet, *mangeure*, hole eaten in anything, *vergeure* (technical term with paper-makers).‡

§ 127. *e*. (d) This vowel is silent in all substantives ending in *ement* immediately preceded by a vowel ; e. g. *crucifiement*, crucifixion, *devoiment*, diarrhœa, *denouement*, catastrophe, *denuement*, deprivation.

§ 128. *e*. This vowel is silent in the termination *ent* of the third person plural of any tense of a verb (as are also the subsequent consonants, *nt*, § 167) ; e. g. *ils parlent*, they speak, *ils chantoient*, they sang.

§ 129. It may be stated as a general principle, that, when

* In the three following words, however : *Andaye*, *Biscaye*, *Blaye*, the *e* is slightly heard, as in the English word *over*, the *ye* forming a syllable distinct from the preceding *a*. The accent falls upon the *a* in these words.

† In some of these cases, it is to be noticed, the *e*, though silent, has an important effect on the sound of the word, for where *g* occurs before the *e* the *g* would be hard, were it not for the intervention of the *e*. The same silence of the *e* and a similar effect on the sound of the *g* are seen in the English word *pigeon*.

‡ In these three words the *g*, which would otherwise be hard, is made soft by the silent *e*, as in the instances mentioned in the preceding section.

the vowel *e* is silent after another vowel, it lengthens the previous vowel; e. g. *vie*, life, *vue*, sight.

§ 130. *i*. This vowel is silent in the following words: *bouvreuil*, bulfinch, *cerfeuil*, chervil, *chèvre-feuille*, honey-suckle, *chevreuil*, roe-buck, *deuil*, mourning, *écureuil*, squirrel, *encoignure*, corner, *fauteuil*, elbow-chair, *fenouil*, fennel, *feuille*, leaf, *oignon*, onion, *réseuil*, net, *seuil*, threshold.

§ 131. *o*. This vowel is silent in the words *faon*, fawn, *Laon* (a French town), *paon*, peacock, and in all words in which *æ* occurs, such as *Ædipe*, *Ædipus*, *æsophage*, *æsophagus*, *œuvre*, work, *cœur*, heart, *sœur*, sister.

§ 132. *u*. This vowel, immediately preceded by *g* or *q* and immediately followed by a vowel, is most frequently silent; e. g. *il conjugua*, he conjugated, *guérir*, to heal, *langue*, tongue, *guide*, guide, *quantité*, quantity, *question*, question, *queue*, tail, *quitter*, to quit.*

SILENCE OF CONSONANTS.

§ 133. I shall consider separately each consonant and each combination of consonants which is ever silent. It is to be observed, that, if a consonant is silent at the end of a word in the singular number, it is also silent in the plural of that word, though another consonant be added to form the plural.

§ 134. *b*. This letter is always silent in *plomb*, lead, and its derivatives, such as *surplomb*, *aplomb*. Elsewhere it is sounded.

§ 135. *c*. This letter is silent at the end of the words, *accroc*, rent, *almanac*, almanac, *banc*, bank, *blanc*, white,

* For a considerable list of words in which *u* is silent, see App. B. For a considerable list of words in which *u* is pronounced as part of a diphthong, see App. A. It is to be observed that silent *u* standing between *g* and *e* makes the *g* hard, which would otherwise be soft; e. g. above in *guérir* and *langue*.

broc, great jug, *clerc*, clerk, *cotignac*, marmalade, *cric*, engine for lifting, *donc*, therefore, *estomac*, stomach, *flanc*, flank, *franc*, free, *jonc*, rush, *marc*, mark, *porc*, pork, *tronc*, trunk.*

§ 136. *d*. This letter is silent at the end of all words except the following: *Cid*, *Cid*, *éphod*, *ephod*, *Sud*, *South*, together with any proper names ending in *d*; e. g. *David*, *Lamed*, *Sund*, *Talmud*. However, when it is preceded by *n*, and the next word begins with a vowel or *h* mute, it is sounded like *t*; e. g. *grand homme*, great man, *vend-il*? does he sell? So, too, in the expression *pied-à-terre*. (Comp. § 42.)

§ 137. *f*. This letter is silent only at the end of the words, *baillif*, bailiff, *cerf*, stag, *clef*, key, *éteuf*, tennis-ball, and in the compounds, *cerf-volant*, horned beetle, *chef-d'œuvre*, master-piece, *œuf-frais*, fresh egg.

§ 138. *g*. This letter is silent: (1) always at the end of the words *étang*, pond, *hareng*, herring, *long*, long, *oing*, cart-grease, *poing*, fist, *rang*, rank, *sang*, blood, *seing*, signature; (2) in all words compounded with *bourg*, (except *bourg-mestre*), as *Edinbourg*, *Edinburgh*, *faubourg*, suburb, *Luxembourg*, *Petersbourg*, *Bourg-l'abbé*, *Bourg-la-reine*, etc. (Comp. §§ 44. c. and 64); and (3) in *doigtier*, thumbstall, and other derivatives of *doigt*, finger, *Regnard*, *Regnard*, *Regnault*, *Regnault*, *sang-froid*, cold blood, *sang-sue*, leech, *signet*, tassel.

§ 139. *h*. (a) This letter is very often silent at the beginning of words; e. g. *habile*, clever, *heure*, hour. (See a list of the words beginning with silent *h*, in Appendix C.)

§ 140. *h*. (b) This letter is always silent when it follows a vowel in the same syllable; e. g. *ah!* *ah!* *bah!* *bah!*

§ 141. *h*. (c) This letter is always silent after *g* in the

* But in *cric-crac*, crick-crack, *croc-en-jambe*, trip, *franc-étourdi*, harebrain, *porc-épic*, porcupine, the *c* is sounded. In *arc-boutant*, buttress, the *c* is silent. In *socque*, sandal, the *c* may be considered as silent.

same syllable ; e. g. *Borghese*, *Berghem*, *Enghien* (all proper names).

§ 142. *h*. (d) This letter is always silent after *r* in the same syllable ; e. g. *rhéteur*, rhetorician, *Rhône*, Rhone, *rhubarbe*, rhubarb.

§ 143. *h*. (e) This letter is always silent after *t* in the same syllable ; e. g. *Démosthène*, Demosthenes, *thé*, tea, *Elizabeth*, Elizabeth, *méthode*, method, *arithmétique*, arithmetic.

§ 144. *l*. This letter is silent at the end of the following words : *baril*, barrel, *chenil*, dog-kennel, *coutil*, ticking, *cul*, bottom, *fénil*, hay-loft, *fraisil*, cinder, *fusil*, firelock, *gentil*, heathen, *gril*, gridiron, *nombril*, navel, *outil*, tool, *persil*, parsley, *soûl*, drunk, *sourcil*, eye-brow. So, too, in *fil*s, son, distinguished from *fil*s, plural of *fil*, thread, in which the *l* is sounded. In *il*s, also, the *l* is suppressed by many before a word beginning with a vowel, as in *il*s *ont*, they have.

§ 145. *m*. This letter is silent in *automne*, autumn, *damner*, to damn, *solemniser*, to solemnize, and in all compounds or other derivatives from these words.

§ 146. *n*. This letter is silent in the word *Monsieur*, Sir.

§ 147. *p*. (a) This letter is silent in *baptême*, baptism, *cheptel*, loan of cattle, *compter*, to count, *dompter*, to subdue, *exempter*, to exempt, *prompte*, prompt, *sculpter*, to sculpture, *sept*, seven, and in all the compounds and other derivatives from these words.

§ 148. *p*. (b) This letter is always silent at the end of a word, except in *Alep*, Aleppo, *cap*, cape, *cep*, vine, *Gap*, Gap, *jalap*, jalap, *julep*, julep.

§ 149. *q*. This letter is silent at the end of the words *cing*, five, and *coq*, cock.

§ 150. *r*. This letter is silent at the end of the word *Monsieur*, Sir, and in most words ending in *er*. For a list of words ending in *er* in which it is sounded, see Appendix D.

§ 151. *s*. (a) This letter is always silent before *ch* in the same syllable ; e. g. *Schall* (proper name), *scheling*, shilling, *schisme*, schism.

§ 152. *s*. (b) This letter is silent in *desquels*, of which, *lesquels*, which, *Desfontaines*, *Destouches*, and other proper names compounded of *des*.

§ 153. *s*. (c) This letter is silent at the end of all words except those of which a list is given in Appendix E. It is therefore always silent when added as a plural termination.

§ 154. *t*. This letter is silent at the end of all words except those of which a list is given in Appendix F.

§ 155. *x*. This letter is silent at the end of all words except those enumerated in § 74. Obs. XVI. It is therefore always silent when added as a plural termination.

§ 156. *z*. This letter is silent at the end of all words except those enumerated in § 76. Obs. XVIII.

§ 157. *ch*. These letters are silent at the end of the word *almanach*, almanac.

§ 158. *cs*. These letters are silent at the end of the word *lacs*, noose.

§ 159. *ct*. These letters are silent at the end of the words, *amict*, *amice*, *aspect*, *aspect*, *circonspect*, *circumspect*, *distinct*, *distinct*, *instinct*, *instinct*, *respect*, *respect*, *suspect*, *suspected*.*

§ 160. *fs*. These letters are both silent at the end of the plural words, *bœufs*, oxen, *nerfs*, nerves, *neufs*, new, *œufs*, eggs, though the *f* is sounded in the singular.

§ 161. *gs*. These letters are silent at the end of the word *legs*, legacy.

§ 162. *gt*. These letters are silent at the end of the words *doigt*, finger, and *vingt*, twenty.

§ 163. *ld*. These letters are silent at the end of proper names; e. g. *Arnauld*.

§ 164. *ls*. These letters are silent at the end of the word *pouls*, pulse.

* When, however, the *ct* is followed by *c*, as in the feminine of any of these words, the consonants are both sounded; e. g. in *circonspecte*, *distincte*, *suspecte*.

§ 165. *lt.* These letters are silent at the end of proper names ; e. g. *Dessault, Guérault, Rochefoucault.*

§ 166. *lx.* These letters are silent at the end of the word *aulx*, plural of *aïl*, garlic.

§ 167. *nt.* These letters are silent in the termination *ent* of the third person plural in any tense of a verb (Comp. § 128) ; e. g. *ils aiment*, they love, *ils furent*, they were, *qu'ils eussent*, that they might have.

§ 168. *ph.* These letters are silent at the beginning of the word *phthisie*, phthisic.

§ 169. *ps.* These letters are silent at the end of the words, *corps*, body, *romps*, break (first pers. sing. pres. indic. of *rompre*, to break), and in compounds of the latter, as *corromps*, corrupt, etc.

§ 170. *pt.* These letters are silent at the end of the words, *prompt*, prompt, *rompt*, breaks (third pers. sing. pres. indic. of *rompre*, to break), and in compounds of the latter, as *interrompt*, interrupts, etc.

§ 171. *rs.* These letters are silent at the end of the word *Messieurs*, plural of *Monsieur*, Sir.

§ 172. *st.* These letters are silent at the end of the word *est*, is (third pers. sing. pres. indic. of *être*, to be),* and at the end of *Christ*, Christ, when it is immediately preceded by *Jésus*, Jesus. When *Christ* is alone, these letters are sounded.

§ 173. *th.* These letters are silent in the words, *asthme*, asthma, *isthme*, isthme, and any derivatives from these.

SYLLABLES AND WORDS.

§ 174. French syllables are divided into two classes, *masculine* and *feminine*. A feminine syllable is one ending with an unaccented *e* ; all other syllables are masculine. Thus in *rose*, *rose*, (which the French regard as consisting of two syllables, not, as it is regarded in English, of only one,) the first syllable, *ro*, is a masculine syllable, the last, *se*, is femi-

* In *est*, *east*, these consonants are not silent.

nine. In *exercice*, exercise, which is considered as having three syllables, the first and second, *ex*, *er*, are masculine, the third, *ce*, feminine. In *pelu*, hairy, the first syllable is feminine, the other masculine.*

§ 175. The *e* of feminine syllables is generally sounded very lightly, if at all, in French. Indeed, the word *rose*, for example, is commonly pronounced almost exactly as in English, excepting the difference in sounding the *o* (§ 11). In verse, before a word commencing with a vowel the *e* of a feminine syllable would not be heard at all; before a consonant euphony generally requires a slight enunciation. Thus, in the following line of Boileau :

“ *Sans mentir, l'avarice est une étrange rage,*”

Certainly avarice is a strange madness,

the *e* in the feminine syllables of *avarice* and *une* is entirely silent, but in the feminine syllable of *étrange*, euphony requires that it should be slightly sounded before the consonant with which the next word, *rage*, commences. In prose suppress the *e* of the feminine syllable as much as possible; e. g. *venir*, to come, *soutenir*, to sustain.

§ 176. Where two or more feminine syllables occur together, the *e* in the first is to be sounded distinctly, and that in the other or others suppressed; e. g. *devenir*, to become, *revenir*, to return, *ne le vendez pas*, do not sell it.

§ 177. In case three or more feminine syllables occur consecutively, the *e* in the first and third only is distinctly enunciated; e. g. *je ne me vendais pas*, I did not sell myself, *je n' ai plus de ce que je vendais*, I have no more of what I sold.

§ 178. When any single final consonant, which would be

* The word *amiable* in English affords an example of syllabic usage much like that in French spoken of above. This is called a word of four syllables. The first three are masculine, the last is feminine.

silent according to the rules that have been given, is *followed by a word beginning with a vowel or h mute, and there is no punctuation-mark between them or other reason for separating them in utterance*, the consonant is always sounded; e. g. *cing femmes ont été ici*, five women have been here (§§ 153, 154). The conjunction *et*, and, is an exception, the *t* never being sounded in this word even before a vowel; e. g. *je suis frère et ami*, I am brother and friend. Also before the words *onze*, eleven, *onzième*, eleventh, a consonant is never sounded; e. g. *vers les onze heures*, about eleven o'clock.

§ 179. When two final consonants, both of which would be silent according to the rules that have been given, are followed by a word beginning with a vowel or *h* mute, only the last of the two consonants is sounded; e. g. *l'aspect est effroyable*, the aspect is frightful (§ 159 and 172), *je ne romps aucune promesse*, I break no promise (§ 169), *ils se lient ensemble*, they connect themselves with each other (§ 167).

§ 180. When a word ending with a nasal *m* or *n* is followed by another beginning with a vowel or *h* mute, and *there is no punctuation-mark between the two words*, the final consonant of the first word loses its nasal sound and is united with the vowel commencing the second word; e. g. *bon ami*, good friend, *bien utile*, very useful. N. B. The sound of the vowel preceding *m* or *n* is not changed in these cases.

EMPHASIS.

§ 181. By emphasis is meant here the stress laid on a particular syllable in a word. This is more properly, and in English more commonly, called *accent*; but I prefer not to use this word, as it is the name of certain little but important French marks, of which I shall speak in the next chapter. The following rules will show where the emphasis belongs in French words.

§ 182. RULE I. In dissyllables composed of a masculine and a feminine syllable, whichever precedes, the emphasis

belongs to the masculine ; e. g. *plume*, pen, *livre*, book (in both which the stress is on the first syllable), *cheval*, horse, *venin*, poison (in both which the stress is on the last syllable).

§ 183. RULE II. In dissyllables composed of two masculine syllables, stress is laid on the second rather more than on the first, though the difference is not by any means so striking as in cases falling under the preceding rule ; e. g. *chapeau*, hat, *canif*, penknife.

§ 184. RULE III. In words composed of two or more feminine syllables with one masculine, the stress belongs to the masculine syllable ; e. g. *retenir*, to retain, *redevenir*, to become again.*

§ 185. RULE IV. In words composed of several masculine syllables the stress is usually laid on the last ; e. g. *ambition*, ambition, *étendard*, standard, *maitriser*, to master.

§ 186. RULE V. The emphasis is never to be laid upon a feminine syllable. Though, according to § 176, the first feminine syllable in *redevenir*, to become again, is sounded more distinctly than the second or third, yet the real *emphasis* is on the last syllable, as stated in § 184.

CHAP. III.

ORTHOGRAPHY.

SYLLABLES.

§ 187. When a single consonant, or a combination of two or more consonants that might naturally be sounded together at the beginning of a word, occurs between two vowels which belong to different syllables, the consonants are to be spelt with the last vowel ; e. g. *ci-vi-il-té*, civility, *vi-si-te*, visit.

§ 188. When two or more consonants that cannot naturally

* There are no words in French composed of, or ending with, two or more feminine syllables.

be sounded together occur between two vowels which belong to different syllables, the first consonant is to be spelt with the first vowel, the other or others with the last; e. g. *ad-mi-ra-tion*, admiration; *con-struc-tion*, construction, *des-ser-vir*, to clear the table.

LETTERS.

§ 189. The capital letters are used in French in all cases in which they are used in English, excepting that the pronoun of the first person, *je*, is generally written without one, and that in some books they are not used at the beginning of adjectives formed from proper names; * *oui, je vous aime*, yes, I love you, *c'est un livre français*, it is a French book.

§ 190. For the sake of euphony the letter *t* is inserted between a verb ending with a vowel and a pronoun following which begins with a vowel; e. g. *a-t-il*, has he, *dira-t-on*, will they say. This insertion makes no change in the sense. Its sole object is to avoid what is called a *hiatus* in the occurrence of two vowel-sounds together.

§ 191. For the same reason the letter *l* with an apostrophe is often inserted between the words *et, ou, or où, que, qui, and si*, (ending with a vowel-sound) and the pronoun *on*; e. g. *et l'on dit*, and they say, *il faut que l'on consente*, they must consent, *si l'on nous entendait*, if they heard us, *on peut aller où l'on veut*, one may go where one wishes.

§ 192. For the same reason the letter *s* is sometimes added to *quatre*, four, in connection with *yeux*, eyes, though *quatre* is of itself plural; thus, *quatre yeux*, four eyes. The pronunciation is always as if an *s* were inserted, even though none appear in the orthography.

* This remark applies only to cases when these words do not commence a sentence.

ACCENTS.

§ 193. The French accents are three in number, the acute ('), the grave (`), and the circumflex (^).

§ 194. The acute accent is never placed over any other letter than *e*; and, as has been stated (§ 7), indicates that that vowel is to be sounded like *a* in the English word *ale*.

§ 195. The grave accent seldom occurs over any other letter than *e*, and, as has been stated (§ 8), it indicates that that vowel is to be sounded as the first *e* in the English word *there*. The grave accent is placed over *a* and *u* in a few words, to distinguish them from others spelt in the same way. Thus *à*, to, is distinguished from *a*, has; *là*, there, from *la*, the; *où*, where, from *ou*, or. It is also used over the *a* in *çà* and its compound, *deçà*, on this side, though there are no other words spelt like them.

§ 196. The circumflex accent is usually placed over a vowel which was formerly doubled or followed by an *s*; e. g. *âge*, age, formerly *aage*; *apôtre*, apostle, formerly *apostre*; *bête*, beast, formerly *beste*; *épître*, epistle, formerly *epistre*; *être*, to be, formerly *estre*. As has been stated (§ 19), this accent indicates that the vowel has a peculiarly long sound.

§ 197. The circumflex accent is placed over certain words to distinguish them from others of the same form. Thus, it occurs over the last syllable of the third pers. sing. imperfect subjunctive, to distinguish it from the preterite indicative; e. g. *qu'il parlât*, *qu'il fût*. So *dû*, owed, is distinguished from *du*, of the; *crû*, grewed, from *cru*, believed; *mûr*, ripe, from *mur*, wall; *sûr*, sure, from *sur*, upon, and *sur*, sour.

Other marks.

§ 198. *Cedilla*. This mark does not occur in English. It is a kind of comma, sometimes placed under the *c* before

a, *o*, or *u*, and, as has been stated (§ 41. b.), denotes that the *c* has a soft sound ; as, e. g., in *façon*, fashion, *déçu*, deceived.

§ 199. *Apostrophe*. This is the same as the English apostrophe. In French it always denotes what is called the *elision*, i. e. the suppression, of a vowel before another vowel or *h* mute. Then the consonant preceding the suppressed vowel is to be sounded with the next word. Only the vowels *a*, *e*, *i*, are subject to elision.

§ 200. The vowel *a* is elided always and only in the word *la*, whether article or pronoun, when it occurs before a word beginning with a vowel or *h* mute ; e. g. *l'ame*, the soul, *l'étude*, the study, *l'idole*, the idol, *l'orange*, the orange, *l'utilité*, the utility, *l'harmonie*, the harmony, *je l'ai vue*, I have seen her.*

§ 201. The vowel *e* is elided in the following words, *ce*, *de*, *entre*, *je*, *le*, *me*, *ne*, *que*, *se*, *te*, and all compounds of *que*, such as *parceque*, *quelque*, *quoique*, etc., when they occur before a word beginning with a vowel or *h* mute ; e. g. *c'est à moi*, it is mine, *d'avoir*, to have, *entr'eux*, among them, *j'ai*, I have, *il l'a*, he has it, *l'homme*, the man, *il m'oblige*, he obliges me, *il n'est qu'homme*, he is only man, *il s'aime*, he loves himself, *il t'aime*, he loves thee, *c'est parcequ'il l'a dit*, it is because he has said it.†

§ 202. The vowel *e* is also often elided in the word *grande*,

* When, however, *la* occurs after a verb, as its object, the *a* is not elided, unless it be followed immediately by *en* or *y* ; e. g. *donnez-la à ma sœur*, give her to my sister, but, *jetez-l'y*, throw it there. Before *onzième*, too, *la* suffers no elision. (Comp. note below).

† But when either of these words follows the verb to which it belongs, the *e* is not elided ; e. g. *dites-le à mon frère*, tell it to my brother, *vous suis-je obligé ?* am I obliged to you ? *est-ce un homme ?* is it a man ? From this remark *le* must be excepted when followed by *en* or *y* ; e. g. *reprenez l'en*, chide him for it. Before *onze*, eleven, *onzième*, eleventh, and *oui*, yes, there is no elision of any word ; e. g. *le onze*, eleven, *le onzième*, the eleventh, *il ne dit que oui*, he says only yes,

(fem. of *grand*, great,) before a substantive beginning with a consonant; e. g. *grand' chambre*, great chamber, *grand' chère*, great cheer, *grand' chose*, great thing, *grand' faim*, great hunger, etc.

§ 203. The vowel *i* is elided only in the word *si*, if, before *il* or *ils*; e. g. *s'il vous plait*, if you please, *s'ils viennent*, if they come. We must write, *si elle vient*, if she comes.

§ 204. *Diæresis*. This consists of two dots placed over *e*, *i*, or *u*, to denote that they are not silent and do not form a diphthong or compound vowel with the vowel which precedes; e. g. *poëte*, poet, *naïveté*, simplicity, *Saül*, Saul.*

§ 205. *Hyphen*. This mark is the same in French as in English. It is not only used in French, as in English, to connect the parts of compound words (e. g. *tout-puissant*, almighty, *arc-en-ciel*, rainbow), but moreover it always connects the personal pronouns, as also *en*, *y*, *ce*, *on*, with the verb to which they belong, *when that verb immediately precedes them*; e. g. *puis-je*? can I? *donnez-moi*, give me, *entends-tu*? dost thou hear? *croît-il*? does he grow? *est-ce vous*? is it you? *vas-y*, go there.†

§ 206. The common marks of punctuation, viz. the *comma*, *semicolon*, *colon*, *period*, *interrogation*, *note of admiration*, *note of exclamation*, *parenthesis*, *quotation-marks*, etc., are the same in French as in English.

* The diæresis sometimes put over the *e* in *aiguë*, sharp, and some other words ending in *ue*, is designed to show that the *ue* is not silent as in *longue*, long, and many other words, but is sounded very long.

† In case a *t* is inserted between the verb and following pronoun (§ 190), the hyphen is used to connect the verb with the *t* and the *t* with the pronoun; e. g. *a-t-il*? has he?

P A R T II.

F O R M S O F W O R D S .

General Remarks.

§ 207. The parts of speech in French are the same in number and in name as in English. The Adverb, Preposition, Conjunction, and Interjection will be considered together under the head of *Particles*; the other parts of speech will be treated of separately, in the following order: *Article, Substantive, Adjective, Pronoun, Verb*.*

CHAP. I.

A R T I C L E .

VARIATION.

§ 208. In French, as in English, there are two Articles, the *Definite* and the *Indefinite*. The Definite Article has two Numbers, the singular and the plural, and two Genders in the singular, the masculine and the feminine. *Le* is the form for the masculine singular; *la* for the feminine singular; and *les* for both genders in the plural. The Indefinite Article has, as a matter of course, no plural; it has two genders in the singular, *un* being the masculine form, and *une* the feminine. Thus, e. g., *le prince*, the prince, *la femme*, the woman, *les hommes*, the men, *un livre*, a book, *une actrice*, an actress.

§ 209. If the masculine or feminine singular of the Definite Article be immediately followed by a word which commences with a vowel or *h* mute, the final vowel of the Article is elided and an apostrophe inserted (see §§ 199, 200, 201);

* Whenever the word *noun* is used in this Grammar it is to be understood as comprehending both substantive and adjective.

e. g. *l'homme*, the man, not *le homme* ; *l'âme*, the soul, not *la âme*.

§ 210. In many cases, when the Definite Article is accompanied by the preposition *de* or *à*, the preposition and Article are united in one word by a peculiar contraction. Thus *de le*, before a word beginning with a consonant, is contracted into *du*, and *à le*, in the same situation, into *au* ; *de les* in the plural is always contracted into *des*, and *à les* always into *aux*. In these cases the uncontracted forms are never used, and in no other cases are the contractions mentioned allowable. Thus, e. g., *du prince*, of the prince, *au prince*, to the prince, *des grands princes*, of the great princes, *aux plus grands princes*, to the greatest princes.

DETERMINATION OF FORM.

§ 211. From what has been said of the various forms which the articles take, we may deduce the following statement respecting their use :

Un : Before any noun masculine singular ;

Une : Before any noun feminine singular.

Le, *Au*, *Du* : Before a noun masculine singular beginning with a consonant ;

L', *À l'*, *De l'* : Before a noun either masculine or feminine singular beginning with a vowel or *h* mute ;

La, *À la*, *De la* : Before a noun feminine singular beginning with a consonant ;

Les, *Aux*, *Des* : Before any noun in the plural.

POSITION.

§ 212. The rules concerning the position of the Articles are the same in French as in English, with two exceptions, which follow :

§ 213. EXCEPT. I. When the Indefinite Article occurs in connection with the word *tel*, such, the Article takes precedence. Thus, instead of saying, as in English, *such a man*,

the French say, *un tel homme*, literally *a such man*; *une telle femme*, such a woman, literally *a such woman*.

§ 214. Exc. II. In cases like the following in English, *so good a man*, the French would put the Article before the Adjective thus, *un si bon homme*, literally *a so good man*.

Additional Peculiarities.

§ 215. With us the Indefinite Article is often employed before nouns of weight, measure, or any reckoning, in such expressions as the following, *I have sold my wheat at six shillings a bushel*;* but the French always employ the Definite Article, if either, in such cases; e. g. *j'ai vendu mon blé à six schelings le boisseau*. Sometimes, in such cases, the French supply the place of the Definite Article by the Preposition *par*; e. g. *on vous demandera dix schelings par tête*, they will ask you ten shillings a head.

§ 216. We say, I wish you good day, or, a good day, I caught a fever, the French say, *le bon jour*, *la fièvre*.

§ 217. We often use the Indefinite Article after the word *what* in an exclamation; e. g. in such expressions as, *what a house! what a fool of a lawyer!* The French always omit it in such cases; e. g. *quelle maison! quel sot d'avocat!*

§ 218. We use the Indefinite Article in such expressions as, *what a fine tree there is!* The French always make use of very different phraseology in such cases; e. g. *le bel arbre que celui-là!*

§ 219. We use the Indefinite Article before *hundred* and *thousand*; e. g. *a hundred crowns*, *I have gained a thousand pounds*. The French do not; e. g. *cent écus*, *j'ai gagné mille livres*.

§ 220. We use the Indefinite Article after the verbs *to be*, *to become*, etc. before a noun denoting profession, rank, country, or other distinctive characteristic; e. g. *he is a physician*, *she is a duchess*, *I am an American*. The French never do,

* It would be proper English, though not so common, to say *the bushel*.

except when *ce* is the nominative to the verb ; e. g. they say, *il est médecin, elle est duchesse, je suis Américain*, but *c'est un médecin*, etc.*

§ 221. The French do not use either the Definite or Indefinite Article before a noun in apposition, in cases like the following : *Le duc d'Orléans, prince du sang ; Louis, fils du Comte*. We should say : *The duke of Orleans, a prince of the blood ; Louis, the Count's son*. So, too, in cases like the following, the principle of which is much like that of those just mentioned : *Tous les peuples du monde ont l'idée d'un être suprême ; preuve évidente*, etc., every nation on the globe has the idea of a Supreme Being ; *an evident proof*, etc. The substantive, *preuve*, in this example, may be regarded as in apposition with the whole of the previous clause.

§ 222. *Proper names of persons*, with a few exceptions mentioned in the next section, do not commonly take the Definite Article ; e. g. *Alexandre, César, et Napoléon avaient beaucoup de courage*, Alexander, Cæsar, and Napoleon possessed great courage.

§ 223. The Definite Article is always used with certain proper names, principally *names of Italian and French writers and painters* ; e. g. *le Tasse, Tasso, l'Arioste, Ariosto, le Titien, Titian, la Fontaine, Fontaine, la Bruyère, Bruyere, la Rochefoucault, Rochefoucault*.

§ 224. When a proper name of a person is employed to denote, not the person, but the *character*, becoming in fact a kind of common noun, the Article is used ; e. g. *le Jupiter d'Homère*, Homer's Jupiter, *l'Alexandre du nouveau monde*, the Alexander of the new world.

* In case, however, the noun which denotes profession, rank, country, etc., be followed by some other word or words limiting the generality of the statement, the French use the Article ; e. g. *je suis un prince très malheureux*, I am a very unfortunate prince, *je suis un Français d'une illustre maison*, I am a Frenchman of an illustrious family.

§ 225. Proper names of *countries, provinces, islands, and other districts larger than cities and towns*, almost all take the Definite Article, although in English they do not; e. g. *l'Amerique est plus fertile que l'Angleterre*, America is more fertile than England. There are some constant exceptions to this rule. These consist chiefly of such countries as derive their name from that of their chief city.*

§ 226. The Definite Article is *not* employed before such proper names of *European* districts of country as are referred to in the preceding section, when the idea of *going to, coming from, or remaining in* is expressed, *en* or *de* being in such cases used without the Article; e. g. *quand irez-vous en Espagne?* when shall you go to Spain? *il vient d'arriver de Suède*, he has just arrived from Sweden, *il est en France*, he is in France. Yet, before the name of any *country out of Europe*, and also before that of *Europe* itself, the Article is used in such cases with the Preposition *à* or *de*; e. g. *il est allé au Japon, à l'Amerique, à l'Europe*, etc., he is gone to Japan, to America, to Europe, etc.

§ 227. The Definite Article is often *not* employed before the name of any country which is very closely connected in sense with a preceding substantive by the preposition *de*; e. g. *le roi d'Angleterre*, the English king, *les peuples d'Afrique*, the African nations, *les pays d'Italie*, the Italian countries, *les inquisiteurs d'Espagne et de Portugal*, the Spanish and Portuguese inquisitors.

§ 228. Names of *cities or towns and smaller land-divisions* do *not* take the Definite Article; e. g. *Rome, la maîtresse du monde*, Rome, the mistress of the world. To this rule there are the following exceptions: *la Haye, la Rochelle, le Havre, le Perche, la Flèche*, and such other names of places as have been derived from common nouns.

§ 229. Proper names of *rivers, mountains, and winds* take

* See a list of these exceptions in App. G.

the Definite Article, as in English, unless they be connected by the Preposition *de* with the word *rivière*, *montagne*, or *vent*, preceding, in which case the Article is often omitted. E. g. *la Tamise*, the Thames, *les Alpes*, the Alps, *l'Aquilon*, the north-wind ; but, *la rivière de Seine*, the river Seine, *le vent d'est*, the east wind.

§ 230. When any proper names are used in a manner analogous to that specified respecting names of persons in § 224, the Article is employed ; e. g. *le Paris de l'Angleterre*, the Paris of England, *l'ancienne Rome et la Rome moderne*, ancient and modern Rome.

§ 231. *Common Substantives* require the Definite Article before them in French, as in English, when their sense is restricted by the context so as to be *definite and particular* ; e. g. *la maison que j'ai achetée*, the house which I have bought.

§ 232. Substantives taken in a very *general sense*, denoting *whole classes or sorts*, or anything *considered universally*, take the Definite Article in French, though not in English ; e. g. *les rois sont mortels*, kings are mortal, *le pain est cher*, bread is dear, *l'amour rend la vie agréable*, love renders life agreeable.

§ 233. The Definite Article is to be repeated in French before each of several nouns (whether adjective or substantive) occurring together under the same relation ; e. g. *le blé, le vin, et l'huile sont les richesses de notre état*, corn, wine, and oil are the riches of our state, *j'admire la patience, l'industrie, et l'économie*, I admire patience, industry, and economy, *les vieux et les nouveaux soldats*, the old and new soldiers. (But see §§ 242, 243.)

§ 234. In case an adjective in the superlative degree *precedes* a substantive, one Article suffices, but in case it *follows* the substantive, the Article must be employed before each ; e. g. *les plus habiles gens font quelquefois les plus grandes fautes*, or, *les gens les plus habiles font quelquefois les fautes les plus grandes*, the ablest men sometimes commit the grossest blunders.

§ 235. The Definite Article is omitted before substantives denoting the title of a book or of part of a book, or a place of residence ; e. g. *Grammaire Générale*, General Grammar (as the title of a book), *préface*, preface, *livre premier*, first book, *chapitre premier*, chapter first, *il demeure rue St. Jacques*, he lives in St. James' Street.

§ 236. The Definite Article is omitted before substantives which are preceded by any inflection of the pronouns, *mon*, my, *ton*, thy, *son*, his, *notre*, our, *votre*, your, *leur*, their, *ce*, this, *aucun*, any, *certain*, certain, *chaque*, each, *nul*, no, *plusieurs*, several, *tel*, such, *tout* (when used for *chaque*), every, or by a cardinal number used without any definite reference to a particular set of persons or things ; e. g. *mon ami a contribué beaucoup à votre bonheur*, my friend has contributed much to your happiness, *nul homme le sait*, no man knows it, *tout homme est mortel*, every man is mortal, *il y a cent choses*, there are a hundred things.

§ 237. The Definite Article is sometimes omitted before a substantive preceded by the prepositions, *avec*, *en*, *par*, *pour*, *sans* ; e. g. *avec prudence*, with prudence, *en vérité*, in truth, *il est en vie*, he is alive, *par raillerie*, in jest, *pour récompense*, in recompense, *sans doute*, without doubt, *un homme sans peur et sans reproche*, a man without fear and without reproach.*

§ 238. The Definite Article is omitted when a substantive is intimately joined in sense with the verb *avoir* or *faire*, as in the following expressions, *avoir compassion*, to have compassion, *faire pitié*, to cause pity.†

§ 239. The Definite Article is omitted before substantives preceded by the conjunction *ni*, in such expressions as the following, *il n'a ni honneur ni justice*, he has neither honor nor justice.

§ 240. In English, when two comparatives, *more* or *less*, are used in the same sentence to denote comparison, the Defi-

* See App. H.

† See App. H.

nite Article is employed twice ; e. g. *the more difficult a thing is, the more honorable it is*, and, *the more I see her, the less I esteem her*. In French, however, the Article is not employed at all in such cases ; e. g. *plus une chose est difficile, plus elle est honorable*, and, *plus je la vois, moins je l'estime*.

§ 241. The Definite Article is omitted when a substantive is used in the manner of an interjection ; e. g. *courage, soldats !* courage, soldiers !

§ 242. Although when several adjectives occur together qualifying the same substantive it is necessary to repeat the Article before each adjective if the sense of the adjectives be opposite or strikingly dissimilar (§ 233), yet, if the sense of the adjectives be somewhat similar, the Article is sometimes employed only once ; e. g. *le sage et pieux Fénelon*, the wise and pious Fenelon.

§ 243. Although, as has been stated (§ 233), the Article is commonly to be repeated in French before each of several substantives occurring together under the same relation, yet, sometimes, for the sake of greater emphasis, the Article is wholly omitted in such cases ; e. g. *ils ont renversé religion, morale, gouvernement, sciences, beaux-arts*, they have overturned religion, morality, government, science, fine arts.

§ 244. When the Article occurs before *plus* or *moins* expressing the superlative form of an adjective, it is varied according to the gender of the substantive, if there be comparison *with something else* ; otherwise the masculine form of the Article is used, even though the substantive be feminine. E. g. *De toutes les planètes la lune est la plus brillante pour nous*, Of all the planets, the moon is the most brilliant to us. *La lune ne nous éclaire pas autant que le soleil, même quand elle est le plus brillante*, The moon does not give us so much light as the sun, even when it shines brightest.

§ 245. The use of the Definite Article with the preposition *de* before common substantives deserves special remark. The remainder of the chapter will be devoted to this subject.

§ 246. I. The Definite Article is used with *de*, in general, when the idea of *some* or *any* in English is involved; e. g. *j'ai vu des Français*, I saw some Frenchmen, *voulez-vous des livres*, do you wish any books, *donnez-moi de l'eau*, give me some water. This is the case when the *idea* of *some* is involved, even though in English the *word* do not occur; e. g. *j'ai des pommes ici*, I have apples here.

§ 247. II. When an adjective intervenes between the preposition and the substantive, the Article is not used (save in the case mentioned in the next section); e. g. *voilà de beaux tableaux!* there are some beautiful pictures! *il a de bonnes plumes*, he has some good pens.*

§ 248. III. In case an adjective and a substantive form together a kind of compound substantive, the Article is employed; e. g. *j'ai du petit lait*, I have some whey, *il a du bon sens*, he has good sense, *les sentimens des anciens philosophes*, the sentiments of the ancient philosophers.†

§ 249. IV. The Article is not used after *substantives of number, measure, weight*, or any species of *quantity*; e. g. *un grand nombre d'hommes*, a great number of men, *une douzaine de boutons*, a dozen of buttons, *une bande de voleurs*, a gang of robbers, *une verre d'eau*, a glass of water, *une goutte de vin*, a drop of wine, *une livre de fromage*, a pound of cheese.‡

§ 250. V. The Article is not used after *espèce, genre, sorte*, or any word expressing *kind*; e. g. *espèce de poisson*,

* But if the adjective *follow* the substantive the Article is used; e. g. *voilà de la viande excellente*, there is good meat, *donnez-moi du vin rouge*, give me some red wine.

† *Les sentimens d'anciens philosophes* would mean, the sentiments of (some) ancient philosophers.

‡ To this principle, perhaps, we may properly refer such expressions as, *dix hommes de blessés et deux hommes de tués*, ten men wounded and two men killed.

species of fish, *genre d'ouvrage*, kind of work, *sorte de fruit*, sort of fruit.

§ 251. VI. The Article is not used after *personne*, *quelque chose*, *quelqu'un*, *quoi*, in such expressions as, *il n'y a personne de mécontent*, there is not a single discontented person, *quelque chose d'étonnant*, something astonishing, *y a-t-il quelqu'un de mécontent ?* is there any one discontented ? *quoi de plus juste ?* what more just ?

§ 252. VII. The Article is not used after *adverbs of quantity*, such as, *assez*, enough, *autant*, as much, *beaucoup*, much or many, *combien*, how much or how many, *guère*, scarce any, *jamais*, never, *moins*, less, *pas*, no, *peu*, little, *plus*, more, *point*, no, *rien*, nothing, *tant*, so much, *trop*, too much ; e. g. *il y a assez d'amour*, there is sufficient love, *tu n'as pas de gants*, thou hast no gloves, *il n'a plus de plaisir*, he has no more pleasure, *j'ai peu d'hommes ici*, I have but few men here, *vous avez trop d'appétit*, you have too much appetite.*

§ 253. VIII. The Article is not used when *de* expresses the relation of *material*, *quality*, or *nature* ; e. g. *pont de pierre*, bridge of stone, or stone bridge, *habit d'écarlate*, dress of scarlet, or scarlet dress.

§ 254. IX. The English possessive case of common substantives is rendered in French by means of *de* with the Definite Article ; e. g. the king's son, *le fils du roi*, the bird's wings, *les ailes de l'oiseau*.

§ 255. X. The Article is not used before the adjective *feu*, deceased, in such expressions as, *de feu Pierre*, of the deceased Peter, *à feu votre frère*, to your deceased brother.

* *Bien* is the only adverb of quantity which is followed by the Article ; e. g. *il a bien de l'esprit*, he has much spirit, but *il a beaucoup d'esprit*. In the idiomatic expressions, *pas du tout*, *plus du tout*, *point du tout*, *rien du tout*, the adverbs are not used as adverbs of quantity.

CHAP. II.

SUBSTANTIVE.

VARIATION.

General Statement.

§ 256. Substantives in French are of the Masculine, Feminine, or Common *Gender*. There is no Neuter Gender in French. All substantives are either masculine or feminine, or else both masculine and feminine at the same time. Substantives have two *Numbers* in French, Singular and Plural. They have no variation of *Case* in the proper sense of that word. The functions performed by cases in other languages are performed in French chiefly by prepositions or by the relative position of the Substantive.

GENDER OF SUBSTANTIVES.

§ 257. In French, as in most languages, Substantives have *generally* one invariable gender. Some, however, are of different genders according to their different significations.*

§ 258. When a Substantive, in whose meaning the idea of sex is involved, ends with unaccented *e*, it is of the *common* gender, i. e. may be used either as masculine or feminine; e. g. *un* or *une adultère*, an adulterer or adulteress, *camerade*, companion, *convive*, guest, *esclave*, slave, *poète*, poet, *pupille*, pupil.

§ 259. There is no general custom in French, like that which exists in some languages, of changing the gender of the Substantive by slight alterations in its form; for instance, by affixing a peculiar termination to the masculine to form the feminine. Yet changes of termination for this purpose do sometimes occur. They are limited to Substantives which

* For a list of these Substantives see App. I.

denote sex. The following are the chief, if not all, the instances of this sort.

§ 260. I. From names of males which do not already end in unaccented *e* (§ 258,) the feminine is generally formed by adding an unaccented *e*: e. g. *ami*, friend, fem. *amie*; *aïeul*, grandfather, *aïeule*, grandmother; *babillard*, prattler, fem. *babillarde*; *berger*, shepherd, *bergère*, shepherdess; *cousin*, cousin, fem. *cousine*; *marié*, bridegroom, *marité*, bride; *prieur*, prior, *prieure*, prioress.

§ 261. II. The feminine is often formed from masculines ending in *eur* by changing this termination into *euse*: e. g. *acheteur*, fem. *acheteuse*, buyer; *menteur*, fem. *menteuse*, liar; *trompeur*, fem. *trompeuse*, deceiver.

§ 262. III. The feminine of masculines ending in *eur* is often formed by changing this termination into *rice*: e. g. *acteur*, actor, *actrice*, actress; *ambassadeur*, ambassador, *ambassadrice*, ambassadress; *bienfaiteur*, benefactor, *bienfaitrice*, benefactress; *électeur*, elector, *électrice*, electress; *fondateur*, fem. *fondatrice*, founder; *protecteur*, protector, *protectrice*, protectress.

§ 263. IV. The feminine of some masculines ending in *c* is formed by changing *c* into *que*: e. g. *caduc*, fem. *caduque*, perishable; *Turc*, fem. *Turque*, Turk.

§ 264. V. The feminine of some masculines ending in *f* is formed by changing *f* to *ve*; e. g. *Juif*, Jew, *Juive*, Jewess.

§ 265. VI. The feminine of masculines ending in *n* with *o* or *ie* before it is formed by adding *ne*: e. g. *baron*, baron, *baronne*, baroness; *Chrétien*, fem. *Chrétienne*, Christian.

§ 266. VII. The feminine of some masculines is formed by changing final *x* into *se*: e. g. *époux*, fem. *épouse*, spouse; *jalous*, fem. *jalousie*, a jealous person.

§ 267. VIII. The feminine of some masculines is formed by adding *sse* when the word ends with *e* and *esse* otherwise: e. g. *abbé*, abbot, *abbesse*, abbess; *chanoine*, canon, *chanoinesse*, canoness; *comte*, count, *comtesse*, countess; *irrogne*,

fem. *ivrognesse*, drunkard ; *larron*, fem. *larronesse*, thief ; *Maure*, fem. *Mauresse*, Moor ; *prince*, prince, *princesse*, princess ; *traître*, traitor, *traîtresse*, traitress.

§ 268. IX. The following are irregular formations of the feminine from the masculine : *chasseur*, hunter, *chasseresse*, huntress ;* *compagnon*, fem. *compagne*, companion ; *devin*, fem. *devineresse*, conjuror ; *Dieu*, God, *déesse*, goddess ; *duc*, duke, *duchesse*, duchess ; *enchanteur*, sorcerer, *enchanteresse*, sorceress ; *pêcheur*, fem. *pécheresse*, sinner ; *roi*, king, *reine*, queen.

§ 269. As to the gender of all those French Substantives which do *not* involve any idea of sex, no invariable rules can be given. The numerous attempts to lay down such rules have all proved abortive. Most of the common statements on this subject are worse than useless ; for they are so indefinite and so often inaccurate, that no reliance can be put upon them. The learner finds it as necessary to have recourse to some other assurance of the actual gender of a Substantive as though these rules had never been devised. The Dictionary or some other equivalent catalogue is the best and only sure means of determining the gender of most French Substantives.

§ 270. The Substantives which are masculine or feminine in English are for the most part, if not always, of the same gender in French. The difficulty in the gender of French Substantives relates almost wholly to those which in English are of the neuter gender, but which in French are, for the most part arbitrarily, assigned either to the masculine or the feminine gender.

NUMBER OF SUBSTANTIVES.

§ 271. I. The general rule for the formation of the plural

* The regular feminine of *chasseur* is *chasseuse*, according to the rule in § 261. The form *chasseresse* is used only in poetry or poetical prose.

of Substantives in French is the same as in English, viz. to add the letter *s* to the singular : e. g. *le père*, father, pl. *les pères* ; *la mère*, mother, pl. *les mères*.

§ 272. II. By the usage of most writers, Substantives of more than one syllable which end in *nt*, drop the *t* in the plural, taking the plural ending *s*, according to the general rule : e. g. *l'enfant*, child, pl. *les enfants*. But, if the Substantive have but one syllable, the *t* is not dropped : e. g. *le chant*, song, pl. *les chants* ; *la dent*, tooth, pl. *les dents* ; *le gant*, glove, pl. *les gants*.* Many writers do not drop the *t* in the plural of any Substantive, writing *enfants*, *commandements*, etc.

§ 273. III. Substantives which end in *au*,† *eu*,‡ or *ou* take an *x* instead of an *s* to form their plural : e. g. *le manteau*, mantle, pl. *les manteaux* ; *le feu*, fire, pl. *les feux* ; *le bijou*, jewel, pl. *les bijoux* ; *le lieu*, place, pl. *les lieux* ; *le vœu*, vow, pl. *les vœux* ; To this rule, however, the following words are exceptions : *le bleu*, blue color, *le clou*, nail, *le cou*, neck, *le filou*, pickpocket, *le fou*, fool, *le licou*, halter, *le loup-garou*, were-wolf, *le matou*, male cat, *le sou*, cent, *le trou*, hole, *le verrou*, bolt, all of which follow the general rule and take *s*, not *x*.§

§ 274. IV. Substantives which end in *ail* or *al* commonly form their plural by changing these terminations to *aux* : e. g. *le cheval*, the horse, pl. *les chevaux* ; *le travail*, labor, pl. *travaux*. To this rule there are the following exceptions : (1) of words ending in *ail*, *un attirail*, train, *le camail*, capuchin (a garment), *le détail*, detail, *un éventail*, fan, *un épouvantail*,

* To this statement the word *gent*, people, forms an exception, its plural being *gens*. So also, with some writers the plural of *cent*, hundred, is *cens*.

† Nearly all these end in *eau*.

‡ This termination includes those ending in *au*.

§ The Dictionary of the French Academy and Levizac's Grammar state the plural of *le hibou*, owl, to be *hiboux* ; other authorities write *hibous*.

scare-crow, *le gouvernail*, helm, *le mail*, mall, *le portail*, portal, *le sérail*, seraglio; and (2) of words ending in *al*, *le bal*, ball, *le bocal*, jug, *le cal*, callus, *le carnaval*, carnival, *le pal*, pale (in heraldry), *le regal*, treat, as also all proper names ending in *al* which are used in a plural form. In all these excepted cases the plural is formed in the regular way by adding *s*; e. g. *les attirails*, the trains, *les détails*, the details, *les Annibals de notre temps*, the Hannibals of our time.

§ 275. V. Substantives whose singular ends in *s*, *x*, or *z* do not change their form at all in the plural: e. g. *la croix*, the cross, pl. *les croix*; *le lis*, the lily, pl. *les lis*; *le nez*, the nose, pl. *les nez*.*

§ 276. VI. The following words are quite irregular as respects their plural: *âieul*, grandfather, pl. *âieux*; *ail*, (masc.), garlic, pl. *aulx*; *le bétail*, cattle, pl. *bestiaux*; *le ciel*, heaven, pl. *les cieux*; *un œil*, eye, pl. *yeux*.†

§ 277. Compound Substantives are subject to the following rules respecting the formation of their plural:

§ 278. I. When they are compounded of two Substantives united by a preposition, only the first Substantive takes a plural termination: e. g. *un arc-en-ciel*, rainbow, pl. *arcs-en-ciel*; *le chef-d'œuvre*, masterpiece, pl. *chefs-d'œuvre*; *le cheval-de-Frise*, pointed instrument of war, pl. *chevaux-de-Frise*; *le ciel-de-lit*, bed-tester, pl. *ciels-de-lit*; *le jet-d'eau*, water-spout, pl. *jets-d'eau*; *un œil-de-bœuf*, oval window, pl. *œils-de-bœuf*.‡

§ 279. II. When they are compounded of an adjective

* The words *le zéro* and *le passe-partout* are the same, also, in the plural as in the singular; e. g. *trois zéros*, three cyphers, *des passe-partout*, master-keys.

† *Ciel* forms its plural regularly when it means *bedtester* or *sky in painting*; and so does *œil* in the word *œil-de-bœuf*, oval window.

‡ The word *pot-au-feu*, meat for the pot, forms an exception to this rule. It is not changed at all in the plural; e. g. *trois pot-au-feu*, three messes.

and a Substantive or a possessive pronoun and a Substantive, both of the component parts take a plural termination : e. g. *un arc-boutant*, buttress, pl. *arcs-boutans* ; *un gentil-homme*, gentleman, pl. *gentils-hommes* ; *une sage-femme*, midwife, pl. *sages-femmes* ; *Monsieur*, Sir, pl. *Messieurs* ; *Madame*, Madam, pl. *Mesdames* ; *Monseigneur*, my Lord, pl. *Messeigneurs*.*

§ 280. III. When they are compounded of a verb or preposition and a Substantive, the Substantive only is changed for the plural : e. g. *un abat-jour*, skylight, pl. *abat-jours* ; *une arrière-garde*, rear-guard, pl. *arrière-gardes* ; *un avant-coureur*, forerunner, pl. *avant-coureurs* ; *un contre-coup*, rebound, pl. *contre-coups* ; *un cure-dent*, toothpick, pl. *cure-dents* ; *un garde-feu*, fender, pl. *garde-feux* ; *un garde-fou*, rail, pl. *garde-fous* ; *un passe-port*, passports, pl. *passe-ports*.

§ 281. Some Substantives in French, as in English, are never used in the plural number ; e. g. *la chasteté*, chastity, or (masc.), gold, *le sang*, blood, *la pauvreté*, poverty, *le passe-passe*, juggling.

§ 282. Some Substantives in French, as in English, are never used in the singular number ; e. g. *les annales*, annals, *les entrailles*, entrails, *les funérailles*, obsequies, *les hardes*, clothes, *les mouchettes*, snuffers, *les noces*, nuptials, *les pincettes*, tongs.

DETERMINATION OF FORM.

GENDER AND NUMBER OF SUBSTANTIVES.

§ 283. The rules respecting the use of the genders and numbers of Substantives are the same in French as in English. Since there are no *cases*, properly so called, in French, this is all which it is important to say here as to the choice of forms in employing Substantives.

* It will be seen that the last three words above are compounded of the possessive pronoun *mon*, *ma*, pl. *mes*, and a Substantive.

POSITION.

§ 284. As in English, the Substantive subject *usually* precedes the verb and the Substantive object follows it; e. g. *le roi aime sa sœur*, the king loves his sister, *Pierre a reçu le chien*, Peter has received the dog.* The exceptions to this rule are more frequent in French than in English. They will now be noticed.

§ 285. (a) The French sometimes put the subject after the verb when *comme* or *que* occurs, or *où* with a reflexive verb, in such expressions as the following: *les pommes sont gâtées, comme me dit Richard*, the apples are spoiled, Richard tells me, *le chien que m'a vendu le garde-chasse*, the dog which the game-keeper has sold me, *l'endroit où se cachent les loups*, the place where the wolves hide.

§ 286. (b) When the words of another are repeated, the subject comes after the verb *dire*, or other verb, used to denote the citation; e. g. *je le veux bien, dit Louis*, I am very willing, said Louis, *ah! dit la femme, je suis misérable*, ah! said the woman, I am miserable.

§ 287. (c) When a question is asked with but one subject,† the subject is put after the verb which denotes the point of the question; e. g. *que dit votre ami?* what does your friend say? *a quoi s'occupe votre frère?* about what is your brother occupied?

* The rules respecting the position of *pronoun* subjects and objects may be seen under their proper head in this Grammar. They are not the same as those here given concerning Substantives.

† The most usual mode of asking a question in French is by making use of the expression *est-ce que*, or *qu'est-ce que c'est*; e. g. *est-ce que vous avez diné?* have you dined? *qu'est-ce que c'est que Pierre dit?* what is it that Peter says? Here the verb which asks the question is *est*. Another very common mode is to name the Substantive subject first and then put a pronoun subject after the verb; e. g. *le roi est-il malade?* is the king sick? *cette nouvelle est-elle sûre?* is this news certain? The use of only *one* substantive subject in an interrogation, as in the rule above, is not very common.

§ 288. (d) With the subjunctive mode expressing a wish, the subject as in English, occurs after the verb ; e. g. *puissent tous les peuples se convaincre de cette vérité*, may all nations be convinced of this truth.

§ 289. (e) After the words *tel*, *ainsi*, etc., the subject follows the verb, as in like cases in English ; e. g. *tel était l'obscurité, que* etc. such was the obscurity, that etc., *ainsi finit sa vie*, thus ended his life.

§ 290. In an interrogative sentence, the object, if the pronoun *quel* agree with it, must precede the verb ; e. g. *quel objet voyez-vous ?* what object do you see ? *à quelle science vous appliquez-vous ?* to what science are you applying yourself ?

§ 291. Where a verb governs one direct object and is connected with another object by a preposition, the position of the direct with reference to the indirect object is regulated by euphony. Commonly, the shortest of the two, taking into account the necessary accompaniments, is placed first ; and, if they be of equal length, the direct object takes precedence. E. g. *les hypocrites s'étudient à parer le vice des dehors de la vertu*, hypocrites study to deck vice with the exterior of virtue ; *les hypocrites s'étudient à parer des dehors de la vertu les vices les plus honteux et les plus décriés*, hypocrites study to deck with the exterior of virtue the most shameful and most odious vices ; *l'ambition sacrifie le présent à l'avenir, mais la volupté sacrifie l'avenir au présent*, ambition sacrifices the present to the future, but pleasure sacrifices the future to the present.

§ 292. Whatever it is important to know further concerning the relative position of the Substantive, may be learned from what is said in this Grammar of the position of other parts of speech, and from the principle, that in all cases not otherwise regulated in this Grammar the rules on this subject are the same in French as in English.

Additional Peculiarities.

§ 293. The French have no such compounds as *dining-room*, *gold-watch*, *milk-pot*, *water-rat*, etc. in English. They employ the two component parts of such English words separately, connecting them by a preposition.

§ 294. In case the first part of such English compounds as have been mentioned denotes an action performed by the use of what is denoted by the last part, the preposition *à* is employed to connect them; e. g. *salle à manger*, dining-room, *papier à écrire*, writing-paper.

§ 295. The preposition *à* is employed, too, in such cases, whenever the first part of the English compound expresses *destination* or *purpose*; e. g. *moulin à café*, coffee-mill, *pot-au-lait*, milk-pot, *nid à rat*, rat's nest, *poudre à canon*, gun-powder.*

§ 296. The preposition *à* is employed, too, in such cases, whenever the first part of the English compound expresses *means* of operation; e. g. *moulin à bras*, hand-mill, *moulin à eau*, water-mill, *fusil à vent*, air-gun, *pompe à air*, air pump.

§ 297. The preposition *à* is employed, too, in such cases, whenever the first part of the English compound expresses a *distinctive characteristic* of a person or thing, especially *food*; e. g. *la femme aux huîtres*, the oyster-woman, *le fromage à la crème*, cream-cheese, *la soupe au lait*, milk-soup.

§ 298. In all other cases of such English compounds, except those which have been specified, the preposition *de* is used to connect the two words; e. g. *montre d'or*, gold-watch, *rat-d'eau*, water-rat.

* It is true, the French say, *le magasin de bois*, *le magasin de poudre*, etc.; but it will be found, on examination, that properly the substantive in these cases only conveys the idea of *great quantity*. Thus the expressions just cited mean only *the store of wood*, *the store of powder*. When *magasin* is employed to denote more particularly the *place* where anything is destined to be stored, it requires the preposition *à*; e. g. *le magasin à poudre*, the powder-magazine.

§ 299. There are cases in which a Substantive has a quite different meaning in the singular number from that which belongs to it in the plural : e. g. *le ciseau*, chisel, *les ciseaux*, scissors ; *le fer*, iron, *les fers*, chains ; *le gage*, pledge, *les gages*, wages ; *la lunette*, glass, *les lunettes*, spectacles ; *le papier*, paper, *les papiers*, writings ; *la viande*, meat, *les viandes*, victuals.

CHAP. III.

ADJECTIVE.

VARIATION.

General Statement.

§ 300. The only variations of form to which Adjectives are subject in French are those of Gender and Number. (For the manner in which degrees of comparison are expressed in French, see *Additional Peculiarities* of Adjectives, § 351.)

GENDER.

§ 301. In English, Adjectives are not subject to any distinction of gender. In French every Adjective form is either masculine, feminine, or common.

§ 302. The rules respecting the gender of Adjectives are nearly the same as those which have been given respecting the Gender of substantives. The chief difference lies in the extent to which the rules apply in each of the two cases. There are comparatively but few substantives (only those denoting *sex*,) which undergo any variation of form on the score of gender ; but *all* Adjectives are subject to the following rules.

§ 303. I. Adjectives ending with unaccented *e*, commonly called *e* mute, are of the common Gender, i. e. undergo no change to denote distinction of Gender; e. g. *aimable* (masc. and fem.), *amiable*, *agréable* (masc. and fem.), *agreeable*.*

§ 304. II. In general other Adjectives merely add an unaccented *e* to the masculine to form the feminine: e. g. *savant*, learned, fem. *savante*; *grand*, great, fem. *grande*.†

§ 305. III. Of the eight Adjectives ending in *c*, three change *c* into *che* to form the feminine: *blanc*, white, fem. *blanche*; *franc*, free, fem. *franche*; *sec*, dry, fem. *sèche*. The rest change *c* into *que* for the feminine: *ammoniac*, ammoniac, fem. *ammoniaque*; *caduc*, perishable, fem. *caduque*; *Grec*, Greek, fem. *Grecque*; *public*, public, fem. *publique*; *Turc*, Turk, fem. *Turque*.

§ 306. IV. The two following Adjectives, sometimes written with final *d*, deviate in that case from Rule II. in the formation of their feminine: *crud* (commonly *cru*), raw, fem. *crue*; *verd* (commonly *vert*), green, fem. *verte*. Other Adjectives ending with *d* follow Rule II.

§ 307. V. All adjectives ending with *f* change *f* into *ve* to form the feminine: e. g. *brief*, brief, fem. *briève*; *positif*, positive, fem. *positive*; *vif*, lively, fem. *vive*.

§ 308. VI. One adjective ending in *g* takes the letters *ue* in addition to form the feminine: *long*, fem. *longue*.

§ 309. VII. The two following adjectives ending in *i*, take *te* in addition to form their feminine: *coi*, snug, fem. *coite*; *favori*, favorite, fem. *favorite*. Other adjectives ending with *i* follow Rule II.

§ 310. VIII. All adjectives ending with *l* preceded imme-

* To this statement there is one exception: *traître*, traitorous, fem. *traîtresse*.

† This rule is invariable in its application to adjectives ending with any other vowel than *e* unaccented, with exception of the few words mentioned in §§ 309 and 315. The exceptions as to words ending with consonants are stated in the succeeding sections above.

diately by *e*, *o*, *u*, or *ei*, double the *l* and add unaccented *e* to form the feminine : e. g. *cruel*, cruel, fem. *cruelle* ; *fol*, foolish, fem. *folle* ; *nul*, no, fem. *nulle* ; *pareil*, equal, fem. *pareille*. All other adjectives ending with *l* follow Rule II, except *gentil*, genteel, which forms its feminine like those just mentioned, *gentille*.

§ 311. IX. All adjectives ending with *n* preceded immediately by *ie* or *o*, double the *n* and add unaccented *e* to form the feminine : e. g. *chrétien*, christian, fem. *chrétienne* ; *bon*, good, fem. *bonne*. All other adjectives ending with *n* follow Rule II, except *benin*, benign, and *malin*, malign, whose feminines are *benigne* and *maligne*.

§ 312. X. Adjectives ending with *r* preceded immediately by *eu* generally change *eur* into *euse* : e. g. *flatteur*, flattering, fem. *flatteuse* ; *menteur*, lying, fem. *menteuse*.* Many substantives ending in *teur* are sometimes used as adjectives. These (as stated in §§ 262, 268), not unfrequently form their feminine by changing *teur* into *trice* or *teresse*, instead of *teuse*.

§ 313. XI. Of Adjectives ending with *s* the following are irregular in the formation of their feminine : (1) Some which double the final consonant, besides adding *e*, viz. *bas*, low, fem. *basse* ; *cas*, broken, fem. *casse* ; *épais*, thick, fem. *épaisse* ; *expres*, express, fem. *expresse* ; *gras*, fat, fem. *grasse* ; *gros*, great, fem. *grosse* ; *las*, tired, fem. *lasse* ; *métis*, mongrel, fem. *métisse* ; *profès*, professed, fem. *professe* ; and (2) some which are otherwise irregular, viz. *absous*, absolved, fem. *absoute* ; *dissous*, dissolved, fem. *dissoute* ; *frais*, fresh, fem. *fraîche* ; *tiers*, third, fem. *tierce* ; *tors*, twisted, fem. *torte* (or, regularly, *torse*).

§ 314. XII. Adjectives which end with *t* preceded by *e*

* The following adjectives ending with *eur* form their feminines regularly by merely adding *e* : *antérieur*, anterior, *citérieur*, hither, *extérieur*, exterior, *inférieur*, inferior, *intérieur*, interior, *majeur*, major, *meilleur*, better, *mineur*, minor, *postérieur*, posterior, *supérieur*, superior, *ultérieur*, ulterior.

or *o*, double the *t* and add unaccented *e*: e. g. *doucet*, affected, fem. *doucette*; *net*, neat, fem. *nette*; *violet*, violet, fem. *violette*; *sot*, foolish, fem. *sotte*; *vieillot*, stale, fem. *vieillette*.*

§ 315. XIII. Of Adjectives ending with *u* the following are irregular: *beau* (or *bel*), beautiful, fem. *belle*; *fou* (or *fol*), foolish, fem. *folle*; *jumeau*, twin, fem. *jumelle*; *mou* (or *mol*), soft, fem. *molle*; *nouveau*, (or *nouvel*), new, fem. *nouvelle*.†

§ 316. XIV. Adjectives which end with *x* change *x* into *se* for the feminine: e. g. *creux*, hollow, fem. *creuse*; *jaloux*, jealous, fem. *jalouse*.

§ 317. XV. Some Adjectives have no feminine: e. g. *dispos*, active; *fat*, impertinent; *paillet*, pale. Some have no masculine: e. g. *blette*, half-rotten.

NUMBER.

§ 318. In English Adjectives are not subject to the distinction of Number. In French, on the contrary, every Adjective form is either Singular or Plural.

§ 319. The rules respecting the Number of Adjectives are in general the same as those before given as to substantives (§ 271 seq.) The extent of their application is also in both cases nearly the same.

* To this rule there is a considerable number of exceptions: *concret*, concrete, fem. *concrète*; *complet*, complete, fem. *complète*; *dérot*, devout, fem. *dévôte*; *discret*, discreet, fem. *discrète*; *incomplet*, incomplete, fem. *incomplète*; *indiscret*, indiscreet, fem. *indiscrète*; *inquiet*, unquiet, fem. *inquiète*; *prêt*, ready, fem. *prête*; *replet*, replete, fem. *replète*; *secret*, secret, fem. *secrète*; *suret*, sourish, fem. *surète*.

† It will be noticed that in all these instances, save one, two forms of the masculine are given, and that the feminine form is derived from the masculine in brackets according to Rule VIII. § 310. For further explanation of the use of the two masculines respectively see § 334.

§ 320. I. The general rule for the formation of the plural is, to add the letter *s* to the singular; e. g. masc. sing. *bon*, good, masc. pl. *bons*; fem. sing. *bonne*, good, fem. pl. *bonnes*; sing. *grand*, *grande*, great, pl. *grands*, *grandes*.*

§ 321. II. Adjectives of *more than one syllable* which terminate with *nt* in the singular† drop the *t* in the plural, according to the usage of many writers; e. g. *charmant*, charming, pl. *charmans*; *plaisant*, pleasant, pl. *plaisans*.‡

§ 322. III. Adjectives which end with *au* in the singular add *x* to form the plural: e. g. *beau*, beautiful, pl. *beaux*; *nouveau*, new, pl. *nouveaux*.§

§ 323. IV. Adjectives which end with *al* in the singular change *al* into *aux* to form the plural; e. g. *égal*, equal, pl. *égaux*; *royal*, royal, pl. *royaux*.||

§ 324. V. Adjectives which end with *s* or *x* in the singular remain unchanged in the plural; e. g. *gras*, fat, pl. *gras*; *heureux*, happy, pl. *heureux*.

§ 325. There is one Adjective whose plural deviates from all the rules which have been given. This is *tout*, all, pl. *tous*.

§ 326. Some Adjectives have no plural; e. g. *feu*, deceased. Nearly all the Adjectives ending with *al* have no masculine plural. (Comp. note || below.) *Vingt*, twenty,

* The masculine and feminine of Adjectives have each a separate plural in all cases where the masculine and feminine differ in the singular (comp. § 303. Rule I. concerning the gender of Adjectives). The Rule I. given above has *no exception* as respects the formation of the plural of *feminine* Adjectives. All the subsequent rules relate to the formation of *masculine* plurals.

† This excludes *feminine* Adjectives.

‡ Some persons, however, as was said respecting substantives (§ 272), do not omit the *t*, writing *charmants*, *plaisants*, etc. Monosyllables never drop the *t*; e. g. *lent*, slow, pl. *lents*.

§ *Bleu*, blue, makes *bleus* in the plural; and *mou*, soft, *mous*.

|| All those *Adjectives* ending in *al* which *have* a plural form it

when uncompounded, does not take an *s* with a substantive ; but in *quatre-vingts*, eighty, it does : e. g. *vingt volumes*, twenty volumes ; *quatre-vingts hommes*, eighty men.

DETERMINATION OF FORM.

§ 327. I. An Adjective, in French, agrees in gender and number with the substantive to which it relates ; e. g. *un homme heureux*, a happy man, *une femme heureuse*, a happy woman, *des hommes heureux*, happy men, *des femmes heureuses*, happy women.*

§ 328. II. When an Adjective relates to two or more substantives, from which it is separated by an intervening verb, and the substantives are of the *same* gender, the Adjective is put in the plural, and agrees with the substantives in gender ; e. g. *ma mère et ma tante ne sont pas saines*, my mother and aunt are not well, *mon père et mon oncle sont actifs*, my father and my uncle are active.

§ 329. III. When an Adjective relates to two or more substantives, from which it is separated by an intervening verb, and the substantives are of *different* genders, the Adjective is put in the plural masculine ; e. g. *le vent et la pluie étaient violents*, the wind and the rain were violent.

§ 330. IV. When an Adjective relates to two or more substantives of *different* genders and *no* verb intervenes between the Adjective and substantives, the Adjective agrees in gender and number with the *last* substantive ; e. g. *il joue avec un goût et une noblesse charmante*, he plays with charming taste and nobleness (but, *il joue avec une noblesse et un*

as stated in § 323 ; but most Adjectives with this termination have no plural masculine. The plural feminine is regularly formed, as stated in note * on the preceding page.

* An Adjective is put in the singular with *vous*, a plural pronoun used instead of a singular one (see § 473) ; e. g. *vous êtes prudent et sage*, you are prudent and wise.

goût charmant), *elle avait les yeux et la bouche ouverte*, she had her eyes and mouth open.

§ 331. V. When a singular *substantive of multitude* is followed by the preposition *de* with a plural substantive, an Adjective relating thereto, which is separated from the substantive of multitude by a verb, must, as well as the verb itself, be in the plural number; e. g. *la plupart des dames furent malheureuses*, most of the ladies were unhappy.

§ 332. VI. An Adjective used as a substantive (which Adjective is in some languages, e. g. the Latin, of the *neuter* gender) is in French always of the *masculine* gender; e. g. *le beau n'est pas toujours bon*, the beautiful is not always good, *le sublime élève l'esprit*, the sublime elevates the mind, *j'aime mieux le vert que le bleu*, I prefer the green to the blue.

§ 333. VII. *Mi*, *hemi*, and *semi*, meaning *half*, never change. They are commonly joined to a substantive by a hyphen; e. g. *mi-chemin*, half-way, *mi-Mai*, middle of May, *semi-Pélagien*, semi-Pelagian. *Demi* is never changed before a substantive, but it is changed when alone; e. g. *une demi-heure*, a half hour, *une heure et demie*, an hour and a half, *une livre et demie*, a pound and a half.

§ 334. VIII. The forms, *bel*, beautiful, *fol*, foolish, *mol*, soft, *nouvel*, new, are used before any masculine substantive in the singular *beginning with a vowel or h mute*, but otherwise the forms, *beau*, *fou*, *mou*, *nouveau*, are employed; e. g. *bel air*, fine air, *beau jardin*, beautiful garden, *fol amour*, foolish love, *chien fou*, mad dog.

§ 335. IX. The Adjective *nu*, naked, never undergoes any change when it *precedes* a substantive. It is then always united with the substantive by a hyphen; e. g. *nu-tête*, bare-headed, *nu-pieds*, bare-footed. It is varied regularly when it *follows* the substantive to which it relates; e. g. *la tête nue*, the head bare, *les pieds nus*, the feet bare.

§ 336. X. The Adjective *feu*, late, deceased, is not changed at all when it occurs *before* an article or adjective-pro-

noun ; e. g. *feu la reine*, the late queen, *feu ma mère*, my late mother. But, if it be placed *after* the article or pronoun, it must be varied as respects gender ; e. g. *la feuë reine*, *ma feuë mère*.

POSITION.

§ 337. In French the Adjective commonly *follows* the substantive, instead of preceding it as in English. Perhaps no certain rules covering the whole ground of this subject can be given. The following, it is thought, will at least be of some use :

§ 338. I. Adjectives denoting *colors* FOLLOW the substantive ; e. g. *une maison rouge*, a red house, *une robe blanche*, a white dress.

§ 339. II. So do Adjectives denoting *shape* ; e. g. *une table ronde*, a round table, *une fenêtre ovale*, an oval window.

§ 340. III. So do Adjectives denoting *nationality* ; e. g. *la langue Française*, the French language, *du drap Anglais*, English cloth.

§ 341. IV. So do Adjectives denoting *qualities of the weather or the elements* ; e. g. *temps froid*, cold weather, *air pur*, pure air, *eau tiède*, lukewarm water.

§ 342. V. So do past participles or substantives used as Adjectives ; e. g. *un homme respecté*, a respected man, *une femme hypocrite*, a hypocritical woman, *une conduite bête*, foolish conduct.

§ 343. VI. So do Adjectives ending in *able* ; e. g. *un état misérable*, a miserable condition, *une personne capable*, a capable person.

§ 344. VII. So do Adjectives ending in *esque*, *f*, *ic*, *il*, *ique*, and *ule* ; e. g. *une pièce burlesque*, a burlesque piece, *un homme oisif*, a lazy man, *trésor public*, public treasure, *un discours pueril*, a puerile discourse, *un temple magnifique*, a magnificent temple, *une femme credule*, a credulous woman.

§ 345. VIII. Numeral Adjectives (see Appendix J.) are

placed BEFORE the substantive to which they relate ; e. g. *une porte*, a door, *le premier rang*, the first rank.*

§ 346. IX. So are all *Adjective pronouns* ; e. g. *ma femme*, my wife, *chaque homme*, every man, *ces pommes*, these apples.†

§ 347. X. So are the following Adjectives : *beau*, beautiful, *bon*, good, *brave*, brave, *cher*, dear, *chétif*, mean, *feu*, deceased, *grand*, great, *gros*, large, *jeune*, young, *joli*, pretty, *mauvais*, bad, *méchant*, wicked, *meilleur*, better or best, *moins*, less or least, *petit*, little, *saint*, holy, *sot*, foolish, *tout*, all, *vieux*, old, *vilain*, ugly, *vrai*, true ; all of which are in quite common use.‡

§ 348. XI. When *two* or *more* Adjectives, connected by a conjunction, are used with the same substantive, they *may* sometimes be put *before* the substantive (but this rarely, and only when there are but *two* Adjectives), but it can never be wrong to put them *after* ; e. g. *l'homme juste, sage, et pieux* ; the just, wise, and pious man.

§ 349. XII. Adjectives denoting general *dimension* are always placed *before* the other words specifying the dimensions, not *after* as in English ; e. g. *une rivière large de*

* To this rule there is the following exception : When an ordinal number, or a cardinal number used as an ordinal, does not take the definite article, it is placed *after* the substantive ; e. g. *livre premier*, first book, *chapitre second*, second chapter, *page trente*, thirtieth page. The royal style falls under this principle ; e. g. *François premier*, Francis First, *Henri quatre*, Henry Fourth.

† But *quelconque*, whatever, is *always* placed *after* the substantive ; e. g. *d'une manière quelconque*, in whatever manner, *une chose quelconque*, anything whatever.

‡ Yet, when these Adjectives occur in such intimate connection with other words that they cannot well be separated from them, the Adjective often *follows* the substantive ; e. g. *une femme belle comme un ange*, a woman beautiful as an angel, *un homme brave comme son épée*, a man brave as his own sword. So in case these Adjectives occur in connection with other Adjectives, as stated in § 345.

deux milles, a river two miles wide, *un mur haut de vingt pieds*, a wall twenty feet high.*

§ 350. XIII. Some Adjectives, when used in one sense are placed *before* the substantive, when used in another *after*; e. g. *sage femme*, mid-wife, *femme sage*, sensible woman; *honnête homme*, honest man, *homme honnête*, polite man.†

Additional Peculiarities.

§ 351. *Degrees of Comparison* in French are not, as in many languages, denoted by a change of form in the Adjectives themselves, but by the use of additional words. The adverb *plus*, more, is used alone to designate our comparative degree, and the same Adverb with the *definite article* (*le, la, or les*, according to the gender and number of the substantive,) for the superlative degree: e. g. *grand*, great; compar. masc. sing. *plus grand*, fem. sing. *plus grande*, masc. pl. *plus grands*, fem. pl. *plus grandes*; superl. masc. sing. *le plus grand*, fem. sing. *la plus grande*, masc. pl. *les plus grands*, fem. pl. *les plus grandes*.

§ 352. The following Adjectives have peculiar comparatives and superlatives: *bon*, good, compar. *meilleur*, superl. *le meilleur*; *mauvais* or *méchant*, bad, compar. *pire*, superl. *le pire*; and *petit*, little, compar. *moindre*, superl. *le moindre*.‡

§ 353. If in a comparison more than one Adjective be used with the substantive, the sign of the comparative or superlative degree must be repeated before each Adjective, not, as is allowable in English, be used only before the first Ad-

* Another form of expression is possible and common in cases of this nature; e. g. *une rivière qui a deux milles de largeur*, a river which has two miles of breadth, *un mur qui a vingt pieds de hauteur*, a wall which has twenty feet of height.

† See Appendix K for a considerable enumeration of such Adjectives.

‡ All of these Adjectives but *bon*, good, may form their degrees of comparison regularly by the use of *plus* and *le plus*.

jective ; e. g. *à l'homme le plus sage, le plus brave, et le plus honnête*, to the most wise, brave, and polite man.

§ 354. When an adjective employed superlatively is preceded by such expressions as *ce qu'il y a, ce que je sais, ce que j'ai*, etc. connected with the superlative by the preposition *de*, the definite article, which (according to § 351) is the usual sign of the superlative, is omitted ; e. g. *ce qu'il y a de plus beau*, that which is most beautiful, *ce que je sais de plus certain c'est*, the most certain knowledge that I have is this.

§ 355. The *numerals* in French may be properly called *Numeral Adjectives*. They are indeed sometimes used substantively, but so are many other Adjectives. For a particular account of them see Appendix J.

CHAP. IV.

PRONOUN.

VARIATION.

General Statement.

§ 356. We shall consider French Pronouns under the six following heads : *Personal, Possessive, Relative, Absolute, Demonstrative*, and *Miscellaneous*. All the *Possessive* Pronouns belong to the class of *Adjective* Pronouns (comp. § 361.) All the *Personal* Pronouns are *Substantive*. So are the *Relative* and *Absolute* Pronouns, except sometimes the Pronoun *quel*. So too are the *Demonstrative* Pronouns, except sometimes the simple Pronoun *ce*, with its variations. As to the *Miscellaneous* Pronouns, see §§ 373–6, for a statement of their character in this respect.

PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

§ 357. In French there is a peculiar Pronoun for each Person, and the Pronouns of the *first* and *second* Persons are

of the same form for each Gender. The French Pronoun of the *third* Person differs from the English in these two respects : (1) it has different Genders in the Plural as well as in the Singular, and (2) it has but two Genders, the masculine and the feminine, in either.

§ 358. The Pronoun of the *first* Person is *je*, *moi*, or *me* for the Singular, and *nous* for the Plural.

§ 359. The Pronoun of the *second* Person is *tu*, *toi*, or *te* for the Singular, and *vous* for the Plural.

§ 360. The Pronoun of the *third* Person is *il*, *lui*, *le*, *se*, or *soi* for the Singular Masculine ; *elle*, *la*, *se*, or *soi* for the Singular Feminine ; *ils*, *eux*, *leur*, *les*, or *se* for the Plural Masculine ; and *elles* or *se* for the Plural Feminine.*

POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

§ 361. The Possessive Pronouns in French may be divided into two classes : those which always precede some substantive, and those which are always used absolutely, some substantive being understood.

§ 362. The following are the Possessive Pronouns which always precede a substantive, together with the variations to which they are subject :

(a.) 1st Pers. *Mon*, my, masc. sing. ; *ma*, my, fem. sing. ; *mes*, my, common pl. ; *notre*, our, common sing. ; *nos*, our, common pl.

(b.) 2d Pers. *Ton*, thy, masc. sing. ; *ta*, thy, fem. sing. ; *tes*, thy, common pl. ; *votre*, your, common sing. ; *vos*, your, common pl.

(c.) 3d Pers. *Son*, his, her, or its, masc. sing. ; *sa*, his, her, or its, fem. sing. ; *ses*, his, her, or its, common pl. ; *leur*, their, common sing. ; *leurs*, their, common pl.

* It will be observed that *soi* is of Common Gender, being used for both the Masculine and Feminine Singular, and that *se* is not only of Common Gender, but also of Common Number, being used for both the Masculine and Feminine in both the Singular and the Plural.

§ 363. The following are the Possessive Pronouns which are always used absolutely, the substantive to which they relate being understood :

Masc. sing.	Fem. sing.
<i>Le mien</i> , mine,	<i>la mienne</i> , mine.
<i>Le tien</i> , thine,	<i>la tienne</i> , thine.
<i>Le sien</i> , his, her, or its,	<i>la sienne</i> , his, her, or its.
<i>Le nôtre</i> , ours,	<i>la nôtre</i> , ours.
<i>Le vôtre</i> , yours,	<i>la vôtre</i> , yours.
<i>Le leur</i> , theirs,	<i>la leur</i> , theirs.
Masc. plur.	Fem. plur.
<i>Les miens</i> , mine,	<i>les miennes</i> , mine.
<i>Les tiens</i> , thine,	<i>les tiennes</i> , thine.
<i>Les siens</i> , his, her, or its,	<i>les siennes</i> , his, her, or its.
<i>Les nôtres</i> , ours,	<i>les nôtres</i> , ours.
<i>Les vôtres</i> , yours,	<i>les vôtres</i> , yours.
<i>Les leurs</i> , theirs,	<i>les leurs</i> , theirs.*

RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

§ 364. Certain Pronouns in all languages are called *Relative* Pronouns, because they relate grammatically to some word or phrase called the Antecedent. In one sense all Pronouns, and indeed all words, must be relative ; but these Pronouns are considered as being so in a special manner.

§ 365. There are the following Relative Pronouns in French : *qui*, who, which, or whom, *que*, whom or which, *dont*, of whom, or of which, *quoi*, what, *quel*, who or what, *lequel*, which or who.

§ 366. All the Relative Pronouns but *quel* and *lequel* undergo no change of form, being of common Gender and of either Number. The forms *quel* and *lequel* are masc. sing. Their fem. sing. is, *quelle*, *laquelle* ; their masc. pl. *quels* and *lesquels* ; their fem. pl. *quelles* and *lesquelles*. The Article of

* These Pronouns are invariably accompanied by the *Definite Article*.

the Pronoun *lequel* is united with *de* or *à* preceding, so as to make but one word of the two, whenever the preposition and the article would be united if they were alone (see § 210); e. g. *duquel, auquel, desquels, desquelles, auxquels, auxquelles*.

ABSOLUTE PRONOUNS.

§ 367. This class of Pronouns comprises all the Relative Pronouns, when they are used by way of *interrogation* or *exclamation* or in any other case without a proper antecedent. *Dont* is the only one of the Relative Pronouns which is never thus used.

§ 368. Some grammarians will not make a distinction between the absolute and relative use of these Pronouns; but clearly there is an essential difference of construction in the two cases. As examples of Absolute Pronouns take the following phrases: *Qui est là?* who is there? *Qui demandez-vous?* whom are you asking for? *Que faites-vous là?* what are you doing there? *À quoi pensez-vous?* of what are you thinking? *Quel est l'homme assez hardi*, etc.? who is the man bold enough, etc.? *Quelle instabilité!* what fickleness! *Quelles sont vos raisons?* what are your reasons?

DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

§ 369. The principal Demonstrative Pronoun is *ce*, this. From this all the rest are formed. The masc. sing. is *ce* or *cet*; the fem. sing. *cette*; the masc. and fem. pl. *ces*.

§ 370. The chief Pronoun derived from *ce* is *celui*, this. *Celui* is the masc. sing.; the fem. sing. is *celle*; the masc. pl. is *ceux*; the fem. pl. is *celles*.

§ 371. The other Demonstrative Pronouns are formed from those already mentioned by adding to them the particles *ci*, here, or *là*, there. E. g. *ceci*, this, *cela*, that; *celui-ci* or *celle-ci*, this; *ceux-ci* or *celles-ci*, these; *celui-là* or *celle-là*, that, *ceux-là* or *celles-là*, those.*

* In all these derivative Pronouns, except *ceci* and *cela*, it will be

MISCELLANEOUS PRONOUNS.

§ 372. There are a great many other words usually denominated Pronouns, which cannot well be classified, and therefore I speak of them as *Miscellaneous*. They are commonly called *Indefinite* or *Indeterminate*; but these epithets are properly applicable to very few of them. The Pronouns referred to are: *aucun*, any, any one, *autre*, other, *autrui*, others, *certain*, certain, *chacun*, each one, *chaque*, every, *en*, of it, of them, etc., *même*, same, *nul*, no, no one, *on*, one, they, etc., *personne*, nobody, *plusieurs*, several, *quelconque*, whatever, etc., *quelque*, some, *quelqu'un*, some one, *quiconque*, whoever, *rien*, nothing, *tel*, such, *tout*, every, every one, etc., *y*, to it, to them, etc.

§ 373. Some of these Pronouns are always *Adjective Pronouns*; others always *Substantive Pronouns*; others still sometimes *Adjective* and sometimes *Substantive*.

§ 374. The Pronouns which are always *Adjective* are: *certain*, *chaque*, *quelconque*, and *quelque*.

§ 375. The Pronouns which are always *Substantive* are: *autrui*, *chacun*, *en*, *on*, *personne*, *quelqu'un*, *quiconque*, *rien*, *y*.

§ 376. The Pronouns which are sometimes *Adjective*, sometimes *Substantive*, are: *aucun*, *autre*, *même*, *nul*, *plusieurs*, *tel*, *tout*.

§ 377. *Aucun*, any, any one, has a fem. sing. *aucune*. It also has a pl. masc. *aucuns*, and a pl. fem. *aucunes*.

§ 378. *Autre*, other, is of common gender in the sing. Its pl. form for both genders is *autres*.

§ 379. *Autres*, others, is always pl. and exhibits no variation of form.

§ 380. *Certain*, certain, has a fem. sing. *certaine*; masc. pl. *certains*; fem. pl. *certaines*.

seen, the *ce* or *là* is joined to the other component part of the Pronoun by a hyphen. In all but *cela*, too, the *la* appended has a grave accent over the *a*, as when it stands alone adverbially.

§ 381. *Chacun*, each one, has a fem. sing. *chacune* : it has no plural.

§ 382. *Chaque*, every, is of common gender in the singular. It has no plural.

§ 383. *En*, of it, etc., is invariable.

§ 384. *Même*, same, is of common gender in the sing. ; its pl., likewise of common gender, is *mêmes*.

§ 385. *Nul*, no, no one, has a fem. sing. *nulle* ; masc. pl. *nuls* ; fem. pl. *nulles*.

§ 386. *On*, one, they, etc., is invariable. It is of common gender. In relation to other words it is always considered as of the nom. case singular and the third person.

§ 387. *Personne*, nobody, as a Pronoun, has no plural, and is always masculine in the singular.

§ 388. *Plusieurs*, several, is invariable. It is, of course, always plural.

§ 389. *Quelconque*, whatever, is of common gender in the sing. ; its pl., likewise of common gender, is *quelconques*.

§ 390. *Quelque*, some, is of common gender in the sing. ; its pl., likewise of common gender, is *quelques*.

§ 391. *Quelqu'un*, some one, has a fem. sing. *quelqu'une* ; masc. pl. *quelques-uns* ; fem. pl. *quelques-unes*.

§ 392. *Quiconque*, whoever, has no pl. It is usually, though not always, masc. in the sing.

§ 393. *Rien*, nothing, is invariable as a Pronoun. It is always masc.

§ 394. *Tel*, such, has a fem. sing. *telle* ; masc. pl. *tels* ; fem. pl. *telles*.

§ 395. *Tout*, every, every one, etc., has a fem. sing. *toute* ; masc. pl. *tous* ; fem. pl. *toutes*.

§ 396. *Y*, to it, etc., is invariable.

DETERMINATION OF FORM.

PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

§ 397. The *regular nominatives** singular of these Pronouns are : *je* for the *first* person, *tu* for the *second*, *il* for the *third* person *masc.*, and *elle* for the *third* person *fem.*; e. g. *je crains*, I fear, *tu frappes*, thou strikest, *il aime*, he loves, *elle court*, she runs.

§ 398. The *nominatives singular after a verb*, when another *nominative precedes* the verb (i. e. whenever a nominative comes after a verb, except in interrogative sentences) are : *moi* for the *first* person, *toi* for the *second*, *lui* for the *third* person *masc.*, and *elle* (as in other cases) for the *third* person *fem.*; e. g. *c'est moi*, it is I, *ce fut toi*, it was thee, *c'est lui*, it is he, *ce fut elle*, it was she.

§ 399. The *nominatives singular after a conjunction, with a verb understood to follow*, are the same as those specified in the last sect.; e. g. *il le sait mieux que moi*, he knows him better than I, *ce ne peut être que toi*, this can be only you, *j'écris comme lui*, or *comme elle*, I write as he does, or as she does.

§ 400. The *nominatives singular* are the same as those specified in § 398, whenever there is a *reduplication of the nominative*, there being an *apposition* of what is called a *nominative independent* with the regular nominative; and so, too, in *all* cases of the *nominative independent*, as in exclamations, etc.; e. g. *moi, qui vous aime*, I, who love you, *toi, parler ainsi!* thou, to talk thus! *lui, il parle autrement*, as for him, he talks otherwise.†

* By *nominative* is here meant what is often called *subject*.

† It may be observed that all these three cases stated in §§ 398, 399, 400, of variation from the regular *nom.* are reducible to this principle : *whenever the nom. is not nom. to any verb expressed*, the form of the *nom.* is not the regular one, stated in § 397, but as stated in § 398. There is another case, sometimes occurring, of use of the irregular nominatives in such phrases (called *distributive*) as the follow-

§ 401. The *regular singular objective** forms of the Personal Pronouns are : *me* for the *first* person, *te* for the *second*, *le* for the *third* person *masc.*, and *la* for the *third* person *fem.* ; e. g. *il me dit*, he tells me, *je te vois*, I see thee, *je le frappe*, I strike him, *je la hais*, I hate her.

§ 402. Whenever a *preposition is understood* in sense before a Pronoun object of the *third* person, the form for *both* genders is *lui* ; e. g. *je lui parle*, I speak to him (or to her), *je lui donne du papier*, I give some paper to him (or to her).

§ 403. The *objective singular*, when it occurs *after a verb in the imperative which governs it*, is as follows : *moi* always for the *first* person, *toi* always for the *second*, *le* (regular) for the *third* person *masc.* when it is a *direct object*,† *la* (regular) for the *third* person *fem.* when it is a *direct object*, and *lui* for the *third* person *either masc. or fem.* when it is an *indirect object* ; e. g. *donnez-moi*, give me, *retire-toi*, withdraw yourself, *frappez-le*, strike him, *frappez-la*, strike her, *donnez-lui*, give to him, or to her.‡

ing : *mes frères et mon cousin m'ont secouru* ; eux m'ont relevé, et lui m'a pansé, my brothers and cousin assisted me ; they took me up, and he dressed my wounds. These forms of the Pronoun are employed here to make the distinction between the persons intended more forcible than it would be in using *ils* and *il*.

* By *objective* is here meant any form governed by a verb instead of being *nom.* to it.

† By *direct* object is meant an object before which no preposition is expressed or understood ; by *indirect* object is meant one before which a preposition is either expressed or understood. The cases in § 402 are cases of indirect objects.

‡ This rule, it is to be noticed, relates only, as stated, to cases in which the Pronoun occurs *after* an imperative. (Comp. § 461.) Further, the imperative must *govern* the Pronoun. Hence in such cases as, *venez me parler*, come and speak to me, the rule does not apply, *me* not being governed by *venez*, but by *parler*. The sense is not *come me*, but *speak to me*. In *laissez-moi dormir*, however, the case is different ; *moi* being governed by *laissez*. In all such cases the Pronoun is connected with the imperative by a hyphen ; in others

§ 404. The *objective singular* forms *after a preposition expressed* are : *moi* for the *first* person, *toi* for the *second*, *lui* for the *third* person *masc.*, and *elle* for the *third* person *fem.* ; e. g. *pour moi*, for me, *par toi*, by thee, *avec lui*, with him, *à elle*, to her.

§ 405. The *objective singular* forms when used in *apposition* with other objectives singular, are always : *moi* for the *first* person, *toi* for the *second*, and *lui* for the *third* ; e. g. *voudriez-vous me perdre ? moi ?* would you ruin me ? me ? *toi ? je te soupçonnerai ?* thee ? shall I suspect thee ? *aimez-le ; lui qui* etc. love him ; he who etc.*

§ 406. The *objective singular* forms are the same as in the last section whenever they are preceded by the conjunction *que* in such *negative* expressions as the following : *n'aimer que moi, je le trouve bon*, that you love only me, I am glad, *ne frapper que lui, c'est* etc., to strike only him, is etc.

§ 407. The *plural* form, for the *first* person, *whether nominative or object*, is always *nous* ; e. g. *nous aimons*, we love, *on nous frappe*, they strike us, *donnez-nous*, give us, *pour nous*, for us.

§ 408. The *plural* form for the *second* person, *whether nominative or object*, is always *vous* ; e. g. *vous aimez*, you love, *on vous frappe*, they strike you, *taisez-vous*, be silent, *pour vous*, for you.

§ 409. The *regular nominatives plural* of the *third* person are : *ils* for the *masc.*, and *elles* for the *fem.* ; e. g. *ils rient*, they (*masc.*) laugh, *elles chantent*, they (*fem.*) sing.

not.—After all, there is one exception to this rule, viz. : *moi* and *toi*, when they are placed *after* the imperative and are followed by *en*, become *me* and *te* ; e. g. *donnez m'en*, give me some, *retourne t'en*, go back.

* To this rule may probably be referred such expressions as the following, often called *distributive* : *protégez-nous ; lui, à cause de sa bonté, et moi, parceque* etc., protect us ; him, on account of his goodness, and me, because etc. The pronouns *lui* and *moi* may be considered as unitedly in apposition with *nous*.

§ 410. The *nominatives plural* of the *third* person, *when they are not nominatives to any verb expressed* (as in cases corresponding with those stated concerning the singular in §§ 398, 399, 400,) are: *eux* for the *masc.*, and *elles* (regular) for the *fem.*; e. g. *c'est eux qui agissent*, it is they (*masc.*) who act, *c'est elles qui rient*, it is they (*fem.*) who are laughing, *elle est plus sage qu'eux*, she is wiser than they (*masc.*), *il est plus sage qu'elles*, he is wiser than they (*fem.*), *eux, qui vous aiment!* they, who love you!

§ 411. The *regular plural objective* form of the *third* person is *les* for both the *masc.* and *fem.*; e. g. *je les frappe*, I strike them (either *masc.* or *fem.*), *frappez-les*, strike them.

§ 412. Whenever a *preposition* is understood in sense before the pl. Pronoun of the *third* person (in which case the Pronoun is *not* a *direct* object), the form of the Pronoun is *leur* for both genders; e. g. *je leur donne du papier*, I give them (either *masc.* or *fem.*) some paper, *faites leur donner du vin*, cause some wine to be given to them.

§ 413. The *plural objective* forms of the *third* person *after a preposition expressed* are: *eux* for the *masc.*, *elles* for the *fem.*; e. g. *c'est pour eux*, it is for them, *elle parle d'elles*, she speaks of them.

§ 414. The Personal Pronoun *se* (of common gender and either number, see note p. 83) is seldom used except in reflexive verbs (see § 528). It is sometimes, however, employed as the indirect object of a verb which has at the same time a direct object; e. g. *se donner du mouvement*, to put one's self in motion, *se prescrire un devoir*, to prescribe a duty to one's self. The idea of *self* always belongs to this Pronoun.

§ 415. The Personal Pronoun *soi* (of common gender, see note, p. 83) can never, perhaps, with strict propriety, occur in its simple form, save with a preposition; e. g. *chacun travaille pour soi*, every one labors for himself, *être à soi*, to be independent. Without a preposition it is commonly joined with *même*; e. g. *il faut conduire ses affaires soi-même*, one must

conduct his affairs himself, *c'est haïr soi-même*, this is to hate one's self.* The idea of *self* always belongs to this Pronoun.

POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

§ 416. The English Possessive Pronouns which are always accompanied by a substantive vary only so as to denote the *number*, and, as to the *third person singular*, the *gender* of the *possessor* : *my, our, thy, your, his, her or its, their*. The French Pronouns of the same class denote only the *number* of the *possessor*, never the *gender* ; but they surpass the English Possessive Pronouns in this respect, that when the *possessor* is of the *singular* number they always denote precisely the *number* of the *person or thing possessed*, and its *gender* if it be of the *singular* number : e. g. *mon père*, my father, *ma mère*, my mother, *mes frères*, my brothers, *mes sœurs*, my sisters, *son anneau*, his or her ring, *sa bourse*, his or her purse, *ses mains*, his or her hands. When the *possessor* is of the *plural* number, the French Pronouns denote the *number*, but *not* the *gender* of the *person or thing possessed* : e. g. *notre travail*, our labor, *nos parents*, our parents.

§ 417. In regard to the other classes of Possessive Pronouns in French which are always used *absolutely*, without any substantive, the case is the same, excepting in one respect, viz. that when the *possessor* is of the *singular* number (not otherwise,) the *gender* of the *person or thing possessed* is denoted when it is of the *plural* number, as well as when it is of the *singular* : e. g. *les miens*, mine (*masc.*), *les miennes*, mine (*fem.*), *les siens*, his, her, or its (*masc.*), *les siennes*, his, her, or its (*fem.*) ; but, *les nôtres*, ours (*masc. or fem.*), *les leurs*, theirs (*masc. or fem.*)

* *Soi* is sometimes found uncompounded without a preposition, as *c'est souvent soi qu'on trompe*, it is often one's self that is deceived, *on n'aime que soi*, we only love ourselves. These expressions, however, are of doubtful authority. — *Soi* sometimes occurs in composition with *disant* ; e. g. *un soi-disant gentilhomme*, one who calls himself a gentleman.

§ 418. The general rule in relation to both the classes of French Possessive Pronouns is, that, so far as the above principles will allow, they agree in gender and number with *both the possessor and the possessed*. In the expression, *votre amour*, your love, *votre* is plural in signification as respects the persons possessing and yet singular as respects the thing possessed. In the expression, *tes prières et les miennes*, thy prayers and mine, *tes* and *les miennes* are *singular* in signification as respects the *possessor* and yet *plural* as respects the *thing possessed*.

§ 419. The feminine Pronouns, *ma, ta, sa*, are changed to the masculine ones, *mon, ton, son*, before any feminine substantive beginning with a vowel or *h* mute; e. g. *mon âme*, my soul, *ton épée*, thy sword, *son oreille*, his ear, *mon habitude*, my habit.

§ 420. The French say, *remettez ces médailles chacune en sa place*, put back these medals each in its proper place; but, *Dieu nous rendra à chacun selon nos œuvres*, God will render to us each according to his works, and, *vous aurez chacun votre part*, you shall have each his part. The explanation of the difference of construction in these and other like cases is contained in the following rule: whenever the *chacun* occurs *between the verb and its object*, whether that object be a single word or a clause, the Possessive Pronoun that follows *chacun* must in French (*not*, in a like case, in English) agree in number with the preceding nominative or accusative to which it refers, and not with *chacun*; *otherwise*, it agrees with *chacun*. Take the following sentences as further exemplifications of this rule: *nous danserons chacun à sa tour*, we shall dance each in his turn, *ces auteurs ont chacun leur mérite*, these authors have each their merit, *les hommes devraient avoir, chacun pour leur propre intérêt, de l'amour les uns pour les autres*, men ought for their own interest to have affection for each other, *lisez ces livres chacun à sa tour*, read these books each in its turn, *les hommes devraient s'aimer, chacun pour*

son *propre intérêt*, men ought to love one another, each for his own interest, *ils ont rempli chacun* LEUR *devoir*, they have fulfilled each his duty.

RELATIVE AND ABSOLUTE PRONOUNS.

§ 421. The pronoun *qui* is used for the English nominatives, *who, which*; and when so used it may be of *either gender* and of *either number*, and may be applied to *things* as well as *persons*; e. g. *l'homme ou la femme qui va là*, the man or woman who goes there, *qu'est-ce ?* who is it? *les oiseaux qui chantent*, the birds which sing., *les étoiles qui brillent*, the stars which shine, *le cheval qui mange l'herbe*, the horse which eats the grass.

§ 422. *Qui* may be used as the *object* of a *preposition* when *persons* are referred to, but cannot be used of *things*; e. g. *à qui parlez-vous ?* to whom do you speak? *l'homme de qui on a parlé*, the man of whom we have spoken, (but) *le cheval dont* (or *duquel*) *je me sers*, the horse of which I make use.

§ 423. *Qui* is seldom or never used as an object without a preposition except in interrogations, and then it must always relate to a *person*; e. g. *qui cherchez-vous ?* whom are you seeking?

§ 424. The Pronoun *que* is used for the English Objective Pronouns, *whom, which, what, that*. It is always the *object* of a *verb*; never of a *preposition*. It may be of *either gender* and of *either number* and may relate *either to persons or things*; e. g. *l'homme que vous voyez*, the man whom you see, *les étoiles que vous observez*, the stars which you are observing, *que lisez-vous ?* what are you reading? *l'an que j'ai passé*, the year which I have passed.

§ 425. The Pronoun *dont* corresponds with the English, *of whom, of which*, and sometimes to *with whom, with which*. It is used for *either gender* and *either number*, and for *either persons or things*; e. g. *l'homme dont j'ai parlé*, the man of whom I have spoken, *la montre dont il écrit*, the watch of

which he writes, *les femmes dont j'ai songé*, the women of whom I have dreamed, *la régularité dont il vit*, the regularity with which he lives. It can never have an *interrogative* import, and can never *begin a sentence*. N. B. It must always stand next to its antecedent.

§ 426. In cases where in English *of whom* or *of which* has rather the sense of *from whom* or *from which*, *dont* is inadmissible; *de qui* must be used. E. g. *celui de qui je tiens cette nouvelle*, the person of whom (*from whom*) I have this information.

§ 427. The Pronoun *quoi* corresponds with the English *what*. It is used for *either gender* and *either number*, but is applicable only to *things*; e. g. *ce sont choses à quoi vous ne prenez pas garde*, these are things in regard to which you do not take care, *à quoi pensez-vous ?* about what are you thinking?

§ 428. *Quoi* is always used, instead of any other Relative Pronoun, when a previous clause of a sentence is referred to, in such expressions as the following: *la vie passe comme un songe*; *c'est cependant à quoi on ne pense guères*, life passes like a dream; of which (truth), however, we scarce ever think.

§ 429. *Quoi* never occurs without a preposition, except in the expression, *je ne sais quoi*, I know not what, and in the law-phrases, *quoi faisant*, doing which.

§ 430. The Pronoun *quel* corresponds with the English *who*, *which*, *what*. As has been stated (§ 366), it varies its form according to the gender and number of the substantive to which it relates.

§ 431. *Quel* is commonly an *Adjective Pronoun*; e. g. *il ne sait quel parti prendre*, he knows not what resolution to take, *je vous ai dit quelle femme c'est*, I have told you what woman it is, *quelle incertitude !* what uncertainty!

§ 432. *Quel* is never a *Substantive Pronoun* unless it be in *interrogative* sentences, such as, *quelles sont ces femmes-là ?*

who (or what) are those women ? *quel est l'homme assez hardi pour cela ?* who (or of what nature) is the man sufficiently bold for this ?*

§ 433. The Pronoun *lequel* corresponds with the English *who, which, what*. As has been stated (§ 366), it varies its form according to the gender and number of the substantive to which it relates.

§ 434. *Lequel* is always a *Substantive Pronoun*, and differs from the other Relative and Absolute Pronouns in being *more definite* in its reference. This special definiteness may be ascribed in part to the *definite article* which enters into its composition.

§ 435. *Lequel* is generally, if not always, used in speaking of choice among two or more persons or things ; e. g. *lequel aimez-vous le mieux de ces deux tableaux ?* which (one) of these two pictures do you like best ? *choisissez laquelle vous voudrez*, choose which you please.

§ 436. *Lequel* is always used as a relative instead of *qui* when special definiteness is intended ; e. g. *on a oui trois témoins, lesquels ont dit*, we have heard three witnesses, which (witnesses) have said.

§ 437. As, according to § 422, *qui* can never be used of *things* after a preposition, whenever *which* (denoting a *thing*) occurs in English after a preposition, the French cannot use *qui*, but very often use *lequel* instead ; e. g. *le moyen duquel il s'est servi*, the means which he made use of, *c'est une condition sans laquelle il ne veut rien faire*, it is a condition without which he will not do anything.

§ 438. *Lequel* is always used instead of *qui* or *dont* when-

* Perhaps it may be said generally, that *quel* is *always* employed in an *adjective* sense, and that, in such expressions as are adduced in this section, *qui* would be used were there only a substantive sense intended. The words *quelles* and *quel* in the two cases cited may be considered as relating, adjectively, to a *description* of the persons referred to, according to the translation of them in brackets, rather than, substantively, to a mere *designation* of them.

ever without *lequel* there would be an ambiguity which can be avoided, e. g. *c'est l'amitié de cet homme qui m'a sauvé* would be ambiguous; for it is not clear whether *qui* refers to *amitié* or to *homme*. Hence we should rather use *laquelle* or *lequel*, according to the real reference intended.

§ 439. When the Relative occurs at a distance from the word to which it refers, it is considered better to use *duquel* (with its variations, § 366) than *de qui*;* e. g. *j'ai envoyé un courrier à la cour, au retour duquel* (not *de qui*), I have sent a courier to court, at whose return, *le prince à la protection duquel*, the prince to whose protection, *la Tamise dans le lit de laquelle*, the Thames in whose bed.

§ 440. It is generally considered best to employ *qui*, *que*, *quoi*, or *dont*, instead of *lequel*, whenever the former can be so employed in consistency with the principles above laid down; e. g. *les rois à qui* (not *auxquels*) *on doit obéir*, kings, whom we ought to obey, *le ciel dont* (not *duquel*) *le secours*, heaven, whose assistance, *le prince dont la protection*, the prince, whose protection. Yet some still use *lequel* in many such cases. (See the two examples in § 437, where *dont* certainly might with propriety be used instead of *duquel*, and *quoi* instead of *laquelle*.)

§ 441. The Relative and Absolute Pronouns which are variable agree (it is hardly necessary to say,) with the substantive to which they refer, in both gender and number; e. g. *quel homme est-ce?* what man is this? *quelles femmes!* what women! *laquelle de ces deux maisons aimez vous le mieux?* which of those two houses do you love the best?

DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

§ 442. When in English *it* with any form of the verb *to be* is followed by a substantive, a pronoun, an adjective used as

* From what is said at the end of § 425, it may be seen that *dont* cannot be used in such cases.

a substantive, or a preposition, *ce* (not *il*) is always used in French for the English Pronoun *it*; e. g. *fût-ce nos fils*, were it our sons, *est-ce les Anglois ?* is it the English ? *c'est moi qui vois l'ennemi*, it is I who see the enemy, *c'est le sublime*, it is the sublime, *c'est à ces dieux que je m'adresse*, it is to these gods that I address myself.

§ 443. When in English *he*, *she*, or *they* is used with any form of the verb *to be*, either *ce* or *il* (with its variations) may in general be employed in French; e. g. *c'est* (or *elle est*) *une honnête femme*, she is an honest woman, *c'est* (or *il est*) *un homme à ne jamais revenir de ses premières idées*, he is a man who will never give up his first ideas.

§ 444. When *ce* is used in French with the verb *être*, *to be*, it undergoes no change from connection with a plural form of the verb; e. g. *ce* (not *ces*) *sont des Anglois*, those are English, *ce furent les François qui assiégèrent la ville*, it was the French who besieged the city.

§ 445. *Ce* is used with *être* to denote *either gender and either number*; e. g. *c'est une fille*, it is a girl, *c'est un homme*, it is a man, *c'est les femmes qui*, etc., it is the women who, etc.

§ 446. Whenever *ce* is followed by a Relative Pronoun it always means a *thing*, it can never relate to *persons*. E. g. *ce qui flatte* must mean *what flatters*, not *who flatters*; *ce que j'aime* must mean *that which I love*, and not *he whom I love*.

§ 447. The English forms, *he who* or *whom*, *she who* or *whom*, *they* or *those who* or *whom*, are never expressed in French by *il qui* or *que*, *elle qui* or *que*, etc. but by the forms of the Demonstrative Pronoun *celui* (see § 370); e. g. *celui* or *celle qui chante*, he or she who sings, *ceux* or *celles qui méprisent*, they or those (*masc.* or *fem.*) who despise, *celui que j'aime*, he whom I love, *celles que j'ai vues*, those (*fem.*) whom I have seen.

§ 448. The Pronouns *ceci* and *cela* are properly applied only to *things*. Yet in familiar language the last, *cela*, is sometimes applied to *persons*; e. g. *cela ne fait que jouer*,

that child does nothing but play, *cela est fier*, that's a haughty fellow.

§ 449. The pronoun *cela* is not always opposed to *ceci*, and when it is not it may be used concerning something held in the hand or otherwise close to us; e. g. *que dites-vous de cela?* what do you say of that? When it is contrasted with *ceci*, it means something further off than what is denoted by *ceci*; e. g. *je n'aime pas ceci, donnez-moi de cela*, I do not love this, give me some of that.

§ 450. The Pronoun *celui* is applicable to *things* as well as *persons*; e. g. *de toutes les choses du monde, c'est celle que j'aime le mieux*, of all things in the world, it is that that I love the best, *les arbres que vous voyez, c'est ceux que j'ai achetés*, the trees which you see, they are those which I bought.

§ 451. The Pronoun *celui* is never used adjectively, as *ce* very often and indeed generally is; e. g. we may say *cet homme*, that man, but not *celui homme*. All the Demonstrative Pronouns except *ce* are properly *substantive* Pronouns.

§ 452. There is a mode of phraseology very like an exception to what has been stated in the preceding section. The Demonstrative Pronouns *ceci* and *cela* are often divided, the *ce* being used adjectively before a substantive and the *ci* or *là* being appended to the substantive by means of a hyphen; e. g. *ce chapeau-ci*, this hat (here), *cette femme-là*, that woman (there), *ces garçons-ci*, these boys (here).*

§ 453. The particles *ci* and *là* are added to *celui* in order to render it more precise. Without these particles *celui* does not always necessarily mean *this*, nor does it necessarily mean *that*. *Ci* or *là* determines its signification when the context would leave it doubtful.

* The *là* in these cases always has the grave accent over the *a*, as in *celui-là*, etc. Hence some, perhaps more correctly, consider such forms of expression as not deducible from the Pronouns *ceci* and *cela*, but as merely displaying a use of the particles *ci* and *là* with the Pronoun *ce*, in the same way as they are used with *celui*. (See § 453.)

MISCELLANEOUS PRONOUNS.

§ 454. The Miscellaneous Pronouns which are used *adjectively* agree in gender and number with the substantives which they qualify, according to the variations of form exhibited in §§ 377 seq.

§ 455. The Miscellaneous Pronouns which are used *substantively* agree in gender and number with the substantives, understood or expressed, for which they stand or to which they refer, according to the variations of form exhibited in § 377 seq.

§ 456. The Pronoun *personne*, which is masculine, is never used save of *persons*; the Pronoun *rien*, which is likewise masculine, is never used save of *things*.

POSITION.

§ 457. A Personal Pronoun which is the *subject* of a verb is always, except in the case mentioned in the next section, placed *before* the verb, and it can never be separated from it, save by one or more other Pronouns or by the negative particle *ne*; e. g. *je vous aime*, I love you, *je ne vous aime pas*, I do not love you, *je ne m'y fie pas*, I do not trust to it.

§ 458. In sentences which exhibit *direct interrogations*, the Personal Pronoun which is the *subject* of the interrogation always *follows* the verb immediately; e. g. *dort-il?* is he sleeping? *court-elle?* is she running?

§ 459. Whenever Pronouns of different persons occur together, forming in fact the common *subject* of a verb, whether there be an apposition or not, the person speaking names himself last, and the person addressed is named first; e. g. *vous et moi, nous irons à la campagne*, you and I will go into the country, *vous, votre frère, et moi, nous demeurerons ici*, you, your brother, and I, will stay here.

§ 460. A Personal Pronoun which is the *object* of a verb is always placed between the subject and the verb, when the sentence is not either interrogative or imperative; e. g. *il m'aime*, he loves me, *je vous vois*, I see you.

§ 461. When a sentence is interrogative, a Personal Pronoun which is the *object* is put *before* the verb, though the subject is put after it; e. g. *m'appellez-vous ?* are you calling me? *vous effraye-t-il ?* does he frighten you?

§ 462. Whenever a Personal Pronoun occurs as the *object* of a verb in the *imperative* mood, *first* or *second* person, and the sentence is an *affirmative* one, the object is placed *after* the verb; but if the sentence be a *negative* one, or the verb be of the *third* person, the object is placed *before* the verb. E.g. *dites-moi*, tell me (§403), *abandonnons-les*, let us abandon them; but, *ne me dites-pas*, do not tell me (§ 401), *ne me le donnez-pas*, do not give it to me, *qu'il lui en parle*, let him speak to her of it, *qu'ils nous envoient*, let them send us.

§ 463. When *two imperatives*, with each a Pronoun as *object*, occur together in an *affirmative* sentence and are joined by the conjunction *et* or *ou*, it is considered best to place the *first* object *after* the first verb and the *second* object *before* the the second verb; e. g. *voyez-le et lui dites de venir me voir*, see him and tell him to come and see me, *gardez-les ou les renvoyez*, keep them or send them back, *polissez-le sans cesse et le repolissez*, polish it unceasingly and repolish it.

§ 464. When *two* Personal Pronouns occur together *before* the verb as *objects*, the *indirect* object must precede the *direct* one, unless both Pronouns are of the *third* person, in which case the *direct* object precedes the *indirect* one; e. g. *je vous le dirai*, I will tell it to you, *vous nous les donnerez*, you will give them to us, *je le lui dirai*, I will tell it to him, *vous les leur donnerez*, you will give them to them.

§ 465. When *two* Personal Pronouns occur together *after* the verb as *objects* (i. e. in an *affirmative* sentence with an *imperative* mood, § 462), the *direct* object *precedes* the *indirect* in all cases; e. g. *donnez-le-nous*, give it to us, *donnez-le-lui*, give it to him.

§ 466. If the Pronoun *y* or *en*, or both of them, occur in connection with a Personal Pronoun, the Personal Pronoun

must in all cases be placed first ; e. g. *prêtez m'en*, lend me some, *il nous en donnera*, he will give us some, *vous leur y en enverrez*, you will send them some there.*

§ 467. When the Pronouns *y* and *en* occur together, *en* always follows *y*, as in the last example in the preceding section. As another example take : *je vous y en témoignerai mon mécontentement*, I will there testify to you my dissatisfaction on that point.

§ 468. A Pronoun which stands as *subject* to a verb can never be separated from it except by other Pronouns standing as *objects* or by the negative particle *ne* ; e. g. *je ne lui en veux rien dire*, I will say nothing to him about it, *il nous raconta son histoire*, he related to us his history.

§ 469. A Pronoun which stands as *object* to a verb can never be separated from it by any word except *tout*, everything, *rien*, nothing, or *jamais*, never ; e. g. *c'est leur tout refuser*, it is refusing them everything, *c'est ne me rien permettre*, it is allowing me nothing, *il a juré de ne lui jamais pardonner*, he has sworn never to pardon him.

§ 470. The Pronoun *tout*, when used as the object of a verb, is placed *after* the verb in simple tenses, and between the auxiliary and the participle in compound tenses ; e. g. *il avoue tout*, he avows everything, *il a tout avoué*, he has avowed everything.

§ 471. All the Pronouns which are used *adjectively* (save one, see next section,) *precede* the substantive to which they relate ; e. g. *cet homme*, that man, *aucune femme*, any woman, etc.

§ 472. The Adjective Pronoun *quelconque* always occurs *after* the substantive to which it relates ; e. g. *un homme quelconque*, any man, *une ligne quelconque*, any line.

§ 473. All the Pronouns which are used *substantively* follow the rules of substantives as to position, whenever the case is not otherwise regulated by either of the foregoing principles.

* There is one exception to this rule, viz. : *moi* is always placed after *y* ; e. g. *menez-y-moi*, lead me thither. But we must say, *menez-nous-y*, lead us thither.

Additional Peculiarities.

§ 474. The *plural* form of the Pronoun of the second person is almost always used in French, as in English, instead of the *singular*, whether the Pronoun be subject or object ; e. g. *vous avez mon chapeau*, you have my hat, *je vous aime*, I love you, *je vous dis*, I tell you.

§ 475. The singular Pronoun of the second person is often used, by way of familiarity, in addressing children or those with whom we are very intimate or free, and sometimes in an oratorical or poetical style in addressing the Deity or in other modes of apostrophe ; e. g. *que veux-tu, mon enfant ?* what do you wish, my child ? *m'amie, feras-tu un message pour moi ?* sweetheart, will you do a message for me ? *à toi appartient le regne*, thine is the kingdom, *O mort ! tu n'es pas un malheur*, O death ! thou art not an evil.

§ 476. Whenever *vous* is used for *tu*, *te*, or *toi*, according to § 474, any word which by common rules would agree with it in number, (excepting the verb,) is notwithstanding, as in English, put in the singular number ; e. g. *vous êtes habile*, you are skilful, *vous serez le maître*, you will be master.

§ 477. The following Pronouns of the third person, *elle*, *elles*, *eux*, *lui*, and *leur*, are very seldom applied to *things*. Whenever *things* are intended, the Pronoun *y* or *en* should be used, if possible, instead of these Personal Pronouns. E. g. *je m'en approchai*, I approached it (a table), not *je m'approchai d'elle*, which would mean, I approached her.

§ 478. Such is the reluctance of the French to apply the Pronouns mentioned in the last section to *things*, that when the expression *each of them* occurs, which would be rendered by *chacun d'eux* or *chacune d'elles* in case *persons* were intended, the Personal Pronoun and the preposition are entirely omitted when persons are *not* intended ; e. g. *vous avez deux chapeaux, combien avez-vous donné de chacun ?* you have two hats, what did you pay for each of them ? *voilà trois cartes*,

je mets tant sur chacune, there are three cards, I lay so much on each of them.

§ 479. The Pronoun *le* is used in a somewhat peculiar manner, to represent a preceding *part of a sentence*, an *adjective*, a *substantive* employed *adjectively*, or a *proper substantive*; and it is then always placed immediately *before* the verb of which it is the object or subject. E. g. *pourriez-vous aller à pied de Boston à New York ? Oui, je le pourrois*, could you go on foot from Boston to New York ? yes, I could (*it*, i. e. do so) ; *vous êtes industriels, et il ne l'est pas*, you are industrious and he is not (*it* or so) ; *est-elle fille ? Oui, et elle le sera long-temps*, is she unmarried ? Yes, and will be (so) this great while ; *êtes-vous roi ? Oui, je le suis*, are you a king ? yes, I am (*it*).

§ 480. Whenever the Pronoun *le*, used as is stated in the last section, stands for an *adjective* or a *part of a sentence*, it never undergoes any change as respects gender and number ; but, if it stand for a *substantive* or for an adjective employed substantively, *le* is changed to *la* for the feminine and *les* for the plural. E. g. *êtes-vous très occupées ? Nous le sommes*, are you very much occupied ? We are (so) : but, *êtes-vous reine ? Oui, je la suis*, are you a queen ? Yes, I am (*it*) ; *êtes-vous la malade ? Non, je ne la suis pas*, are you the sick woman ? No, I am not ; *êtes-vous mes filles ? Oui, nous les sommes*, are you my daughters ? Yes, we are.

§ 481. Whenever in English a verb has two or more nominatives of *different persons*, there is no difficulty in the construction, because the form of the verb in English is the same for all the persons of the plural number. Thus we say : *you and I read ; he, she, and I, went to the play ;* etc. In French, however, the construction must be different, because the several plural persons of the verb are not the same. The usual practice is, to place the several nominatives first and then subjoin the plural of that person which ranks first, (the first person taking precedence of the second and third, and

the second of the third,) together with the corresponding person of the verb ; e. g. *vous et moi, nous lisons*, you and I read, *lui, elle, et moi, nous allâmes hier à la comédie*, he, she, and I went to the play yesterday, *vous et lui, vous apprendrez le François*, you and he will learn French, *Jean et vous, vous êtes industrieux*, John and you are industrious.

§ 482. Sometimes, in such cases as those referred to in the preceding section, the Pronouns of the several persons are placed *after* the verb, the rest of the construction according with the rule laid down in that section ; e. g. *nous irons, lui et moi*, we shall go, he and I, *nous allâmes hier à la comédie, lui, elle, et moi*, we went to the play yesterday, he, she and I.

§ 483. When several nominatives of the *same person* occur together before a verb, it is *never* the case that a plural Pronoun of any person is added, but the verb follows the nominatives regularly in the proper person ; e. g. *mon frère et lui viendront demain*, my brother and he will come to-morrow, *lui, elle, eux, et ma sœur apprennent le François*, he, she, they, and my sister are learning French.

§ 484. Personal Pronouns of the *first* and *second* person, when employed as a *subject*, must be repeated before every verb in a sentence if the tenses are *not* the same, and it is always better that they should be thus repeated even though the tenses *be* the same ; e. g. *je soutiens et je soutiendrai toujours*, I maintain and (I) will always maintain, *accablé de douleur, je m'écriai et je dis*, overwhelmed with sorrow, I exclaimed and (I) said, *le Dieu que nous aimons et que nous adorons*, the God whom we love and (whom we) adore, *vous aimerez le seigneur votre Dieu et vous observerez sa loi*, you shall love the Lord your God and (you shall) observe his law.

§ 485. When a Personal Pronoun of the *third* person is employed as a *subject*, it is seldom, if ever, repeated before every verb in a sentence, unless those verbs be in different tenses. E. g. *la bonne grâce ne gâte rien ; elle ajoute à la beauté, relève la modestie, et y donne du lustre*, a graceful

manner spoils nothing ; it adds to beauty, sets off modesty, and gives it lustre ; *il est arrivé ce matin et il repartira ce soir*, he arrived this morning and (he) will set off again this evening.

§ 486. A Personal Pronoun employed as an *object* must always be repeated in French in connection with each verb, though in English it is generally employed with the last verb only ; e.g. *les écoliers vous aiment et vous craignent*, the scholars love (you) and fear you, *l'idée de ses malheurs le poursuit, le tourmente, et l'accable*, the idea of his misfortunes pursues (him), torments (him), and overwhelms him.*

§ 487. Whenever *vous*, the plural Pronoun of the second person, is used for *tu*, etc. (see § 474,) the corresponding Possessive Pronouns, *votre, vos*, must be used instead of *ton, ta, tes* ; and *le vôtre, la vôtre*, and *les vôtres* must be used instead of *le tien, la tienne, les tiens, les tiennes* : e. g. *que vous ressemblez peu à vos ancêtres !* how little you resemble your ancestors ! *quand vous aurez entendu nos raisons, nous écouterons les vôtres*, when you have heard our reasons, we will listen to yours.

§ 488. The Definite Article is often used instead of a Possessive Pronoun when it can be *without ambiguity* ; e. g. *j'ai mal à la tête*, I have a pain in my head, or the head-ache, *il faudrait lui couper la jambe*, it would be necessary to take off his leg, *il s'est rompu le cou*, he has broken his neck.

§ 489. The Pronoun *en* is very frequently used instead of a Possessive Pronoun, when persons are not intended and when it can be so used without ambiguity. E. g. *j'aime Boston, j'en admire l'exacte police, et les mœurs m'en paraissent fort louables*, I love Boston, I admire its exact police, and its manners appear to me very commendable ; *la rue est*

* In case, however, the repetition of the same action is expressed by a compound verb, the Pronoun need not be repeated ; e. g. *je vous le dis et redis*, I say it to you and resay it, *il le fait et le refait sans cesse*, he does it over and over again constantly.

longue, mais j'en vois le fin, the street is long, but I see its termination ; *montrez-moi ces bas, j'en aime la couleur*, show me those stockings, I like their color ; *cette plante est commune, et cependant je n'en connois pas les vertus*, this plant is common, and yet I do not know its virtues.

§ 490. In English we say : this book is *mine*, these gloves are *yours*, etc. The French do not use the Possessive Pronoun in such cases, but a Personal Pronoun with the preposition *à* ; e. g. *ce livre est à moi*, this book is mine, *ces gants sont à vous*, these gloves are yours, etc.

§ 491. In English we use the expressions : for my sake, for your sake, etc. The French do not use a Possessive Pronoun in such cases. They say, *pour l'amour de moi*, for the love of me, *pour l'amour de vous*, for the love of you, etc.

§ 492. In English we say : a friend of mine, a pupil of yours, etc. The French never use this form of expression. They say always, *un de mes amis*, one of my friends, *un de vos élèves*, one of your pupils, etc.

§ 493. In English we are not always required to repeat the Possessive Pronoun before each of several substantives occurring in succession, but in French this is always necessary ; e. g. *son père, sa mère, et ses frères sont de retour*, his father, mother, and brothers have come back, *je lui ai montré mes plus beaux et mes plus vilains habits*, I have shown him my finest and worst dresses, *il hait ses parens, ses amis, et sa famille*, he hates his relatives, friends, and family.

§ 494. In English we frequently omit the Possessive Pronoun in addressing persons familiarly, while in French it must always be expressed ; e. g. *voulez-vous du beurre, ma sœur ?* will you have some butter, (my) sister ? *non, mon frère*, no, (my) brother.

§ 495. In French the Relative Pronoun *qui* is frequently used as the only expressed nominative to two verbs ; e. g. *qui veut trop se faire craindre se fait rarement aimer*, he who wishes too much to make himself feared seldom makes him-

self beloved. In such cases the real nominative to the second verb is *celui* understood, which is, too, the antecedent of the Relative Pronoun *qui*.

§ 496. The Absolute Pronoun *que* is sometimes used for *à quoi* or *de quoi*; e. g. *que sert la science sans le vertu ?* of what use is learning without virtue? *que sert à l'avare d'avoir des trésors ?* of what use is it to the miser to possess treasures?

§ 497. The Relative Pronoun *which*, used as an object, may often be omitted in English, but the French Pronoun *que* cannot be thus omitted, and it must be repeated before every verb that governs it; e. g. *les livres que vous avez achetés*, the book (which) you have bought, *le Dieu que nous aimons et que nous adorons*, the God (whom) we love and (whom we) worship, *la femme que vous aimez*, the woman (whom) you love.

§ 498. Some of the Absolute Pronouns are often connected with the particle *que* in a peculiar manner, so as to change their sense somewhat. E. g. *qui que*, whoever; as, *qui que tu sois*, whoever thou mayest be, *qui que ce soit*, whoever it may be: *quoi que*, whatever; as, *quoi que ce soit*, whatever it may be: *quel que*, whoever or whatever; as, *quel que soit cet homme*, whoever that man may be, *quel que soit votre courage*, whatever your courage may be: *quelque que*, whatever or however; as, *quelque raison que vous donnez*, whatever reason you may give, *quelque puissant que vous soyez*, however powerful you may be. In all such cases the Pronouns are varied separately, as though not connected with the particle *que*; e. g. *quellesques soient vos raisons*, whatever may be your reasons, *quels que soient vos desseins*, whatever may be your designs.

§ 499. The particle *où* is sometimes employed precisely like a Relative Pronoun; e. g. *ce sont des affaires où je suis embarrassé*, these are affairs in which I am perplexed, *voilà une chose d'où dépend le bonheur public*, that is a thing on which the public happiness depends, *tels sont les lieux par où il a passé*, such are the places through which he has passed.

§ 500. The Demonstrative Pronoun *ce*, followed by a Rela-

tive Pronoun, then by a verb, and then sometimes by other words, often forms, with these words, the subject of a succeeding clause, of which the verb is some form of *être*, to be ; and in these cases the Demonstrative Pronoun is sometimes repeated before the verb, *être*, of the succeeding clause, and sometimes not. The following rules will determine this point :

§ 501. I. When the verb, *être*, of the second clause is followed by *another verb*, the Demonstrative Pronoun *must* be repeated ; e. g. *ce que j'aime le plus, c'est d'être seul*, what I like most is to be alone.

§ 502. II. When the verb, *être*, of the second clause is followed by an *adjective*, the Demonstrative Pronoun *must not* be repeated ; e. g. *ce dont vous venez de me parler est horrible*, what you have been mentioning to me is horrible.

§ 503. III. When the verb, *être*, of the second clause is followed by a *substantive* in the *singular*, the Demonstrative Pronoun may either be repeated or not, at pleasure, though it is generally considered best that it should not be ; e. g. *ce que je dis est la vérité*, or *c'est la vérité*, what I say is the truth.

§ 504. IV. When the verb, *être*, of the second clause is followed by a *substantive* in the *plural*, or by a *Personal Pronoun*, the Demonstrative Pronoun *must* be repeated ; e. g. *ce qui m'indigne, ce sont les injustices qu'on ne cesse de faire*, what provokes me is the injuries which are continually committed, *ce qui m'arrache au sentiment qui m'accable, c'est vous*, what alleviates the grief that oppresses me is you.

§ 505. The Pronoun *autre* is sometimes connected with *l'un*. In this case, if there be no conjunction, the sense is, *each other* ; e. g. *le feu et l'eau se détruisent l'un l'autre*, fire and water destroy each other. If *l'un* and *l'autre* be connected by the conjunction *et*, the sense is, *both* ; e. g. *l'un et l'autre ont raison*, both are right. If they be connected by the conjunction *ou*, the sense is, *either* ; e. g. *l'un ou l'autre est préférable à rien*, either is preferable to nothing. If they

be connected by the conjunction *ni*, the sense is, *neither*; e. g. *je ne le dirai ni à l'un ni à l'autre*, I will tell it to neither.

§ 506. The Pronoun *autre* is sometimes used in the plural apparently without any real meaning, but only in very familiar discourse; e. g. *nous autres hommes*, we men, *vous autres femmes*, you women.

§ 507. The Pronoun *autrui* is (as has been said, § 379,) always of plural signification, is never accompanied by an article or adjective, but always preceded by a preposition; e. g. *parler par la bouche d'autrui*, to speak by the mouth of others, *chez autrui*, with others.*

§ 508. The Pronoun *en* always implies the relation expressed by the preposition *de*, and the Pronoun *y* the relation expressed by the preposition *à*; e. g. *avez-vous du vin ? oui, j'en ai*, have you wine? yes, I have some, *venez-vous de la cour ? oui, j'en viens*, do you come from court? yes, I come from thence, *allez-vous à l'église ? oui, j'y vais*, are you going to church? yes, I am going thither.

§ 509. The preposition *en* is used in French in a great many cases in which it is not expressed in English; e. g. *vous avez plus d'oranges que je n'en ai*, you have more oranges than I, *vous n'avez pas tant de livres que j'en ai*, you have not so many books as I have, *il en est de vous comme de moi*, it is with you as it is with me, *j'en tiens*, I am caught, *je n'en puis plus*, I can do no more.

§ 510. The Pronoun *on* is used very frequently in French to avoid the use of the *passive voice*, which is so common in English, but is employed as seldom as possible in French; e. g. *on n'a pas encore reçu les lettres qu'on attendait*, the letters which were expected have not been received, *on a fait de grandes jouissances, et l'on ne sait trop pourquoi*, great re-

* The only exception to this statement is, the chancery expression, *sauf en autres choses notre droit et l'autrui en toutes*, saving in other things our right and the right of others in all (*l'autrui* here standing for *le droit d'autrui*).

joicings have been made, and it is not well known why, *on espère qu'ils arriveront demain*, it is hoped that they will arrive tomorrow.

§ 511. The Pronoun *on* must be repeated before each of several verbs of which it is the subject; e. g. *on épie la fortune, on travaille, on se fatigue, on cherche tous les moyens de la fixer*, we watch fortune, labor, fatigue ourselves, and seek every method of fixing it.

§ 512. The Pronoun *même* is often appended to the Personal Pronouns, *moi, toi, lui, elle, soi, nous, vous, eux*, and *elles*, in which case it is equivalent to our word *self*. It is never appended to *je, tu, il*, or *ils*. It has been said (§§ 414 and 415) that the Pronouns *se* and *soi* always convey the idea of *self*, and the Pronouns *me, te, nous*, and *vous* do likewise in Reflexive verbs (see § 555 seq.); the question may therefore arise, how are we to determine when we shall use these Pronouns and when *même* is to be employed? In answer, I observe, that whenever Pronouns without *même* convey the idea of *self*, they are the *object* of a verb, never the *nominative*; and that the Pronouns with *même* are generally in *apposition* with some other Pronoun or a substantive, or else are governed by some preposition, which can never be the case with the other Pronouns when they have the sense of *self*. E. g. *c'est le ciel lui-même qui nous montre un avenir*, it is heaven itself which shows us a hereafter, *ils se sont perdus eux-mêmes*, they have ruined themselves, *le monde estime bien des choses qui en elles-mêmes sont fort méprisables*, the world prizes many things which in themselves are very contemptible.

§ 513. The Pronoun *tel* exhibits a somewhat singular idiom in such expressions as, *vous ne sauriez me persuader rien de tel*, you cannot persuade me of any such thing. So too in this: *tel fait des libéralités, qui ne paye pas ses dettes*, the same man gives liberally who does not pay his debts.

§ 514. The Pronoun *tout* exhibits a somewhat peculiar idiom in such expressions as, *toute petite qu'elle est*, small as she is, *toute femme qu'elle est*, woman as she is.

CHAP. V.

VERB.

VARIATION.

General Statement.

§ 515. The Verbs of the French language, like those of the English, are either *Transitive* or *Intransitive*, commonly called, though less correctly, *Active* or *Neuter*. Transitive Verbs are those which necessarily suppose some *object* on which they may operate ; Intransitive Verbs are those which require no such object. E. g. *posséder*, to possess, is a Transitive Verb, since it requires an object, something to be possessed ; but *dormir*, to sleep, is Intransitive, for we cannot *sleep any thing*.

§ 516. The Verbs of the French language, like those of the English, are varied by means of *Voice*, *Mode*, *Tense*, *Number*, and *Person*.

§ 517. There are two *Voices* in French, as in English, viz. the *Active* and the *Passive*. The Passive Voice properly belongs only to such Verbs as are Transitive. This results necessarily from the definition we have given of Transitive and Intransitive Verbs. The Passive Voice is formed in French, as in English, by the aid of an *Auxiliary Verb*.

§ 518. There are five *Modes* in French, viz. the *Infinitive*, the *Indicative*, the *Conditional*, the *Subjunctive*, and the *Imperative*. There are besides two *Participles*, the *Present* and the *Past*, which may also perhaps be properly called *Modes* of the Verb.

§ 519. The *Infinitive* Mode merely expresses the action or quality of the Verb ; and it contains no indication of number or person, and only a very general one of time. The *Indicative* asserts the action or quality of the Verb, and contains likewise a definite indication of number, person and time. The *Conditional* asserts the action or quality of the Verb with a condition ;

and it contains likewise an indication of number, person and time. The *Subjunctive* denotes that the action or quality of the Verb is doubtful, uncertain ; and it contains an indication of number, person, and time. The *Imperative* denotes the idea of command, entreaty, invocation, and the like ; and it contains an indication of number, person, and of present time. The *Participle* may be called an *adjective* form of the Verb : it contains an indication of time, but not of person ; and the past participle may indicate number, while the present cannot.

§ 520. There is *one simple Tense* in the *Infinitive Mode*, viz. the *Present* ; there are *four simple tenses* in the *Indicative*, viz. the *Present*, the *Imperfect*, the *Perfect*, and the *Future* ; there is *one simple tense* in the *Conditional*, viz. the *Present* ; there are *two simple tenses* in the *Subjunctive*, viz. the *Present* and the *Imperfect* ; there is but *one tense* of any sort in the *Imperative* ; and there are *two simple tenses* of the *Participle*, viz. the *Present* and the *Past*.

§ 521. There are as many *compound Tenses* as simple ones in each of the modes of French Verbs, excepting the *Imperative*, which has no compound tense, and the *Participle*, which has but one. The compound of the *Present Infinitive* is often called the *Past* ; the compound of the *Present Indicative* is often called the *Preterite Indefinite* ; the compound of the *Imperfect*, the *Pluperfect* ; the compound of the *Perfect* the *Perfect Anterior* ; and the compound of the *Future* the *Future Anterior*. The compound of the *Present Conditional* is often called the *Past*. The compound of the *Present Subjunctive* is often called the *Past* ; and the compound of the *Imperfect* the *Pluperfect*. These compound tenses are all formed by the aid of an *Auxiliary Verb*.

§ 522. There are *two Numbers* in French Verbs, the *singular* and *plural*. The distinction of number belongs to all the tenses of the Verb except those of the Infinitive and the Present tense of the Participle.

§ 523. There are *three Persons* to each number, cor-

responding with the Personal Pronouns, viz. the *first*, *second*, and *third* Persons. The distinction of Person belongs to all the tenses of the Verb, except those of the Infinitive and Participle. This statement does not apply, however, to the Verbs called *Impersonal*, which are used only in the third person singular.

§ 524. The Infinitive Present of all French Verbs ends in one of the following terminations : *er*, *ir*, *oir*, or *re*. In English its various terminations are much more numerous.

§ 525. French Verbs are classed in *four conjugations*, according to the different terminations of their Infinitive Present ; Verbs of the *first* conjugation ending in *er*, Verbs of the *second* in *ir*, Verbs of the *third* in *oir*, and Verbs of the *fourth* in *re*.

§ 526. Certain Verbs are selected as models of the variations in these several conjugations, most of the Verbs in the conjugations coinciding with these models. All those Verbs which do thus coincide are called *Regular* ; those whose forms deviate from the models in any very important respect are called *Irregular*.

§ 527. Some French Verbs are *Defective*, i. e. are not employed in certain modes, tenses, or persons ; e. g. *bruire*, to make a noise, is used only in the Infinitive Present, in the Present Participle, *bruyant*, and in the third person singular and plural of the Imperfect, *bruyoit* and *bruyoient*.

§ 528. A peculiar class of Defective Verbs are those called *Impersonal*, which should perhaps more properly be called *Verbs of the third person*, or, as they have sometimes been called, *unipersonal* Verbs, inasmuch as they are employed in the third person singular and in that alone ; e. g. *il pleut*, it rains, etc. through other tenses. However, there is not such an impropriety in the epithet *impersonal* as has sometimes been supposed ; for it cannot be said with truth that there is anything like a *distinction* of person in the forms of these Verbs, and thus they may, perhaps properly, be considered as without person.

§ 529. There is a class of Verbs in French called *Pronominal*, *Reflexive*, or *Reciprocal* Verbs. It is characteristic of these that their subject and object are the same person or thing. They are called *Pronominal*, because in all their variations they are immediately preceded by a Personal Pronoun as their object,* which indeed is considered as a part of the very name of the Verb; e. g. *se connoître*, to know one's self, *je me connois*, I know myself. They are sometimes called *Reflexive* Verbs, because what is expressed by the verb *falls back*, as it were, upon the subject; e. g. *il se blesse*, he wounds himself. They are sometimes called *Reciprocal* Verbs, because they often express what persons or things *do to each other*; e. g. *Pierre et Guillaume se battent*, Peter and William are beating one another.

AUXILIARY VERBS.

§ 530. It has been said (§§ 517 and 521,) that the whole Passive Voice and all compound tenses of French Verbs are formed by the aid of Auxiliary Verbs. The Proper Auxiliary Verbs in French are two in number, viz. *avoir*, to have, and *être*, to be. The difference between these Verbs and others which often have the appearance of being real auxiliary Verbs, viz. *pouvoir*, *laisser*, *oser*, etc. is this: that the two Verbs mentioned as proper Auxiliary Verbs are necessary to the complete conjugation of other Verbs through the Voices, Modes, and Tenses which we have enumerated, while the others are not.

§ 531. All the Modes and Tenses of the *Passive Voice* are formed by the aid of the Auxiliary Verb, *être*, to be.

§ 532. The *compound tenses* of the *Active Voice* are formed generally by the aid of the Auxiliary Verb, *avoir*, to have, though sometimes *être* is used instead of *avoir*. All Transitive Verbs, except those called Pronominal, Reflexive, or Reciprocal (§§ 529 and 555 seq.), and also the greater number

* Except in the first and second persons of the Imperative. (§ 555.)

of Intransitive Verbs, make use of *avoir* as the Auxiliary Verb in their compound tenses. But a considerable number of Intransitive Verbs make use of *être* in these Tenses.*

§ 533. The Auxiliary Verb, *avoir*, to have, is conjugated as follows :

INFINITIVE.

Pres. *Avoir*, to have.

Comp. of Pres. *Avoir eu*, to have had.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. *Ayant*, having.

Comp. of Pres. *Ayant eu*, having had.

Past, *Eu*, had.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

Comp. of Present.

Singular.

Singular.

J'ai, I have.

J'ai eu, I have had.

Tu as, thou hast.

Tu as eu, thou hast had.

Il a, he has.

Il a eu, he has had.

Plural.

Plural.

Nous avons, we have.

Nous avons eu, we have had.

Vous avez, you have.

Vous avez eu, you have had.

Ils ont, they have.

Ils ont eu, they have had.

Imperfect.

Comp. of Imperfect.

Singular.

Singular.

J'avais, I had.

J'avais eu, I had had.

Tu avais, thou hadst.

Tu avais eu, thou hadst had.

Il avait, he had.

Il avait eu, he had had.

Plural.

Plural.

Nous avions, we had.

Nous avions eu, we had had.

Vous aviez, you had.

Vous aviez eu, you had had.

Ils avaient, they had.

Ils avaient eu, they had had.

* See Appendix L for a catalogue of these Verbs, and some further remarks.

Perfect.

Singular.

J'eus, I had.*Tu eus*, thou hadst.*Il eut*, he had.

Plural.

Nous eûmes, we had.*Vous eûtes*, you had.*Ils eurent*, they had.

Future.

Singular.

J'aurai, I shall have.*Tu auras*, thou wilt have.*Il aura*, he will have.

Plural.

Nous aurons, we shall have.*Vous aurez*, you will have.*Ils auront*, they will have.

Comp. of Perfect.

Singular.

J'eus eu, I had had.*Tu eus eu*, thou hadst had.*Il eut eu*, he had had.

Plural.

Nous eûmes eu, we had had.*Vous eûtes eu*, you had had.*Ils eurent eu*, they had had.

Comp. of Future.

Singular.

J'aurai eu, I shall have had.*Tu auras eu*, thou wilt have had.*Il aura eu*, he will have had.

Plural.

Nous aurons eu, we shall have had.*Vous aurez eu*, you will have had.*Ils auront eu*, they will have had.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

Singular.

J'aurais, I should have.*Tu aurais*, thou wouldst have.*Il aurait*, he would have.

Plural.

Nous aurions, we should have.*Vous auriez*, you would have.*Ils auraient*, they would have.

Comp. of Present.

Singular.

J'aurais eu, I should have had.*Tu aurais eu*, thou wouldst have had.*Il aurait eu*, he would have had.

Plural.

Nous aurions eu, we should have had.*Vous auriez eu*, you would have had.*Ils auraient eu*, they would have had.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.		Comp. of Present.	
(Que)	Singular.	(Que)	Singular.
<i>J'aie</i> , I may have.		<i>J'aie eu</i> , I may have had.	
<i>Tu aies</i> , thou mayest have.		<i>Tu aies eu</i> , thou mayest have had.	
<i>Il ait</i> , he may have.		<i>Il ait eu</i> , he may have had.	
(Que)	Plural.	(Que)	Plural.
<i>Nous ayons</i> , we may have.		<i>Nous ayons eu</i> , we may have had.	
<i>Vous ayez</i> , you may have.		<i>Vous ayez eu</i> , you may have had.	
<i>Ils aient</i> , they may have.		<i>Ils aient eu</i> , they may have had.	
Imperfect.		Comp. of Imperfect.	
(Que)	Singular.	(Que)	Singular.
<i>J'eusse</i> , I might have.		<i>J'eusse eu</i> , I might have had.	
<i>Tu eusses</i> , thou mightest have.		<i>Tu eusses eu</i> , thou mightest have had.	
<i>Il eût</i> , he might have.		<i>Il eût eu</i> , he might have had.	
(Que)	Plural.	(Que)	Plural.
<i>Nous eussions</i> , we might have.		<i>Nous eussions eu</i> , we might have had.	
<i>Vous eussiez</i> , you might have.		<i>Vous eussiez eu</i> , you might have had.	
<i>Ils eussent</i> , they might have.		<i>Ils eussent eu</i> , they might have had.	

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Aie</i> , have thou.	<i>Ayons</i> , let us have.
<i>Qu'il ait</i> , let him have.	<i>Ayez</i> , have you.
	<i>Qu'ils aient</i> , let them have.

§ 534. The Auxiliary Verb, *être*, to be, is conjugated as follows :

INFINITIVE.

Pres. *Être*, to be.

Comp. of Pres. *Avoir été*, to have been.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. *Étant*, being.

Comp. of Pres. *Ayant été*, having been.

Past, *Été*, been.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

Comp. of Present.

Singular.

Singular.

Je suis, I am.

J'ai été, I have been.

Tu es, thou art.

Tu as été, thou hast been.

Il est, he is.

Il a été, he has been.

Plural.

Plural.

Nous sommes, we are.

Nous avons été, we have been.

Vous êtes, you are.

Vous avez été, you have been.

Ils sont, they are.

Ils ont été, they have been.

Imperfect.

Comp. of Imperfect.

Singular.

Singular.

J'étais, I was.

J'avais été, I had been.

Tu étais, thou wast.

Tu avais été, thou hadst been.

Il était, he was.

Il avait été, he had been.

Plural.

Plural.

Nous étions, we were.

Nous avions été, we had been.

Vous étiez, you were.

Vous aviez été, you had been.

Ils étaient, they were.

Ils avaient été, they had been.

Perfect.

Comp. of Perfect.

Singular.

Singular.

Je fus, I was.

J'eus été, I had been.

Tu fus, thou wast.

Tu eus été, thou hadst been.

Il fut, he was.

Il eut été, he had been.

Plural.

Nous fûmes, we were.
Vous fûtes, you were.
Ils furent, they were.

Plural.

Nous eûmes été, we had been.
Vous eûtes été, you had been.
Ils eurent été, they had been.

Future.

Singular.

Je serai, I shall be.
Tu seras, thou wilt be.
Il sera, he will be.

Comp. of Future.

Singular.

J'aurai été, I shall have been.
Tu auras été, thou wilt have been.
Il aura été, he will have been.

Plural.

Nous serons, we shall be.
Vous serez, you will be.
Ils seront, they will be.

Plural.

Nous aurons été, we shall have been.
Vous aurez été, you will have been.
Ils auront été, they will have been.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

Singular.

Je serais, I should be.
Tu serais, thou wouldst be.
Il serait, he would be.

Comp. of Present.

Singular.

J'aurais été, I should have been.
Tu aurais été, thou wouldst have been.
Il aurait été, he would have been.

Plural.

Nous serions, we should be.
Vous seriez, you would be.
Ils seraient, they would be.

Plural.

Nous aurions été, we should have been.
Vous auriez été, you would have been.
Ils auraient été, they would have been.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.		Comp. of Present.	
(Que)	Singular.	(Que)	Singular.
<i>Je sois</i> ,	I may be.	<i>J'aie été</i> ,	I may have been.
<i>Tu sois</i> ,	thou mayest be.	<i>Tu aies été</i> ,	thou mayest have been.
<i>Il soit</i> ,	he may be.	<i>Il ait été</i> ,	he may have been.
(Que)	Plural.	(Que)	Plural.
<i>Nous soyons</i> ,	we may be.	<i>Nous ayons été</i> ,	we may have been.
<i>Vous soyez</i> ,	you may be.	<i>Vous ayez été</i> ,	you may have been.
<i>Ils soient</i> ,	they may be.	<i>Ils aient été</i> ,	they may have been.
Imperfect.		Comp. of Imperfect.	
(Que)	Singular.	(Que)	Singular.
<i>Je fusse</i> ,	I might be.	<i>J'eusse été</i> ,	I might have been.
<i>Tu fusses</i> ,	thou mightest be.	<i>Tu eusses été</i> ,	thou mightest have been.
<i>Il fût</i> ,	he might be.	<i>Il eût été</i> ,	he might have been.
(Que)	Plural.	(Que)	Plural.
<i>Nous fussions</i> ,	we might be.	<i>Nous eussions été</i> ,	we might have been.
<i>Vous fussiez</i> ,	you might be.	<i>Vous eussiez été</i> ,	you might have been.
<i>Ils fussent</i> ,	they might be.	<i>Ils eussent été</i> ,	they might have been.

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Sois</i> , be thou.	<i>Soyons</i> , let us be.
<i>Qu'il soit</i> , let him be.	<i>Soyez</i> , be you.
	<i>Qu'ils soient</i> , let them be.

REGULAR VERBS.

§ 535. Regular Verbs are conjugated by a change of termination and by the aid of the Auxiliary Verbs. They are, as

we have said (§ 525), of the *First, Second, Third, or Fourth Conjugation*, according as they end in *er, ir, oir, or re*.

§ 536. The Verb *Parler*, to speak, which is a model of the Regular Verbs of the *First Conjugation*, is conjugated as follows:

INFINITIVE.

Pres. *Parler*, to speak.

Comp. of Pres. *Avoir parlé*, to have spoken.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. *Parlant*, speaking.
Past, *Parlé*, spoken.

Comp. of Pres. *Ayant parlé*,
having spoken.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

Singular.

Je parle, I speak.
Tu parles, thou speakest.
Il parle, he speaks.

Comp. of Present.

Singular.

J'ai parlé, I have spoken.
Tu as parlé, thou hast spoken.
Il a parlé, he has spoken.

Plural.

Nous parlons, we speak.

Vous parlez, you speak.

Ils parlent, they speak.

Plural.

Nous avons parlé, we have spoken.

Vous avez parlé, you have spoken.

Ils ont parlé, they have spoken.

Imperfect.

Singular.

Je parlais, I was speaking.
Tu parlais, thou wast speaking.
Il parlait, he was speaking.

Comp. of Imperfect.

Singular.

J'avais parlé, I had spoken.
Tu avais parlé, thou hadst spoken.
Il avait parlé, he had spoken.

Plural.

Nous parlions, we were speaking.

Vous parliez, you were speaking.

Ils parlaient, they were speaking.

Plural.

Nous avions parlé, we had spoken.

Vous aviez parlé, you had spoken.

Ils avaient parlé, they had spoken.

Perfect.

Singular.

Je parlai, I spoke.

Tu parlas, thou spokest.

Il parla, he spoke.

Comp. of Perfect.

Singular.

J'eus parlé, I had spoken.

Tu eus parlé, thou hadst spoken.

Il eut parlé, he had spoken.

Plural.

Nous parlâmes, we spoke.

Vous parlâtes, you spoke.

Ils parlèrent, they spoke.

Plural.

Nous eûmes parlé, we had spoken.

Vous eûtes parlé, you had spoken.

Ils eurent parlé, they had spoken.

Future.

Singular.

Je parlerai, I shall speak.

Tu parleras, thou wilt speak.

Il parlera, he will speak.

Comp. of Future.

Singular.

J'aurai parlé, I shall have spoken.

Tu auras parlé, thou wilt have spoken.

Il aura parlé, he will have spoken.

Plural.

Nous parlerons, we shall speak.

Vous parlerez, you will speak.

Ils parleront, they will speak.

Plural.

Nous aurons parlé, we shall have spoken.

Vous aurez parlé, you will have spoken.

Ils auront parlé, they will have spoken.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.	Comp. of Present.
Singular.	Singular.
<i>Je parlerais</i> , I should speak.	<i>J'aurais parlé</i> , I should have spoken.
<i>Tu parlerais</i> , thou wouldst speak.	<i>Tu aurais parlé</i> , thou wouldst have spoken.
<i>Il parlerait</i> , he would speak.	<i>Il aurait parlé</i> , he would have spoken.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Nous parlerions</i> , we should speak.	<i>Nous aurions parlé</i> , we should have spoken.
<i>Vous parleriez</i> , you would speak.	<i>Vous auriez parlé</i> , you would have spoken.
<i>Ils parleraient</i> , they would speak.	<i>Ils auraient parlé</i> , they would have spoken.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.	Comp. of Present.
(Que) Singular.	(Que) Singular.
<i>Je parle</i> , I may speak.	<i>J'aie parlé</i> , I may have spoken.
<i>Tu parles</i> , thou mayest speak.	<i>Tu aies parlé</i> , thou mayest have spoken.
<i>Il parle</i> , he may speak.	<i>Il ait parlé</i> , he may have spoken.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Nous parlions</i> , we may speak.	<i>Nous ayons parlé</i> , we may have spoken.
<i>Vous parliez</i> , you may speak.	<i>Vous ayez parlé</i> , you may have spoken.
<i>Ils parlent</i> , they may speak.	<i>Ils aient parlé</i> , they may have spoken.

Imperfect.		Comp. of Imperfect.	
(Que)	Singular.	(Que)	Singular.
	<i>Je parlasse</i> , I might speak.		<i>J'eusse parlé</i> , I might have spoken.
	<i>Tu parlasses</i> , thou mightest speak.		<i>Tu eusses parlé</i> , thou mightest have spoken.
	<i>Il parlât</i> , he might speak.		<i>Il eût parlé</i> , he might have spoken.
(Que)	Plural.	(Que)	Plural.
	<i>Nous parlussions</i> , we might speak.		<i>Nous eussions parlé</i> , we might have spoken.
	<i>Vous parlassiez</i> , you might speak.		<i>Vous eussiez parlé</i> , you might have spoken.
	<i>Ils parlassent</i> , they might speak.		<i>Ils eussent parlé</i> , they might have spoken.

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Parle</i> , speak thou.	<i>Parlons</i> , let us speak.
<i>Qu'il parle</i> , let him speak.	<i>Parlez</i> , speak ye.
	<i>Qu'ils parlent</i> , let them speak.

§ 537. The Verb *Finir*, to finish, which is a model of the Regular Verbs of the *Second Conjugation*, is conjugated as follows:

INFINITIVE.

Pres. <i>Finir</i> , to finish.	Comp. of Pres. <i>Avoir fini</i> , to have finished.
---------------------------------	--

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. <i>Finissant</i> , finishing.	Comp. of Pres. <i>Ayant fini</i> , having finished.
Past, <i>Fini</i> , finished.	

INDICATIVE.

Present.	Comp. of Present.
Singular.	Singular.
<i>Je finis</i> , I finish. <i>Tu finis</i> , thou finishest. <i>Il finit</i> , he finishes.	<i>J'ai fini</i> , I have finished. <i>Tu as fini</i> , thou hast finished. <i>Il a fini</i> , he has finished.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Nous finissons</i> , we finish. <i>Vous finissez</i> , you finish. <i>Ils finissent</i> , they finish.	<i>Nous avons fini</i> , we have finished. <i>Vous avez fini</i> , you have finished. <i>Ils ont fini</i> , they have finished.
Imperfect.	Comp. of Imperfect.
Singular.	Singular.
<i>Je finissais</i> , I was finishing. <i>Tu finissais</i> , thou wast finishing. <i>Il finissait</i> , he was finishing.	<i>J'avais fini</i> , I had finished. <i>Tu avais fini</i> , thou hadst finished. <i>Il avait fini</i> , he had finished.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Nous finissions</i> , we were finishing. <i>Vous finissiez</i> , you were finishing. <i>Ils finissaient</i> , they were finishing.	<i>Nous avions fini</i> , we had finished. <i>Vous aviez fini</i> , you had finished. <i>Ils avaient fini</i> , they had finished.
Perfect.	Comp. of Perfect.
Singular.	Singular.
<i>Je finis</i> , I finished. <i>Tu finis</i> , thou finishedst. <i>Il finit</i> , he finished.	<i>J'eus fini</i> , I had finished. <i>Tu eus fini</i> , thou hadst finished. <i>Il eut fini</i> , he had finished.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Nous finîmes</i> , we finished. <i>Vous finîtes</i> , you finished. <i>Ils finirent</i> , they finished.	<i>Nous eûmes fini</i> , we had finished. <i>Vous eûtes fini</i> , you had finished. <i>Ils eurent fini</i> , they had finished.

Future.

Singular.

Je finirai, I shall finish.*Tu finiras*, thou wilt finish.*Il finira*, he will finish.

Plural.

Nous finirons, we shall finish.*Vous finirez*, you will finish.*Ils finiront*, they will finish.

Comp. of Future.

Singular.

J'aurai fini, I shall have finished.*Tu auras fini*, thou wilt have finished.*Il aura fini*, he will have finished.

Plural.

Nous aurons fini, we shall have finished.*Vous aurez fini*, you will have finished.*Ils auront fini*, they will have finished.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

Singular.

Je finirais, I should finish.*Tu finirais*, thou wouldst finish.*Il finirait*, he would finish.

Plural.

Nous finirions, we should finish.*Vous finiriez*, you would finish.*Ils finiraient*, they would finish.

Comp. of Present.

Singular.

J'aurais fini, I should have finished.*Tu aurais fini*, thou wouldst have finished.*Il aurait fini*, he would have finished.

Plural.

Nous aurions fini, we should have finished.*Vous auriez fini*, you would have finished.*Ils auraient fini*, they would have finished.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.		Comp. of Present.	
(Que)	Singular.	(Que)	Singular.
	<i>Je finisse</i> , I may finish.		<i>J'aie fini</i> , I may have finished.
	<i>Tu finisses</i> , thou mayest finish.		<i>Tu aies fini</i> , thou mayest have finished.
	<i>Il finisse</i> , he may finish.		<i>Il ait fini</i> , he may have finished.
Plural.		Plural	
(Que)		(Que)	
	<i>Nous finissions</i> , we may finish.		<i>Nous ayons fini</i> , we may have finished.
	<i>Vous finissiez</i> , you may finish.		<i>Vous ayez fini</i> , you may have finished.
	<i>Ils finissent</i> , they may finish.		<i>Ils aient fini</i> , they may have finished.

Imperfect.		Comp. of Imperfect.	
(Que)	Singular.	(Que)	Singular.
	<i>Je finisse</i> , I might finish.		<i>J'eusse fini</i> , I might have finished.
	<i>Tu finisses</i> , thou mightest finish.		<i>Tu eusses fini</i> , thou mightest have finished.
	<i>Il finît</i> , he might finish.		<i>Il eût fini</i> , he might have finished.
Plural.		Plural.	
(Que)		(Que)	
	<i>Nous finissions</i> , we might finish.		<i>Nous eussions fini</i> , we might have finished.
	<i>Vous finissiez</i> , you might finish.		<i>Vous eussiez fini</i> , you might have finished.
	<i>Ils finissent</i> , they might finish.		<i>Ils eussent fini</i> , they might have finished.

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Finis</i> , finish thou.	<i>Finissons</i> , let us finish.
<i>Qu'il finisse</i> , let him finish.	<i>Finissez</i> , finish you.
	<i>Qu'ils finissent</i> , let them finish.

§ 538. The Verb *Recevoir*, to receive, which is a model of the Regular Verbs of the *Third Conjugation*, is conjugated as follows :

INFINITIVE.

Pres. <i>Recevoir</i> , to receive.	Comp. of Pres. <i>Avoir reçu</i> , to have received.
-------------------------------------	--

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. <i>Recevant</i> , receiving.	Comp. of Pres. <i>Avoir reçu</i> , having received.
Past, <i>Reçu</i> , received.	

INDICATIVE.

Present.

Comp. of Present.

Singular.

Singular.

Je reçois, I receive.

J'ai reçu, I have received.

Tu reçois, thou receivest.

Tu as reçu, thou hast received.

Il reçoit, he receives.

Il a reçu, he has received.

Plural.

Plural.

Nous recevons, we receive.

Nous avons reçu, we have received.

Vous recevez, you receive.

Vous avez reçu, you have received.

Ils reçoivent, they receive.

Ils ont reçu, they have received.

Imperfect.

Comp. of Imperfect.

Singular.

Singular.

Je recevais, I was receiving.

J'avais reçu, I had received.

Tu recevais, thou wast receiving.

Tu avais reçu, thou hadst received.

Il recevait, he was receiving.

Il avait reçu, he had received.

Plural.

Plural.

Nous recevions, we were receiving.

Nous avions reçu, we had received.

Vous receviez, you were receiving.

Vous aviez reçu, you had received.

Ils recevaient, they were receiving.

Ils avaient reçu, they had received.

Perfect.		Comp. of Perfect.	
Singular.		Singular.	
<i>Je reçus</i> , I received.		<i>J'eus reçu</i> , I had received.	
<i>Tu reçus</i> , thou receivedst.		<i>Tu eus reçu</i> , thou hadst received.	
<i>Il reçut</i> , he received.		<i>Il eut reçu</i> , he had received.	
Plural.		Plural.	
<i>Nous reçûmes</i> , we received.		<i>Nous eûmes reçu</i> , we had received.	
<i>Vous reçûtes</i> , you received.		<i>Vous eûtes reçu</i> , you had received.	
<i>Ils reçurent</i> , they received.		<i>Ils eurent reçu</i> , they had received.	
Future.		Comp. of Future.	
Singular.		Singular.	
<i>Je recevrai</i> , I shall receive.		<i>J'aurai reçu</i> , I shall have received.	
<i>Tu recevras</i> , thou wilt receive.		<i>Tu auras reçu</i> , thou wilt have received.	
<i>Il recevra</i> , he will receive.		<i>Il aura reçu</i> , he will have received.	
Plural.		Plural.	
<i>Nous recevrons</i> , we shall receive.		<i>Nous aurons reçu</i> , we shall have received.	
<i>Vous recevrez</i> , you will receive.		<i>Vous aurez reçu</i> , you will have received.	
<i>Ils recevront</i> , they will receive.		<i>Ils auront reçu</i> , they will have received.	

CONDITIONAL.

Present.		Comp. of Present.	
Singular.		Singular.	
<i>Je recevrais</i> , I should receive.		<i>J'aurais reçu</i> , I should have received.	
<i>Tu recevrais</i> , thou wouldst receive.		<i>Tu aurais reçu</i> , thou wouldst have received.	
<i>Il recevrait</i> , he would receive.		<i>Il aurait reçu</i> , he would have received.	

Plural.

Nous recevriions, we should receive.

Vous recevriez, you would receive.

Ils recevraient, they would receive.

Plural.

Nous aurions reçu, we should have received.

Vous auriez reçu, you would have received.

Ils auraient reçu, they would have received.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

Comp. of Present.

(Que) Singular.

Je reçoive, I may receive.

(Que) Singular.

J'aie reçu, I may have received.

Tu reçoives, thou mayest receive.

Tu aies reçu, thou mayest have received.

Il reçoive, he may receive.

Il ait reçu, he may have received.

(Que) Plural.

Nous recevions, we may receive.

Vous receviez, you may receive.

Ils reçoivent, they may receive.

(Que) Plural.

Nous ayons reçu, we may have received.

Vous ayez reçu, you may have received.

Ils aient reçu, they may have received.

Imperfect.

Comp. of Imperfect.

(Que) Singular.

Je reçusse, I might receive.

(Que) Singular.

J'eusse reçu, I might have received.

Tu reçusses, thou mightest receive.

Tu eusses reçu, thou mightest have received.

Il reçût, he might receive.

Il eût reçu, he might have received.

(Que) Plural.

Nous reçussions, we might receive.

Vous reçussiez, you might receive.

Ils reçussent, they might receive.

(Que) Plural.

Nous eussions reçu, we might have received.

Vous eussiez reçu, you might have received.

Ils eussent reçu, they might have received.

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

Reçois, receive thou.*Recevons*, let us receive.*Qu'il reçoive*, let him receive.*Recevez*, receive you.*Qu'ils reçoivent*, let them receive.

§ 539. The Verb *Rendre*, to render, which is a model of the Regular Verbs of the *Fourth Conjugation*, is conjugated as follows :

INFINITIVE.

Pres. *Rendre*, to return.Comp. of Pres. *Avoir rendu*, to have returned.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. *Rendant*, returning.Comp. of Pres. *Ayant rendu*, having returned.Past, *Rendu*, returned.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

Comp. of Present.

Singular.

Singular.

Je rends, I return.*J'ai rendu*, I have returned.*Tu rends*, thou returnest.*Tu as rendu*, thou hast returned.*Il rend*, he returns.*Il a rendu*, he has returned.

Plural.

Plural.

Nous rendons, we return.*Nous avons rendu*, we have returned.*Vous rendez*, you return.*Vous avez rendu*, you have returned.*Ils rendent*, they return.*Ils ont rendu*, they have returned.

Imperfect.

Singular.

Je rendais, I was returning.
Tu rendais, thou wast returning.
Il rendait, he was returning.

Plural.

Nous rendions, we were returning.
Vous rendiez, you were returning.
Ils rendaient, they were returning.

Perfect.

Singular.

Je rendis, I returned.
Tu rendis, thou returnedst.
Il rendit, he returned.

Plural.

Nous rendîmes, we returned.
Vous rendîtes, you returned.
Ils rendirent, they returned.

Future.

Singular.

Je rendrai, I shall return.
Tu rendras, thou wilt return.
Il rendra, he will return.

Comp. of Imperfect.

Singular.

J'avais rendu, I had returned.
Tu avais rendu, thou hadst returned.
Il avait rendu, he had returned.

Plural.

Nous avions rendu, we had returned.
Vous aviez rendu, you had returned.
Ils ont rendu, they had returned.

Comp. of Perfect.

Singular.

J'eus rendu, I had returned.
Tu eus rendu, thou hadst returned.
Il eut rendu, he had returned.

Plural.

Nous eûmes rendu, we had returned.
Vous eûtes rendu, you had returned.
Ils eurent rendu, they had returned.

Comp. of Future.

Singular.

J'aurai rendu, I shall have returned.
Tu auras rendu, thou wilt have returned.
Il aura rendu, he will have returned.

Plural.

Nous rendrons, we shall return.

Vous rendrez, you will return.

Ils rendront, they will return.

Plural.

Nous aurons rendu, we shall have returned.

Vous aurez rendu, you will have returned.

Ils auront rendu, they will have returned.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

Singular.

Je rendrais, I should return.

Tu rendrais, thou wouldst return.

Il rendrait, he would return.

Comp. of Present.

Singular.

J'aurais rendu, I should have returned.

Tu aurais rendu, thou wouldst have returned.

Il aurait rendu, he would have returned.

Plural.

Nous rendrions, we should return.

Vous rendriez, you would return.

Ils rendraient, they would return.

Plural.

Nous aurions rendu, we should have returned.

Vous auriez rendu, you would have returned.

Ils auraient rendu, they would have returned.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

Singular.

(Que) *Je rende*, I may return.

Tu rendes, thou mayest return.

Il rende, he may return.

Comp. of Present.

(Que) Singular.

J'aie rendu, I may have returned.

Tu aies rendu, thou mayest have returned.

Il ait rendu, he may have returned.

(Que) Plural.	(Que) Plural.
<i>Nous rendions</i> , we may return.	<i>Nous ayons rendu</i> , we may have returned.
<i>Vous rendiez</i> , you may return.	<i>Vous avez rendu</i> , you may have returned.
<i>Ils rendent</i> , they may return.	<i>Ils aient rendu</i> , they may have returned.

Imperfect.	Comp. of Imperfect.
(Que) Singular.	(Que) Singular.
<i>Je rendisse</i> , I might return.	<i>J'eusse rendu</i> , I might have returned.
<i>Tu rendisses</i> , thou mightest return.	<i>Tu eusses rendu</i> , thou mightest have returned.
<i>Il rendit</i> , he might return.	<i>Il eût rendu</i> , he might have returned.

(Que) Plural.	(Que) Plural.
<i>Nous rendissions</i> , we might return.	<i>Nous eussions rendu</i> , we might have returned.
<i>Vous rendissiez</i> , you might return.	<i>Vous eussiez rendu</i> , you might have returned.
<i>Ils rendissent</i> , they might return.	<i>Ils eussent rendu</i> , they might have returned.

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Rends</i> , return thou.	<i>Rendons</i> , let us return.
<i>Qu'il rende</i> , let him return.	<i>Rendez</i> , return you.
	<i>Qu'ils rendent</i> , let them return.*

Observations.

§ 540. OBS. I. Nine tenths of the Verbs in the French language are said to end in *er*, and thus belong to the First Con-

* As has been said in § 517, the Passive Voice of French Verbs is formed by prefixing to their Past Participle the tenses of the auxiliary verb *être*; e. g. *je suis aimé*, I am loved, *j'étais respecté*, I was respected, *je fus loué*, I was praised, etc. etc. This formation is so simple, that it has been deemed unnecessary to present complete tables of the Passive Voice.

jugation. Of the remaining tenth (amounting to about 300) two thirds, perhaps, end in *ir*, and thus belong to the Second Conjugation. Only seven end in *oir*, and thus belong to the Third Conjugation.

§ 541. OBS. II. When a Verb ends with *ger*, the *e* is retained in those forms of the Verb in which an *a* or an *o* would follow the *g* : e. g. *mangeant*, Present Participle of *manger*, to eat ; *songeois*, Imperfect Tense of *songer*, to dream. The reason of this is, that if the *e* were dropped the *g* would have its hard sound before *a* or *o*. (§ 44 a.)

§ 542. OBS. III. When a Verb ends with *cer* or *cevoir*, the *c* must have a cedilla placed under it in those forms of the Verb in which it is followed by an *a* or an *o* ; e. g. *nous plaçons*, we place, *je traçais*, I traced, *j'effaçai*, I effaced, *je reçois*, I receive, *déçu*, deceived. The reason of this is, that *c* would otherwise have its hard sound before *a* or *o*. (§ 41 a.)

§ 543. OBS. IV. The Verbs, *appeler*, to call, and *jeter*, to throw, and a very few others of the same terminations, double the *l* and the *t* in those forms of the Verb in which the *l* and *t* are followed by an *e* mute : e. g. *il appelle*, he calls, not *il appele* ; *il jette*, he throws, not *il jete*.

§ 544. OBS. V. In Verbs ending in *oyer* and *uyer*, the *y* is changed into *i* before a mute *e* : e. g. *j'emploie*, I employ, from *employer* ; *j'appuierai*, I will support, from *appuyer*. By some this change is extended to Verbs ending in *ayer* and *eyer* : e. g. *il paie*, he pays, from *payer* ; *elle grasséie*, she lisps, from *grasséyer*.

§ 545. OBS. VI. When the first person singular of the Present Indicative, in Verbs of the First Conjugation, is used interrogatively with the pronoun *je* following immediately, the mute *e*, with which the form of the Verb commonly terminates, is changed to *e* with the acute accent ; e. g. *aimé-je* ? do I love ? *négligé-je* ? do I neglect ? The same is true as to some Verbs of the Second Conjugation : e. g. *offré-je*, do I offer ? *cueillé-je* ? do I gather ?

REGULAR VERBS CONJUGATED WITH Être.

§ 546. The Verbs which have been presented as examples of the regular conjugations make use of the Verb *avoir* as their Auxiliary in the compound tenses. We will now exhibit the conjugation of the Verb *entrer*, to enter, one of the Intransitive Verbs which require the use of *être* in their compound tenses. (See Appendix L.) The Verb *entrer*, being Intransitive, has, of course, no Passive Voice. Its Active Voice is conjugated as follows :

INFINITIVE.

Pres. *Entrer*, to enter.Comp. of Pres. *Être entré*, to have entered.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. *Entrant*, entering.
Past, *Entré*, entered.Comp. of Pres. *Étant entré*, having entered.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

Singular.

J'entre, I enter.
Tu entres, thou enterest.
Il entre, he enters.

Comp. of Present.

Singular.

Je suis entré, I have entered.
Tu es entré, thou hast entered.
Il est entré, he has entered.

Plural.

Nous entrons, we enter.
Vous entrez, you enter.
Ils entrent, they enter.

Plural.

Nous sommes entrés, we have entered.
Vous êtes entrés, you have entered.
Ils sont entrés, they have entered.

Imperfect.

Singular.

J'entrais, I was entering.
Tu entrais, thou wast entering.
Il entraït, he was entering.

Plural.

Nous entrions, we were entering.
Vous entriez, you were entering.
Ils entraient, they were entering.

Perfect.

Singular.

J'entrai, I entered.
Tu entras, thou enteredst.
Il entra, he entered.

Plural.

Nous entrâmes, we entered.
Vous entrâtes, you entered.
Ils entrèrent, they entered.

Future.

Singular.

J'entrerais, I shall enter.
Tu entreras, thou wilt enter.
Il entrera, he will enter.

Comp. of Imperfect.

Singular.

J'étais entré, I had entered.
Tu étais entré, thou hadst entered.
Il était entré, he had entered.

Plural.

Nous étions entrés, we had entered.
Vous étiez entrés, you had entered.
Ils étaient entrés, they had entered.

Comp. of Perfect.

Singular.

Je fus entré, I had entered.
Tu fus entré, thou hadst entered.
Il fut entré, he had entered.

Plural.

Nous fûmes entrés, we had entered.
Vous fûtes entrés, you had entered.
Ils furent entrés, they had entered.

Comp. of Future.

Singular.

Je serai entré, I shall have entered.
Tu seras entré, thou wilt have entered.
Il sera entré, he will have entered.

Plural.

Nous entrerons, we shall enter.

Vous entrerez, you will enter.

Ils entreront, they will enter.

Plural.

Nous serons entrés, we shall have entered.

Vous serez entrés, you will have entered.

Il seront entrés, they will have entered.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

Singular.

J'entrerais, I should enter.

Tu entrerais, thou wouldst enter.

Il entrerait, he would enter.

Comp. of Present.

Singular.

Je serais entré, I should have entered.

Tu serais entré, thou wouldst have entered.

Il serait entré, he would have entered.

Plural.

Nous entrerions, we should enter.

Vous entreriez, you would enter.

Ils entreraient, they would enter.

Plural.

Nous serions entrés, we should have entered.

Vous seriez entrés, you would have entered.

Ils seraient entrés, they would have entered.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

(Que) Singular.

J'entre, I may enter.

Tu entres, thou mayest enter.

Il entre, he may enter.

Comp. of Present.

(Que) Singular.

Je sois entré, I may have entered.

Tu sois entré, thou mayest have entered.

Il soit entré, he may have entered.

(Que)	Plural.	(Que)	Plural.
<i>Nous entrons</i> ,	we may enter.	<i>Nous soyons entrés</i> ,	we may have entered.
<i>Vous entriez</i> ,	you may enter.	<i>Vous soyez entrés</i> ,	you may have entered.
<i>Ils entrent</i> ,	they may enter.	<i>Ils soient entrés</i> ,	they may have entered.

	Imperfect.		Comp. of Imperfect.
(Que)	Singular.	(Que)	Singular.
<i>J'entrasse</i> ,	I might enter.	<i>Je fusse entré</i> ,	I might have entered.
<i>Tu entrasses</i> ,	thou mightest enter.	<i>Tu fusses entré</i> ,	thou mightest have entered.
<i>Il entrât</i> ,	he might enter.	<i>Il fût entré</i> ,	he might have entered.

(Que)	Plural.	(Que)	Plural.
<i>Nous entrassions</i> ,	we might enter.	<i>Nous fussions entrés</i> ,	we might have entered.
<i>Vous entrassiez</i> ,	you might enter.	<i>Vous fussiez entrés</i> ,	you might have entered.
<i>Ils entrassent</i> ,	they might enter.	<i>Ils fussent entrés</i> ,	they might have entered.

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Entre</i> , enter thou.	<i>Entrons</i> , let us enter.
<i>Qu'il entre</i> , let him enter.	<i>Entrez</i> , enter you.
	<i>Qu'ils entrent</i> , let him enter.

IRREGULAR VERBS.

§ 547. It has been already said, (§ 526,) that those Verbs are denominated Irregular, which deviate, in any important respects, from the models which have been presented in the several conjugations. The extent of irregularity is very various in different Verbs. We will not make any further remarks concerning the Irregular Verbs here, but will refer to Appendix M for a complete representation of all of them.

DEFECTIVE VERBS.

§ 548. The Defective Verbs of the French language will be found in catalogical connection with the Irregular Verbs, in Appendix M.

IMPERSONAL VERBS.

§ 549. It has been suggested, (§ 528,) that these should perhaps be called *Verbs of the third person*, or *Unipersonal Verbs*. Custom, however, has fixed the designation *Impersonal* so firmly that we retain it.

§ 550. There are two classes of Impersonal Verbs, those which are never used otherwise than impersonally, and those which are not only used in a peculiar manner as Impersonal, but have likewise the usual forms of conjugation as regular or irregular Verbs. The Verb *il faut* is an instance of the first class, and the verb *il pleut* of the second.

§ 551. The Impersonal Verb *il faut* is conjugated as follows:

INDICATIVE.

Pres. <i>Il faut</i> , it is necessary.	Comp. Pres. <i>Il a fallu</i> , it has been necessary.
Imp. <i>Il fallait</i> , it was necessary.	Comp. Imp. <i>Il avait fallu</i> , it had been necessary.
Perf. <i>Il fallut</i> , it was necessary.	Comp. Perf. <i>Il eut fallu</i> , it had been necessary.
Fut. <i>Il faudra</i> , it will be necessary.	Comp. Fut. <i>Il aura fallu</i> , it will have been necessary.

CONDITIONAL.

Pres. <i>Il faudrait</i> , it would be necessary.	Comp. Pres. <i>Il aurait fallu</i> , it would have been necessary.
---	--

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Pres. <i>Qu'il faille</i> , that it may be necessary.	Comp. Pres. <i>Qu'il ait fallu</i> , that it may have been necessary.
Imperf. <i>Qu'il fallût</i> , that it might be necessary.	Comp. Imperf. <i>Qu'il eût fallu</i> , that it might have been necessary.

§ 552. The Impersonal Verb *y avoir* is conjugated as follows :

INFINITIVE.

Pres. *y avoir*, there be.

Comp. Pres. *y avoir eu*, there have been.

INDICATIVE.

Pres. *Il y a*, there is.

Comp. Pres. *Il y a eu*, there has been.

Imp. *Il y avait*, there was.

Comp. Imp. *Il y avait eu*, there had been.

Perf. *Il y eut*, there was.

Comp. Perf. *Il y eut eu*, there had been.

Fut. *Il y aura*, there will be.

Comp. Fut. *Il y aura eu*, there will have been.

CONDITIONAL.

Pres. *Il y aurait*, there would be.

Comp. Pres. *Il y aurait eu*, there would have been.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Pres. *Qu'il y ait*, that there may be.

Comp. Pres. *Qu'il y ait eu*, that there may have been.

Imp. *Qu'il y eût*, that there might be.

Comp. Imp. *Qu'il y eût eu*, that there might have been.

§ 553. The Impersonal Verb *il pleut* is conjugated as follows :

INDICATIVE.

Pres. *Il pleut*, it rains.

Comp. Pres. *Il a plu*, it has rained.

Imp. *Il pleuvait*, it was raining.

Comp. Imp. *Il avait plu*, it had rained.

Perf. *Il plut*, it rained.

Comp. Perf. *Il eut plu*, it had rained.

Fut. *Il pleuvra*, it will rain.

Comp. Fut. *Il aura plu*, it will have rained.

CONDITIONAL.

Pres. *Il pleuvrait*, it would rain. Comp. Pres. *Il aurait plu*, it would have rained.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Pres. <i>Qu'il pleuve</i> , that it may rain.	Comp. Pres. <i>Qu'il ait plu</i> , that it may have rained.
Imp. <i>Qu'il plût</i> , that it might rain.	Comp. Imp. <i>Qu'il eût plu</i> , that it might have rained.

§ 554. Other Impersonal Verbs are conjugated by taking the third persons of all the tenses as they would be formed in complete conjugation. Thus are conjugated: *il bruîne*, it drizzles, *il éclaire*, it lightens, *il gèle*, it freezes, *il grêle*, it hails, *il neige*, it snows, *il tonne*, it thunders; all according to the analogy of the First Conjugation. *Il fait*, which is sometimes considered as an Impersonal (e. g. in such expressions as *il fait chaud*, it is hot), is conjugated by taking out the third persons of the Irregular Verb *faire*.

PRONOMINAL VERBS.

§ 555. It has been said, (§ 529,) that these are Verbs whose subject and object are the same person or thing, and which are, throughout nearly all their variations, immediately preceded by a Personal Pronoun as their object. The only cases in which they are not thus preceded, are the second person singular and the first and second person plural of the imperative mode, where the Personal Pronoun *follows* instead of preceding the Verb. (See the conjugation of *se repentir*, to repent, in § 559.)

§ 556. The compound tenses of all these Verbs are formed, as was suggested in § 532, by the aid of *être*, instead of *avoir*.

§ 557. Every Active Verb may be used as a Pronominal Verb: e. g. *il se loue*, he praises himself, *je me connois*, I know myself.

§ 558. Many Verbs are Pronominal in French, while the corresponding Verbs in English are Neuter ; e. g. *il se repent*, he repents, *je me meurs*, I am dying, *les livres se vendent bien*, the books sell well.

§ 559. The Pronominal Verb *se repentir*, to repent, will serve as a model for all Pronominal Verbs. It is conjugated as follows :

INFINITIVE.

Pres. *se repentir*, to repent.

Comp. of Pres. *s'être* $\left\{ \begin{array}{c} \textit{repenti} \\ \text{or} \\ \textit{repentie}, \end{array} \right\}$ to have repented.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. *se repentant*, repenting.

Past, *repenti*, repented.

Comp. of Pres. *s'étant* $\left\{ \begin{array}{c} \textit{repenti} \\ \text{or} \\ \textit{repentie}, \end{array} \right\}$ having repented.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

Singular.

Je me repens, I repent.

Tu te repens, thou repentest.

Il or elle se repent, he or she repents.

Plural.

Nous nous repentons, we repent.

Vous vous repentez, you repent.

Ils or elles se repentent, they repent.

Comp. of Present.

Singular.

Je me suis $\left\{ \begin{array}{c} \textit{repenti} \\ \text{or} \\ \textit{repentie}, \end{array} \right\}$ I have repented.
Tu t'es $\left\{ \begin{array}{c} \textit{repenti} \\ \text{or} \\ \textit{repentie}, \end{array} \right\}$ thou hast repented.
Il or elle est $\left\{ \begin{array}{c} \textit{repenti} \\ \text{or} \\ \textit{repentie}, \end{array} \right\}$ he or she has repented.

Plural.

Nous nous sommes { *repentis* } we have repented.
Vous vous êtes { or } you have repented.
Ils or elles se sont { *repenties*, } they have repented.

Imperfect.

Singular.

Je me repentai, I repented.
Tu te repentai, thou repentedst.
Il or elle se repentait, he or she repented.

Plural.

Nous nous repentions, we repented.
Vous vous repentiez, you repented.
Ils or elles se repentaient, they repented.

Comp. of Imperfect.

Singular.

Je m'étais { *repenti* } I had repented.
Tu l'étais { or } thou hadst repented.
Il or elle s'était { *repentie*, } he or she had repented.

Plural.

Nous nous étions { *repentis* } we had repented.
Vous vous étiez { or } you had repented.
Ils or elles s'étaient { *repenties*, } they had repented.

Perfect.

Singular.

Je me repentis, I repented.
Tu te repentis, thou repentedst.
Il or elle se repentit, he or she repented.

Plural.

Nous nous repentîmes, we repented.
Vous vous repentîtes, you repented.
Ils or elles se repentirent, they repented.

Comp. of Perfect.

Singular.

<i>Je me fus</i>	{	<i>repenti</i>	}	I had repented.
<i>Tu te fus</i>		or		thou hadst repented.
<i>Il or elle se fut</i>		<i>repentie,</i>		he or she had repented.

Plural.

<i>Nous nous fûmes</i>	{	<i>repentis</i>	}	we had repented.
<i>Vous vous fûtes</i>		or		you had repented.
<i>Ils or elles se furent</i>		<i>repenties,</i>		they had repented.

Future.

Singular.

<i>Je me repentirai,</i>	I shall repent.
<i>Tu te repentiras,</i>	thou wilt repent.
<i>Il or elle se repentira,</i>	he or she will repent.

Plural.

<i>Nous nous repentirons,</i>	we shall repent.
<i>Vous vous repentirez,</i>	you will repent.
<i>Ils or elles se repentiront,</i>	they will repent.

Comp. of Future.

Singular.

<i>Je me serai</i>	{	<i>repenti</i>	}	I shall have repented.
<i>Tu te seras</i>		or		thou wilt have repented.
<i>Il or elle se sera</i>		<i>repentie,</i>		he or she will have repented.

Plural.

<i>Nous nous serons</i>	{	<i>repentis</i>	}	we shall have repented.
<i>Vous vous serez</i>		or		you will have repented.
<i>Ils or elles se seront</i>		<i>repenties,</i>		they will have repented.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

Singular.

<i>Je me repentirais,</i>	I should repent.
<i>Tu te repentirais,</i>	thou wouldst repent.
<i>Il or elle se repentirait,</i>	he or she would repent.

Plural.

Nous nous repentirions, we should repent.

Vous vous repentiriez, you would repent.

Ils or elles se repentiraient, they would repent.

Comp. of Present.

Singular.

<i>Je me serais</i>	{	<i>repenti</i>	}	I should have repented.
<i>Tu te serais</i>		or		thou wouldst have repented.
<i>Il or elle se serait</i>		<i>repentie,</i>		he or she would have repented.

Plural.

<i>Nous nous serions</i>	{	<i>repentis</i>	}	we should have repented.
<i>Vous vous seriez</i>		or		you would have repented.
<i>Ils or elles se seraient</i>		<i>repenties,</i>		they would have repented.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

(*Que*) Singular.

Je me repente, I may repent.

Tu te repentes, thou mayest repent.

Il or elle se repent, he or she may repent.

(*Que*) Plural.

Nous nous repentions, we may repent.

Vous vous repentiez, you may repent.

Ils or elles se repentent, they may repent.

Comp. of Present.

(*Que*) Singular.

<i>Je me sois</i>	{	<i>repenti</i>	}	I may have repented.
<i>Tu te sois</i>		or		thou mayest have repented.
<i>Il or elle se soit</i>		<i>repentie,</i>		he or she may have repented.

(*Que*) Plural.

<i>Nous nous soyons</i>	{	<i>repentis</i>	}	we may have repented.
<i>Vous vous soyez</i>		or		you may have repented.
<i>Ils or elles se soient</i>		<i>repenties,</i>		they may have repented.

Imperfect.

(Que)

Singular.

Je me repentisse, I might repent.*Tu te repentisses*, thou mightest repent.*Il or elle se repentit*, he or she might repent.

(Que)

Plural.

Nous nous repentissions, we might repent.*Vous vous repentissiez*, you might repent.*Ils or elles se repentissent*, they might repent.

Comp. of Imperfect.

(Que)

Singular.

<i>Je me fusse</i>	{	<i>repenti</i>	}	I might have repented.
<i>Tu te fusses</i>		or		thou mightest have repented.
<i>Il or elle se fût</i>		<i>repentie,</i>		he or she might have repented.

(Que)

Plural.

<i>Nous nous fussions</i>	{	<i>repentis</i>	}	we might have repented.
<i>Vous vous fussiez</i>		or		you might have repented.
<i>Ils or elles se fussent</i>		<i>repenties,</i>		they might have repented.

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.

Repens-toi, repent thou.

<i>Qu'il</i>	{	<i>se repent,</i>	{	let him	}	repent.
or				or		
<i>Qu'elle</i>				let her		

Plural.

Repentons-nous, let us repent.*Repentez-vous*, repent thou.

<i>Qu'ils</i>	{	<i>se repentent,</i>	let them repent,
or			
<i>Qu'elles</i>			

DETERMINATION OF FORM.

I. VOICE.

§ 560. There is no occasion for particular remark concerning the employment of the forms which distinguish the Active and Passive Voices of Verbs in French, since the usage is the same as in English, and is very simple. No one who possesses even a very moderate acquaintance with general grammar can err on this point.

II. MODE.

A. *Infinitive.*

§ 561. In most respects, the use of the Infinitive in French corresponds with its use in English (comp. § 519); e. g. *voulez-vous me prêter votre livre?* will you lend me your book? *il promet de venir*, he promises to come.

§ 562. As to the use of the prepositions *à*, *de*, and *pour* before the Infinitive, it will be more proper to treat of it under the head of Prepositions than in this place. (See Chap. VI. *Particles*, and Appendix P.)

§ 563. Whenever in English a *present participle* is preceded by any other preposition than *in*, and *in* cannot be substituted for that preposition, the participle must be expressed in French by the Infinitive Mode; e. g. *cela ne vous donne pas le droit de m'insulter*, that does not give you the right of insulting me, *je suis las de travailler*, I am tired of working, *je me retiens d'écrire*, I keep myself from writing.

§ 564. Whenever in English a *present participle* is preceded by the preposition *in*, and the preposition and participle denote *occupation* or *use*, with immediate reference to a preceding Verb, the French use the *Infinitive Mode* preceded by *à*; e. g. *je m'occupe à écrire*, I occupy myself in writing, *il se plaît à dessiner*, he delights in drawing.

B. *Participles.*

§ 565. The *Present Participle* is often used in French as an adjective, and in such cases it is varied like an adjective, to suit the gender and number of the substantive to which it relates ; e. g. *c'est un homme charmant*, he is a charming man, *sa passion dominante*, his ruling passion.

§ 566. The *Present Participle*, in its proper use, denotes action, and is almost always, if not invariably, indeclinable ; e. g. *Caroline voyant une rose voulut la cueillir*, Caroline seeing a rose wished to pluck it, *des femmes craignant et aimant Dieu*, women fearing and loving God.

§ 567. We use the *Participle Present* after almost every preposition, but the French never use it after any preposition except *en* (comp. § 563) ; e. g. *je crois qu'en parlant à mon père*, etc., I think that in talking to my father, etc., *en étudiant on apprend une langue*, by studying we learn a language, *en rentrant chez moi j'ai rencontré ma femme*, on re-entering my house, I met my wife, *en revenant de la campagne*, in returning from the country.

§ 568. In English the *Present Participle* is often used without a preposition as a mere substantive ; e. g. I think that your speaking to my father would be useful to you. No such use of the participle is allowable in French. Some other turn must be given to the sentence ; e. g. *je crois que si vous parliez à mon père, vous vous en trouveriez bien*, I think that if you were to speak to my father, some advantage would accrue to you.

§ 569. In general, in French, the use of the *Present Participle* is avoided as much as possible. It is used in a great many cases in English where another turn is preferable in French. It can never be employed in French with an article or a pronoun. In English we say : after *his having* given us that account, he burst into tears ; the French would say, perhaps : *après nous avoir fait ce détail, il fondit en larmes*. There are also other modes of turning this sentence

in French. We say : *my being* poor and *your being* rich is no reason for your insulting me ; the French might say : *parceque je suis pauvre et que vous êtes riche, il ne s'ensuit pas que vous deviez m'insulter.*

§ 570. The *Past Participle* is often used in French as an adjective, and in such cases it is varied like an adjective, to suit the gender and number of the substantive to which it relates ; e. g. *un homme proscrit*, a proscribed man, *une femme proscrire*, a proscribed woman, *des fleurs recherchées*, flowers much sought after.

§ 571. The *Past Participle* conjugated with *être* in *Passive* forms always agrees with the *subject* of the Verb in gender and number ; e. g. *mon père est chéri et respecté*, my father is loved and respected, *la nuit sera bientôt passée*, the night will soon be over, *ils sont fort estimés*, they are very much esteemed, *ces femmes sont aimées*, these women are loved.

§ 572. The *Past Participle* of a *Transitive Verb* conjugated with *avoir* in Compound Tenses always agrees in gender and number with the *object* of the Verb when that object is *direct* and *precedes* the Participle ; e. g. *la lettre que j'ai reçue*,* the letter which I have received, *les livres que vous m'avez prêtés*, the books which you have lent me, *les pommes que vous avez envoyées*, the apples which you have sent.

§ 573. The *Past Participle* conjugated with *avoir* in Compound Tenses is *never* varied at all when the object of the Verb is *indirect* ; e. g. *la lettre dont je vous ai parlé*, the letter which I have mentioned to you, *les profits auxquels il a participé*, the profits which he has shared.

§ 574. The *Past Participle* of a *Transitive Verb* conjugated with *avoir* in Compound Tenses is *never* varied at all when the object of the Verb *follows* the Participle ; e. g. *j'ai lu la lettre*, I have read the letter, *vous avez instruit ces personnes*,

* Here *que* is the direct object of the Verb, and its gender and number are of course the same as those of its antecedent, *lettre*. So in all like cases.

you have instructed these persons, *ma mère a reçu les pommes*, my mother has received the apples.

§ 575. The *Past Participle* of an *Intransitive Verb* is *never* varied when conjugated with *avoir* in its Compound Tenses, inasmuch as it can have no object; e. g. *cette femme a été malade*, that woman has been sick, *ils ont été gais*, they have been merry, *elles ont dormi*, they have slept.

§ 576. The *Past Participle* is *never* varied in *Impersonal* forms; e. g. *les chaleurs qu'il a fait*, the heats which have occurred, *les dépenses qu'il y a eu*, the expenses which have been incurred.

§ 577. The *Past Participle* is *never* varied when it is *immediately* followed by an *infinitive* which is governed by the Participle and which itself governs the object in the expression; e. g. *la montre que j'aurais voulu acheter*, the watch which I could have wished to purchase, *les maisons que j'ai fait bâtir*, the houses which I have had built, *il lui est allé parler*, he has gone to talk with him. This is the case even when the infinitive is understood; e. g. *je lui ai rendu tous les services que j'ai pu (lui rendre)*, I have rendered him all the services I could, *elle ne s'est pas donné toutes les peines qu'elle aurait dû (se donner)*, she has not taken so much pains as she ought.*

§ 578. The *Past Participle* of an *Intransitive Verb* conjugated with *être* instead of *avoir* in its Compound Tenses (§§ 532, 546, and Appendix L,) always agrees with the *subject* of the Verb in gender and number; e. g. *ma sœur était*

* It is important to notice, that in all cases of this nature, when the Participle is not varied, the object is governed, as said above, by the infinitive and not by the Participle. If the object be governed by the Participle, the Participle is varied. Hence there is quite a nice distinction in French between expressions of very different signification. E. g. *Je l'ai vu peindre* means, *I saw her portrait taken*; but *Je l'ai vue peindre* means, *I saw her painting*.—*Je l'ai entendu chanter* means, *I have heard it (a song for instance) sung*; but *Je l'ai entendue chanter* means, *I have heard her (a singer) sing*.

partie, my sister had set out, *ils étaient déjà arrivés*, they had already arrived, *quand elles seront descendues*, when they shall have come down.

§ 579. The *Past Participle* in the Compound Tenses of *Pronominal Verbs*, which Tenses, it has been stated, are formed by the aid of the Auxiliary Verb *être* instead of *avoir*, (§§ 532, 556, and 559,) follows regularly the rules laid down in §§ 572, 573, 574, concerning the Participles of Compound Tenses formed with *avoir*. E. g. In the following expression: *ma sœur se serait excusée*, my sister would have excused herself, the Participle is varied, because *se* is a *direct* object and *precedes* the Participle (§ 571). In the following expression: *la faute dont on s'est repenti*, the fault of which one has repented, the Participle is not varied, because the object is *indirect* (§ 573). In the following expression: *ils se seraient attiré la haine*, they would have attracted hatred to themselves, *se* is an *indirect* object, and the *direct* object, *haine*, comes *after* the Participle, which therefore is not varied (§ 574). Further examples are: *la haine que votre frère se serait attirée*, the hatred which your brother would have drawn upon himself, *les ennemis que votre sœur se serait attirés*, the enemies which your sister would have drawn upon herself.

C. *Indicative.*

§ 580. The *Indicative Mode* is, in general, employed precisely as in English (comp. § 519); e. g. *je vous vois*, I see you, *il m'a dit*, he told me.

§ 581. The most difficult question respecting this mode in French is, in what cases it is to be used after the conjunction *que*, and in what cases the *Subjunctive* is requisite. The use of the *Subjunctive* will be considered under its proper head. As to the *Indicative*, the rule is, that it must be employed after *que* in all cases when the preceding verb or adjective denotes *certainty* or *strong belief*, and the expression is *not interrogative* or *negative*; e. g. *nous vîmes qu'ils nous trompaient*, we

saw that they deceived us, *nous sentîmes que nous avions affaire à un habile homme*, we saw that we had to do with an able man, *je crois qu'il viendra*, I believe he will come.

§ 582. It has been said (§ 569,) that the present participle is not employed so much in French as in English. The Indicative Mode with the relative pronoun *qui* generally takes the place of the English participle in such expressions as, *je le vois qui joue*, I see him playing, *il la trouva qui pleurait*, he found her weeping, *je les ai rencontrés qui couraient la poste*, I met them riding post.

D. Conditional.

§ 583. The Conditional Mode is employed whenever a clear *affirmation* is expressed by the Verb under a *condition* expressed in other words, and the idea of *should* or *would* in English belongs to the Verb; e. g. *il viendrait s'il était assez hardi*, he would come if he were bold enough, *vous partiriez si je le voulais*, you would set off if I wished you to, *quand l'avare posséderait le monde il ne serait pas content*, were the miser to possess the world he would not be contented.

§ 584. The Conditional Mode is employed after *si* or *quand* when *si* or *quand* denotes *doubt* or a *supposition*, and there is a precedent or subsequent *condition* or *affirmation*; e. g. *demandez-lui s'il serait venu avec nous*, *supposé qu'il n'eût pas eu affaire*, ask him whether he would have come with us, had he not been busy, *quand l'avare posséderait le monde il ne serait pas content*, were the miser to possess the world, he would not be contented.

§ 585. The Conditional Mode is often used with *que* in an exclamation, to express a *wish*; e. g. *que je serais content de réussir dans cette affaire!* how glad I should be to succeed in this affair!

§ 586. The Conditional Mode is often employed in other cases, where the idea of *might*, *could*, *would*, or *should*, is expressed in English; e. g. *croiriez-vous votre fils ingrat?*

could you think your son ungrateful ? *l'auriez-vous soupçonné d'un tel vice ?* would you have suspected him of such a vice ? *quelle raison pourrait m'empêcher d'aller vous voir ?* what cause could prevent me from coming to see you ?

§ 587. The Indicative Mode is employed in French where in English a tense corresponding with the French Conditional is employed, in such forms of expression as, *si votre frère venait avant cinq heures, priez-le de m'attendre*, if your brother should come before 5 o'clock, request him to wait for me.

E. Subjunctive.

§ 588. The Subjunctive Mode is employed after *qui, que, dont, où*, and any relative pronoun, when they are used to connect a Verb with an adjective in the superlative degree ; e. g. *vous parlez du plus grand roi qui ait jamais existé*, you are speaking of the greatest king who ever lived, *c'est la plus belle femme que je connaisse*, she is the most beautiful woman I know, *le plus joli jardin qu'il y ait dans ces pays-là*, the finest garden that there is in these parts, *le trésor le plus précieux dont on puisse jouir*, the most precious treasure that one can enjoy.

§ 589. The Subjunctive Mode is employed after *qui, que, dont, où*, and any relative pronoun, when they are used to connect a Verb with a *negative* expression, such as *personne*, etc. or with a *restrictive* word, such as *seul, unique, premier, dernier*, etc. ; e. g. *vous ne trouverez personne qui vous soit plus sincèrement attaché*, you will not find any body who is more sincerely attached to you, *il n'y a pas un homme qui soit plus estimé que lui*, there is not a man who is more esteemed than he, *c'est le seul homme qui nous ait obligés*, he is the only man who has obliged us, *c'est l'unique moyen qui puisse les convaincre de leur folie*, it is the only means which can convince them of their folly, *c'est le dernier remède auquel vous puis-*

siez avoir recours, it is the last remedy to which you can have recourse.

§ 590. The pronouns, *quel*, *lequel*, and *quelque*, in the sense of *whatever* or *whichever*, followed by *que*, require the Subjunctive Mode ; e. g. *quelles que soient vos affaires, venez*, whatever your business may be, come, *lequel des trois que vous choisissiez, peu m'importe*, it is of little importance to me which of the three you choose, *quelques arbres qu'on puisse avoir*, whatever trees they may have, *quelques efforts que vous fassiez, vous ne réussirez point*, whatever efforts you may make, you will never succeed.

§ 591. The Subjunctive Mode is employed with *que* (Comp. § 581) after all Verbs, Adjectives, or Participles, denoting doubt, uncertainty, fear, wish, permission, prohibition, or any strong feeling ; e. g. *je doute qu'il vienne*, I doubt whether he will come, *je crains qu'il n'y aille*, I fear that he will go there, *il est possible qu'elle parte sans vous le dire*, it is possible she will go away without telling you of it, *je voudrais qu'ils fussent partis*, I would they were gone, *Dieu a permis qu'elle soit tombée tout d'un coup dans la misère*, God permitted her to fall at once into wretchedness, *la pluie empêcha qu'on ne s'allât promener*, the rain prevented our going out to walk, *je suis surpris qu'ils vous aient parlé de la sorte*, I am surprised that they have talked to you in that manner, *j'ai besoin d'un jardin qui soit bien situé*, I need a garden well situated. N.B. This rule applies to both *affirmative* and *negative* forms of expression.

§ 592. The Subjunctive Mode is employed with *que* even after Verbs (or other words) which have *not* the meanings specified in the preceding section, whenever they are used *negatively* or *interrogatively* so as to indicate *uncertainty* (comp. § 581) ; e. g. *je ne crois pas qu'il puisse réussir*, I do not believe he can succeed, *vous ne vous persuadiez pas que les choses pussent tourner si mal*, you did not persuade yourself that things could turn out so ill, *pensez-vous que la paix se*

fasse cet hiver ? do you think peace will be made this winter ?
il n'est pas certain que vous puissiez lui parler, it is not certain that you can speak to him, *quel est l'insensé qui tient pour sûr qu'il vivra demain ?* where is the madman who holds it certain that he shall be alive to-morrow ?

§ 593. The Subjunctive Mode is employed with *que* after the impersonal Verb *il faut* ; e. g. *il faut que nous ayons de l'argent*, we must have money, *il faut que je vous sois bien attaché*, it must be that I am very much attached to you.

§ 594. The Subjunctive Mode is employed with *que* after the adverb *quelque*, qualifying an adjective, in such expressions as the following : *quelque belle qu'elle puisse être*, however beautiful she may be, *quelque riches qu'elles soient*, however rich they may be.

§ 595. The Subjunctive Mode is employed with *que* after the Adverb *si* qualifying an Adjective, in such expressions as the following : *elle n'est pas si prudente qu'elle ne fasse jamais de faute*, she is not so prudent that she never commits a fault, *ils n'étaient pas si généreux qu'ils donnassent tout leur bien*, they were not so generous as to give all their property.

§ 596. The Subjunctive Mode is employed with *que* after certain adverbial expressions, while after certain other adverbial expressions the Indicative Mode is required. For distinct lists of these two classes of adverbial expressions, see Appendix N.

§ 597. The Subjunctive Mode is employed with *que* in the second clause of a supposition commencing with *si* ; e. g. *si vous entrez dans son jardin et que vous y fassiez le moindre dégât*, if you enter his garden and commit the least waste there, *si vous y allez et que vous y restiez*, if you go there and remain there.

§ 598. The Subjunctive Mode is often employed without any word or clause expressed on which it depends, such as are mentioned in § 591 ; but there is always such a word or clause understood. E. g. *qu'il se soit oublié jusqu'à ce point !*

that he should have forgotten himself to such a degree (i. e. *I am surprised* that he should, etc.)! *puissiez-vous n'avoir jamais besoin des méchants!* may you never have need of the rascals (i. e. *I wish* that you may never, etc.)!

F. Imperative.

§ 599. The Imperative Mode is employed in French exactly as in English. It will not be necessary, therefore, to enter into any detailed representation of the principles which regulate its use.

§ 600. A Compound of the Imperative of many Verbs is used to express an injunction that a certain thing should be done previously to the happening of another; e. g. *ayez diné avant que je revienne*, have dined before I return.

III. TENSE.

§ 601. The French have but one form of the *Present* Tense Indicative to correspond with the three English forms, *I write, I do write, I am writing*. They cannot say, *je suis écrivant*; and *je fais écrire* means something very different from *I do write*. *J'écris* is the only expression meaning *I write*.

§ 602. The general use of the Present Tense Indicative is the same in French as in English, i. e. it denotes that something is now passing. The cases in which usage respecting it differs in the two languages will be pointed out.

§ 603. In French, as in English, the Present Tense Indicative* is often employed instead of the Perfect in lively description; e. g. *les ennemis escaladent les murs et s'emparent des portes*, the enemy scale the walls and take possession of the gates, *je m'avance pour le punir, et nous commençons un rude combat*, I advance to punish him, and we begin a rough combat.

* When the word *Compound* is not expressly added to the name of a Tense, the *Simple* Tense is intended.

§ 604. In French, as in English, the Present Tense Indicative is often employed instead of the Future, in such expressions as, *je pars demain*, I (shall) go to-morrow, *la poste arrive ce soir*, the mail arrives (will arrive) this evening.

§ 605. When a Verb in French is preceded by the conjunction *si*, in the sense of *supposing that*, the Present Tense Indicative is always used, even in cases in which it would seem natural to use the Future Tense; e. g. *sil vient je vous dirai*, if he shall come I will tell you, *j'irai demain à la campagne s'il fait* (not *fera*) *beau*, I shall go into the country to-morrow, if it is fair weather, *si vous me prêtez votre livre, je vous prêterai le mien*, if you will lend me your book I will lend you mine.*

§ 606. When a Verb in French is preceded by the particle *quand*, meaning *when*, and is followed by a Verb in the Present Tense Indicative, it is itself put in the Present Tense, as in English; e. g. *quand il vient il est toujours pressé*, when he comes he is always in a hurry. But, when the Verb which follows is in the Future Tense, the first Verb must be put in the Future Tense likewise, though in English it is still put in the Present; e. g. *quand vous sortirez, vous ferez bien de prendre un parapluie*, when you go out you will do well to take an umbrella, *quand je saurai dessiner, je ferai votre portrait*, when I know how to draw, I will take your portrait. N. B. So with any conjunction or particle meaning *when*, such as *aussitôt que*, *dès que*, etc.

§ 607. The greatest difficulty, perhaps, respecting the tenses of French Verbs is to determine in what cases the *Imperfect* and *Perfect* Tenses of the Indicative respectively are to be employed to denote past time. The rules which follow will determine this with considerable, if not entire, precision.

§ 608. I. The *Imperfect* Tense must be employed when-

* We may say, indeed, *je ne sais s'il viendra*, I do not know whether he will come or not, *je ne sais s'il le pourrait*, I do not know whether he can do it or not, but *si* here has not the sense of *supposition*.

ever in English we can use the Present Participle of the Verb with the Imperfect Tense of the auxiliary verb *to be*, i. e. when the Verb denotes a Present with respect to something past ; e. g. *je plantais des pois hier quand il arriva*, I was planting peas yesterday when he arrived.

§ 609. II. The Imperfect Tense must be employed when we wish to express *frequency, habit, continuance, or constant character* ; e. g. *alors je mangeais beaucoup de sucre*, then I was in the habit of eating a great deal of sugar, *j'y allais souvent*, I used to go there often, *ils étaient séditeux et avarés*, they were seditious and avaricious.

§ 610. III. The Imperfect Tense must be employed when the Verb is preceded by the conjunction *si*, if, and followed by another Verb in the Conditional Present ; e. g. *si j'avais plus d'amis je serais heureux*, if I had more friends I should be happier.

§ 611. IV. The *Perfect* Tense must be employed when we wish to denote an isolated action entirely past ; e. g. *il naquit et il mourut*, he was born and he died.

§ 612. V. The Perfect Tense must be employed in speaking of something begun and finished (wholly comprised) in a time which is completely past and definitely specified ; e. g. *j'allai à la comédie hier*, I went to the comedy yesterday, *nous passâmes la nuit dans ce village et nous partîmes le lendemain pour Boston*, we passed the night in that village and on the morrow set out for Boston.*

§ 613. The *Future* Tense Indicative is generally used in French just as in English : e. g. *la philosophie éclairera les hommes ; ils cesseront enfin d'être tigres*, philosophy will en-

* All actions which occur and are finished at the time when the scene is laid by the writer or speaker are to be expressed in the *Perfect* Tense ; those which existed before that time and are supposed to continue during it, are to be expressed in the *Imperfect* Tense. There must be a past interval of at least one day to justify the use of the Perfect Tense. (Comp. § 618.)

lighten men ; they will at last cease to be tigers. (But Comp. § 606.)

§ 614. In regard to the *Tenses of the Subjunctive*, the cases in which the Subjunctive is used both in English and in French present no difficulty. The most important question as to these Tenses relates to the use of the Subjunctive by the French when the English use the Indicative or Conditional. The following rules will determine what Tense of the Subjunctive is to be employed in French for any particular Tense of the Indicative or Conditional in English.

§ 615. I. The English *Present* and *Future* of the *Indicative* are expressed by the *Present Subjunctive* in French ; e. g. *je ne crois pas qu'il le fasse exprès*, I do not believe that he *does* it (or *will do* it) on purpose.

§ 616. II. The other Tenses of the Indicative or Conditional in English are expressed in French by the Imperfect Subjunctive ; e. g. *quoique je ne crusse pas ce qu'il me disait*, though I did not believe what he told me, *je ne savais pas que vous fussiez amis*, I did not know that you were friends.

§ 617. The use of the Compound Tenses in French corresponds generally with that of the Compound Tenses in English. The only very important exception to this statement is the Compound of the Present, commonly called the Preterite Indefinite.

§ 618. The Compound of the Present, or the Preterite Indefinite Tense, is used to denote an action which happened at a time past but not specified (as in English), or at a time past but connected by the form of expression with the present ; e. g. *je l'ai toujours dit*, I have always said it, *j'ai déjeuné ce matin avec votre sœur*, I breakfasted this morning with your sister, *j'ai eu la fièvre au commencement du printemps*, I had a fever at the beginning of the spring, *nous avons eu bien des révolutions pendant ce siècle*, we have had many revolutions

during this century, *j'ai vu votre frère il y a quelques jours*, I saw your brother some days ago.*

§ 619. The Compound of the Present, or the Preterite Indefinite, is sometimes used instead of a Future just at hand; e. g. *avez-vous bientôt fini ?* shall you soon have done? *Oui, j'ai fini dans le moment*, yes, I shall have done in a moment.

§ 620. The use of the other Compound Tenses, both in the Indicative and Subjunctive Modes, is regulated by the same principles as those which have been laid down concerning the corresponding Simple Tenses. (See §§ 607—617.)

§ 621. In English the auxiliaries *shall* and *will* are sometimes omitted, so as to make a Tense which is really Future appear otherwise; e. g. when *we have done it*, we will go there. In such cases the Future must always be used in French; e. g. *quand nous l'aurons fait, nous y irons*.

IV. NUMBER AND PERSON.

§ 622. The general rule is, as in English, that the Verb must agree with its nominative in Number and Person; e. g. *je parle*, I speak, *ma sœur demeure ici*, my sister lives here, *les enfans sont gais*, the children are gay.

§ 623. When there are two or more singular nominatives to the same Verb, the Verb, as in English, must be put in the Plural Number; e. g. *mon oncle et ma tante sont malades*, my uncle and aunt are sick, *sa douceur, sa politesse, et sa franchise lui font trouver des amis partout où il va*, his mildness, politeness, and frankness cause him to find friends wherever he goes.

* In all these examples but the first and fourth the use of this Compound Tense is not allowable in English. In the second, the expression *this morning* connects the occurrences with the present day. (Comp. note to § 612.) In the third and fourth, the *spring* and *century* are not yet finished, and this circumstance connects the occurrences with the present time. In the last, the expression *some days ago* has the same effect.

§ 624. When there are several singular nominatives followed by the word *tout*, *rien*, or *ce*, referring to them all, the Verb must be put in the Singular Number, to agree with *tout*, *rien*, or *ce*; e. g. *biens, dignités, honneurs, tout disparaît à la mort*, riches, dignities, honors, everything vanishes at death, *gestes, soupirs, regards, pensées, rien n'échappe à la jalousie*, gestures, sighs, looks, thoughts, nothing escapes jealousy, *perfidies, noirceurs, incendies, massacres, ce n'est là qu'une faible image*, treacheries, enormities, conflagrations, massacres, all this is but a feeble representation.

§ 625. With a noun of multitude it is sometimes allowable in English to put the Verb in the Plural Number, but in French it must always be put in the Singular Number; e. g. *le public n'aime pas cela*, the public do not like that, *le peuple est las d'être traité de la sorte*, the people are tired of being treated in such a manner, *la foule faisait un grand bruit*, the crowd were making a great noise.*

§ 626. After adverbs of quantity, such as *beaucoup*, *bien*, *peu*, *tant*, etc., followed by a substantive in the Plural, the Verb must be put in the Plural; e. g. *beaucoup de personnes sont là*, many persons are there, *bien des philosophes se sont trompés*, many philosophers have deceived themselves.

§ 627. When *ce* is used as nominative to the Verb *être*, the Verb may be put in the Plural Number if the nominative after *être* be Plural; e. g. *ce sont les vices qui dégradent l'homme*, it is the vices that degrade man, *ce furent vos ancé-*

* Hence *on* requires a Singular Verb when it is a noun of multitude; e. g. *on dit*, people say. There is one important exception to the rule laid down above, and that is, that when the noun of multitude is followed by another substantive in the Plural, to which the noun of multitude relates, the Verb must be in the Plural; e. g. *un petit nombre d'amis lui restèrent*, a small number of friends remained to him, *la plupart des dames furent malheureuses*, the greater part of the ladies were unhappy. (Comp. § 331.) *La plupart* by itself requires the Verb to be in the Plural; e. g. *la plupart sont d'avis*, the greater part are of opinion.

tres qui, it was your ancestors who, *sont-ce les Anglais qui ont fait cela*, is it the English who have done this? *

§ 628. The Pronominal expression, *l'un et l'autre*, used as a separate nominative, or, like an adjective, agreeing with a nominative singular, requires that the Verb should be in the Plural number, or, at least, this is considered the best construction; e. g. *l'un et l'autre sont bons*, both are good, *l'un et l'autre consul suivirent son étendard*, both consuls followed his standard.

§ 629. The Pronominal expression, *ni l'un ni l'autre*, used as a separate nominative, or, like an adjective, agreeing with a nominative singular, requires that the Verb should be in the Singular Number, whenever what is expressed can apply to only one of the two subjects; otherwise it is allowable to put the Verb either in the Singular or Plural, though the former is preferable: e. g. *ni l'un ni l'autre n'est mon père*, neither is my father, *ni l'un ni l'autre consul ne suivit son étendard*, neither consul followed his standard, *ni l'un ni l'autre n'a fait son devoir* (or *n'ont fait leur devoir*), neither has done his duty.

§ 630. Two or more Singular nominatives connected by the conjunction *ou* require that the Verb should be in the Singular; e. g. *le seigle ou l'orge qui est dans le champ*, the rye or barley which is in the field. But if either of the nominatives thus connected be Plural, the Verb must be in the Plural likewise; e. g. *le maître ou ses gens viendront demain*, the master or his people will come to-morrow.

§ 631. When two or more Singular nominatives are preceded and connected by the conjunction *ni*, and what is expressed by the Verb may apply to both subjects at once, the Verb must be put, not in the Singular, as in English, but in the Plural; e. g. *ni le seigle ni l'orge ne se vendent cher*, neither the rye nor the barley sells dear. But, in case the thing

* In English, it will be noticed, the Verb is put in the Singular in such cases.

expressed can apply only to one of the subjects at a time, the Verb must be put in the Singular ; e. g. *ni Richard ni Guillaume n'est mon frère*, neither Richard nor William is my brother.

§ 632. When there are several nominatives preceded by *non seulement* or some equivalent expression, and another nominative in the Singular follows preceded by *mais*, the Verb must be put in the Singular ; e. g. *non-seulement toutes ses richesses et tous ses honneurs, mais toute sa vertu s'évanouit*, not only all his riches and all his honors, but all his virtue vanishes.

§ 633. When a Verb in French has two or more nominatives of different Persons, it is put in the Plural Number and in the Person corresponding with that nominative which ranks foremost in this respect, the first Person taking precedence of the second and third, and the second of the third ; e. g. *vous et moi, nous sommes pauvres*, you and I are poor, *vous et votre ami, vous viendrez avec moi*, you and your friend will come with me. (Comp. § 481.)

§ 634. When a Verb has the relative pronoun *qui* for its subject, it is put in the same Number and Person as the substantive or pronoun to which it relates ; e. g. *est-ce moi qui ai dit cette nouvelle ?* is it I who have told this news ? *est-ce nous qui l'avons voulu ?* is it we who desired it ? *ceux qui aiment sincèrement la vertu sont heureux*, those who sincerely love virtue are happy.

POSITION.

§ 635. The general rule in French, as in English, is that the Verb stands after the subject and before the object ; e. g. *je vois l'homme*, I see the man, *nous étudions la langue Française*, we are studying the French language. (Comp. §§ 284, 457.)

§ 636. In directly interrogative sentences the Verb (or the auxiliary, if the Verb be in a compound tense,) comes before

the subject, and after the object when there is a direct object ; e. g. *que dit-on ?* what do they say ? *quel objet voyez-vous ?* what object do you see ? *quel objet avez-vous vu ?* what object have you seen ? *viendra-t-elle ?* will she come ? (Comp. §§ 287, 290, 458, 461.) Some other exceptions to the rule in § 635 may be seen in §§ 285 seq., and 460 seq.

Additional Peculiarities.

§ 637. The English present participle governed by a preposition which cannot be rendered in French by *en* (comp. § 567,) is always rendered by the infinitive mode ; e. g. *lassé de vivre*, tired of living, *las de travailler*, weary of working.

§ 638. The French avoid the use of the passive voice as much as possible. For this purpose a reflexive form is very often given to the Verb ; e. g. *le vin se vend trois chelins la bouteille*, the wine is sold at three shillings a bottle, *il se trouve des gens que rien ne peut contenter*, there are people whom nothing can content, *cela ne peut se faire*, that cannot be done. For this purpose, too, some other turn is often given to a clause ; e. g. for the English, *the laws must be obeyed*, the French would say, *on doit obéir aux lois*, or, *il faut obéir aux lois*, or, *obéissons aux lois*, or, *nous devons obéir aux lois*.

§ 639. When the second person singular imperative of a Verb of the first conjugation comes before *en* or *y* belonging directly to the Verb, the letter *s* is always added to the form of the Verb ; e. g. *donnes-en à ton frère*, give some of it to thy brother, *portes-y tes livres*, carry thy books thither, *vas-y*, go thither.

§ 640. The French often make use of the simple present of the Verb *être* where we should perhaps expect to find the compound present ; e. g. *il y a un mois que le vent est* (not *a été*) *à l'est*, the wind has been east for a month, *je suis* (not *j'ai été*) *depuis dix jours en route*, I have been on my journey

for ten days, *il y a plus d'un an que je suis* (not *j'ai été*) *malade*, I have been sick for more than a year.*

§ 641. The English auxiliary words *do, did, will, shall, would, should, can, could, may, might*, are not expressed by any separate word in French; e. g. *I did love* is expressed in French by *j'aimais* or *j'aimai*, *I will love*, by *j'aimerai*, etc. (Comp. § 601.) But sometimes these same words are not mere auxiliaries, and then they must be separately expressed in French; e. g. *nous ne devrions jamais nous écarter du sentier de la vertu*, we should never swerve from the path of virtue. In this example *should* is not a mere *sign* of a particular tense, but denotes *duty, obligation*.

§ 642. The preposition *entre* is sometimes used with nominal or reflexive Verbs (see §§ 529 and 555), being placed between the personal pronoun and the Verb so as to form part of the Verb; e. g. *s'entre-tuer*, to kill one another. This preposition makes the Verb refer to more than one person; e. g. *ils s'entre-tuent*, they kill one another. The Verb is conjugated as usual, excepting that *entre* is always prefixed to the Verb by means of a hyphen.† In the compound tenses *entre* is prefixed to the participle; e. g. *ils se sont entre-querellés*, they have quarrelled with one another.

§ 643. There are four neuter Verbs which become reflected by the addition of the particle *en* between the personal pronoun and the Verb, viz. *s'en aller*, to go away, *s'en courir*, to run away, *s'en fuir*, to flee away, *s'en retourner*, to return. The mode of conjugating these Verbs may be seen from the

* It may be observed that in all such cases there is an idea of *continuance to the present time*. When this idea is not involved, the simple present is not used; e. g. *il y a dix ans qu'il a voyagé*, it is six years *since* he has travelled.

† In case the Verb begins with a vowel, the final *e* of *entre* is elided and the apostrophe is used, which (§ 201) takes the place of the hyphen; e. g. *s'entr'aimer*, to love one another, *s'entr'aider*, to help one another.

example of *s'en aller* among the irregular Verbs. (See Appendix M, Verb *aller*.)

§ 644. Forms of the Verb *être* are sometimes used instead of forms of the Verb *aller*. *Je fus* is used for *j'allai*; *j'ai été* for *je suis allé*; *j'avais été* for *j'étais allé*; and *j'aurais été* for *je serais allé*; e. g. *je fus hier à l'opéra*, I went yesterday to the opera, *j'aurais été vous voir*, I should have gone to see you.

§ 645. The Impersonal Verb *c'est*, in its various tenses, is used (1.) before a substantive, with an article or an adjective, (2.) before an adjective with an adverb or its equivalent, (3.) before a pronoun, (4.) before a Verb in the infinitive mode, and (5.) before an adverb alone; e. g. (1.) *c'est un médecin*, he is a physician, *c'était le capitaine*, it was the captain, *c'est une jolie femme*, she is a pretty woman, *c'était une femme charmante*, she was a charming woman, (2.) *ce serait trop imprudent*, that would be too imprudent, *c'est fait à merveille*, it is done remarkably well, (3.) *c'est moi*, it is I, *c'est elle qui me l'a dit*, it was she who told me of it, *c'est nous qui sommes les agresseurs*, it is we who are the aggressors, (4.) *ce qui me plait*, *c'est de vous voir content*, what pleases me is to see you contented, *c'est vouloir se perdre que d'attaquer ces gens-là*, to attack those fellows, is to wish to destroy one's self, (5.) *c'est assez*, it is enough, *c'est demain qu'il doit venir*, it is to-morrow that he is to come.

§ 646. The impersonal Verb *il est* is commonly used (1.) before a substantive without an article, and (2.) before an adjective without a substantive; e. g. (1.) *il est tems de dîner*, it is time to dine, (2.) *il est fâcheux d'être malade*, it is vexatious to be sick.*

§ 647. When a form of the impersonal verb *c'est* is followed by a substantive or pronoun in the third person plural,

* Yet the French say, familiarly, *c'est vrai*, it is true, *c'est bon*, it is good, etc., when these expressions stand alone, by way of answer or brief remark.

the Verb may be either singular or plural, the pronoun *ce* being singular at any rate (Comp. § 627) ; but if the expression be interrogative the Verb *must* be in the singular. E. g. *c'est* or *ce sont les loups qui ont tué les moutons?* it is the wolves who have killed the sheep, *c'est eux* or *ce sont eux qui ont gagné la victoire*, it is they who have gained the victory, *est-ce les loups qui ont tué les moutons?* is it the wolves who have killed the sheep?

§ 648. The Impersonal Verb *il est* is commonly used in speaking of the hours of the day ; e. g. *il est une heure*, it is one o'clock, *il est dix heures*, it is ten o'clock. Sometimes, however, in answering a question concerning the hour of the day, *c'est* is employed, but perhaps not very properly.

§ 649. The Impersonal Verb *il est* is sometimes employed with a plural substantive so as to mean *there are* ; e. g. *il est des gens qui ne sont jamais contents*, there are people who are never contented, *il est des figures d'hommes et de femmes pour qui la toilette ne peut rien*, there are figures of men and women for which the toilet can do nothing. *Il est*, in such cases, corresponds with the Impersonal Verb *il y a*, which might be used instead. (Comp. § 650.)

§ 650. The Impersonal Verb *il y a* is never used except in the third person singular of its various tenses, and is followed either by a singular or a plural substantive ; e. g. *il y a un homme*, there is a man, *il y avait des femmes*, there were women, *il y aura trop de poivre dans ce ragoût*, there will be too much pepper in this ragoût, *il y a de bonnes gens dans tous les pays*, there are good people in all countries.

§ 651. In affirmations respecting *time*, *number*, *measure*, *distance*, we commonly use the Impersonal Verb *it is* ; the French, in such cases, always use the Impersonal Verb *il y a*, when the time mentioned is *past*. E. g. *il y a quatre mois que je suis ici*, it is four months since I came here, *il y a vingt ans qu'il est mort*, it is twenty years since he died, *il y a vingt*

milles de Boston à Andover, it is twenty miles from Boston to Andover. (Comp. § 640.)

§ 652. Questions in English beginning with *how far*, *how long*, *how much*, *how many*, etc., and followed by *is it*, *is there*, *are there*, etc., are rendered into French by the use of the adverb *combien* with the Impersonal Verb *il y a* in its interrogative form, *y a-t-il* (see App. O, I.); e. g. *combien y a-t-il d'ici à Boston?* how far is it from here to Boston? *combien de sable y a-t-il dans la charrette?* how much sand is there in the cart? *combien de villes y a-t-il en France?* how many cities are there in France? *combien y a-t-il que vous avez commencé?* how long is it since you began?

§ 653. The Impersonal Verb *il fait*, in its various tenses, is used in a peculiar manner with an adjective or substantive, to denote the state of the weather, the roads, etc.; e. g. *il fait froid*, it is cold, *il faisait chaud*, it was hot, *il fera beau demain*, it will be fair to-morrow, *il a fait crotté aujourd'hui*, it has been muddy to-day, *il fait cher vivre à Londres*, it is dear living at London, *il ferait bon en Italie, si le gouvernement y était moins despotique*, things would be well in Italy, if the government there was less despotic.

§ 654. The Impersonal Verb *il faut*, in its various tenses, is often used before another Verb in the subjunctive; e. g. *il faut que j'aille à Londres*, it is necessary that I should (or I must) go to London, *il faut qu'ils viennent*, they must come, *il faudra que vous soyez de retour à cinq heures*, it will be necessary that you should be on your return at five o'clock.

§ 655. The Impersonal Verb *il faut* is often used before another Verb in the infinitive, and in such cases *il faut* is sometimes preceded by a personal pronoun; e. g. *il faut aller à Londres*, it is necessary to go to London, *il faut venir*, it is necessary to come, *il vous faut être de retour à cinq heures*, it is necessary for you to be on your return at five o'clock.

§ 656. The Impersonal Verb *il faut* is often used before a substantive, and in such cases *il faut* is sometimes preceded

by a personal pronoun ; e. g. *il faut de l'argent*, money must be had, *il lui faut du pain*, he wants bread, *il nous faut une maison*, we must have a house, *il leur faudra une chaise*, they will want a chaise, *il faut des hommes*, men are wanted.

§ 657. The Impersonal Verb *il faut* is sometimes used at the end of a clause ; e. g. *vous faites cela comme il faut*, you do that as it should be done, *des gens comme il faut*, people such as they should be (i. e. respectable people), *cela n'est pas comme il faut*, that is not as it should be, *il fait ce qu'il faut*, he does what he should, *vous lisez plus qu'il ne faut*, you read more than is necessary.

§ 658. When a tense of the Impersonal Verb *il faut* precedes another Verb in the subjunctive mode (according to § 654), the present tense of the subjunctive must be employed if *il faut* be in the present or future tense indicative, and the perfect tense subjunctive must be employed if *il faut* be in the imperfect or perfect tense indicative or the conditional present ; e. g. *il faut que vous buviez*, you must drink, *il faudra qu'elle danse*, she will have to dance, *il fallait* or *il fallut que je parlasse*, it was necessary that I should speak, *il faudrait qu'ils fissent leur devoir*, it would be necessary that they should do their duty.

§ 659. The first person singular of the present subjunctive of the Verb *avoir*, to know, is, by a strange anomaly, employed instead of the corresponding form of the indicative, whenever the form of expression is negative ; e. g. *je n'en sache rien*, I know nothing about it, *je ne sache personne*, I know nobody.*

§ 660. The Verb *devoir* is often used in French to express the idea of the English words *ought*, *should* (in the sense of *ought*), *must* (when no *command* is expressed), and *am to* ; e. g. *vous devez obéir à votre maître*, you ought to (or you

* The expression must be negative and the Verb must be in the first person to justify the present subjunctive of *savoir* instead of the indicative ; e. g. we must say *je sais cela*, I know that, *il ne sait pas son métier*, he does not know his trade.

should) obey your master, *vous devez avoir grand faim*, you must be very hungry, *nous devons y aller*, we are going there.

§ 661. When in English we use *ought to have* or *should have*, the French use phraseology corresponding with *should have ought*; e. g. *nous aurions dû y aller*, we ought to have gone thither.

§ 662. The Verb *pouvoir* is often used in French to express the English *may* and *might*, as well as *can* and *could*; e. g. *vous pouvez venir la semaine prochaine*, you may come the next week; *j'aurais pu être trompé*, I might have been deceived, *je puis le faire*, I can do it, *nous ne pouvions venir hier*, we could not come yesterday, *je puis avoir été trompé*, I may have been deceived.*

§ 663. The simple conditional tense of the Verb *savoir* is, by a strange anomaly, often used instead of the present of the Verb *pouvoir*, when the expression is *negative*, but not otherwise; e. g. *je ne saurais dire la moindre chose*, I cannot say the least thing.

§ 664. The Verb *vouloir* is to be used with the infinitive of a Verb, instead of a future tense of the same Verb, whenever we intend to express emphatically a *wish* or *determination*; e. g. *il tuera*, he will kill, *il veut tuer*, he will kill, i. e. means to kill, *je le ferai*, I will do it, *je veux le faire*, I will do it.

§ 665. The Verb *vouloir* is used for our Verbs, *want*, *desire*, *will have*, etc.; e. g. *que voulez-vous?* what do you want? *voulez-vous de la viande?* will you have some meat? *je veux du pain, s'il vous plaît*, I should like some bread, if you please.

§ 666. The two words *voici* and *voilà* are sometimes used in a very peculiar manner. They are compounded of the imperative of the Verb *voir*, to see, and the adverbs *ci* and *là*.

* To use the subjunctive forms of expression *j'aie été trompé*, *j'eusse été trompé*, for *I may have been deceived*, *I might have been deceived*, would be altogether improper.

The peculiar use of these compound words may be seen pretty fully from the following examples : *voici le livre dont on a parlé*, here is the book of which mention has been made, *voilà l'homme que vous demandez*, there is the man whom you are asking for, *le voici qui travaille*, here he is working, *la voilà qui chante*, there she is singing, *voici venir le printemps*, see, spring approaches, *voici qui est beau*, this is fine, *voilà donc qui va bien*, there, then, that goes well, *nous voici quatre*, here are we four, *me voilà sans abri*, there was I without shelter, *l'homme que voici*, this man here, *Monsieur que voilà*, that gentleman there.

§ 667. When in English a Verb following *is it* is in a future tense, *is it* must be rendered into French by the future tense of *être* ; and when the following Verb is in a past tense, *être* must be in a past tense likewise ; e. g. *sera-ce elles qui viendront ?* is it they who will come ? *étaient-ce eux qui allaient ?* is it they who went ?

§ 668. In English the auxiliary forms, *have, had, shall, will, should, would, could, may, can, might*, are often used alone in answering a question, the rest of the Verb being understood : e. g. *have you done that ? I have ; shall you read this pamphlet ? I shall* ; etc. In French they cannot be so used, but the expression must be complete : e. g. *avez-vous fait cela ? je l'ai fait*, have you done that ? I have done it ; *vous proposez vous de lire cette brochure ? oui, je le lirai*, shall you read this pamphlet ? yes, I shall read it.

§ 669. A somewhat similar mode of expression, not allowable in French, frequently occurs, though inelegantly, in English ; e. g. *I intend to, I hope to, I expect to, I am to*, etc. In French, the sentence must be written out in full ; e. g. *je n'ai pas écrit la lettre, mais je me propose de la faire*, I have not written the letter, but I intend to, *il ne l'a pas vu, mais il espère de le voir bientôt*, he has not seen him, but he hopes to soon, *a-t-elle parti ? non, mais elle doit partir demain*, has she set out ? No, but she is to to-morrow.

§ 670. When in an interrogation the personal pronoun *je* stands immediately after any Verb which ends with *e* mute, the *e* mute receives an acute accent, and is pronounced accordingly; e. g. *aimé-je* ? do I love ? *puissé-je* ? may I ?

§ 671. The four following Verbs need to be carefully distinguished from each other in point of sense : *mener*, signifying *to lead from the place where one is*, e. g. *menez cet enfant à l'école*, lead this child to school ; *amener*, signifying *to bring to the place where one is*, e. g. *amenez-moi cet enfant*, bring that child to me ; *emmener*, signifying *to carry away*, e. g. *il emmena deux régimens avec lui*, he carried away two regiments with him ; and *remener*, signifying *to carry back*, e. g. *remenez cet enfant à son père*, carry back that child to his father. N. B. All these Verbs indicate life and motion in their objects, which are *led*, not *borne*.

§ 672. The four following Verbs, likewise, need to be carefully distinguished in point of sense : *porter*, signifying *to carry from the place where one is*, e. g. *portez ces livres dans ma chambre*, carry these books into my room ; *apporter*, signifying *to bring towards the place where one is*, e. g. *apportez-moi du fruit*, bring me some fruit ; *emporter*, signifying *to carry away*, e. g. *emportez cette table*, carry away this table ; and *reporter*, signifying *to carry back*, e. g. *reportez ces livres dans ma chambre*, carry these books back into my room.

CHAP. VI.

PARTICLES.

General Statement.

§ 673. The Conjunction and Interjection are altogether invariable. The Preposition is never varied, save in connexion with the Definite Article, as represented in §§ 210, 211. The Adverb, likewise, is never varied, save, in a very few instances, by comparison. (See § 675.)

§ 674. Adverbs are subject to comparison in French if their sense will allow of different degrees. The regular comparison of Adverbs is effected in the same way as that of adjectives (see § 351); e. g. *profondément*, profoundly, compar. *plus profondément*, superl. *le plus profondément*.

§ 675. There are four French Adverbs which are subject to irregular comparison: viz. *beaucoup*, much, compar. *plus*, superl. *le plus*; *bien*, well, compar. *mieux*, superl. *le mieux*; *mal*, ill,* compar. *pis*, superl. *le pis*; *peu*, little, compar. *moins*, superl. *le moins*.

§ 676. Very many French Adverbs are formed from adjectives, by the following Rules:

I. When the adjective ends with a vowel in the masculine gender, the Adverb is formed by merely adding *ment* to the masculine: e. g. *juste*, just, *justement*, justly; *aisé*, easy, *aisément*, easily; *hardi*, bold, *hardiment*, boldly; *absolu*, absolute, *absolument*, absolutely.†

II. When the adjective ends with a consonant in the masculine (save when it ends with *ant* or *ent*, for which case see the next rule), the Adverb is formed by adding *ment* to the feminine; e. g. *vif*, lively, fem. *vive*, Adv. *vivement*, livelyly; *cruel*, cruel, fem. *cruelle*, Adv. *cruellement*, cruelly.‡

* This Adverb may likewise be compared regularly: *plus mal*, *le plus mal*.

† The following cases deviate from this rule: *aveugle*, blind, *aveuglément*, blindly; *commode*, convenient, *commodément*, conveniently; *conforme*, conformable, *conformément*, conformably; *énorme*, enormous, *énormément*, enormously; *impuni*, 'unpunished, *impunément*, with impunity; *incommode*, inconvenient, *incommodément*, inconveniently; *opiniâtre*, obstinate, *opiniâtrément*, obstinately; *traître*, treacherous, *traîtreusement*, treacherously. The Adverbs, *bellement*, softly, *follement*, foolishly, *mollement*, effeminately, and *nouvellement*, newly, are considered as derived from the forms *bel*, *fol*, *mol*, and *nouvel*, and not from *beau*, *fou*, *mou*, and *nouveau*; and so they come under Rule II. above, and not under Rule I.

‡ The following cases deviate from this Rule: *commun*, common, *communément*, commonly; *confus*, confused, *confusément*, confusedly;

III. When the adjective ends with *ant* or *ent*, the Adverb is formed by changing the *nt* into *mmment*; e. g. *constant*, *constamment*, constantly; *éloquent*, *éloquent*, *éloquemment*, *éloquently*.*

POSITION.

§ 677. When an Adverb qualifies an *adjective*, the Adverb is always put first; e. g. *je suis assez riche*, I am rich enough; *il est fort pauvre*, he is very poor.

§ 678. When an Adverb qualifies a *verb*, and the verb is in a *simple tense*, the verb is almost always put first; e. g. *nous lisons beaucoup*, we read much, *il reviendra bientôt*, he will return soon. An Adverb is sometimes, though rarely, placed *before* a verb in the *infinitive*; e. g. *pour bien faire*, in order to do well, *assez parler*, to speak enough. N. B. An Adverb can never stand between the nominative and the verb; e. g. *j'écris souvent*, never *je souvent écris*.

§ 679. When an Adverb qualifies a verb, and the verb is in a *compound tense*, the Adverb is usually put between the auxiliary and the participle; e. g. *il est profondément versé dans cette science*, he is profoundly versed in this science, *il a été vivement piqué*, he was strongly piqued.† Yet the Adverb

diffus, diffuse, *diffusément*, diffusely; *exprès*, express, *expressément*, expressly; *gentil*, pretty, *gentiment*, prettily; *importun*, importunate, *importunément*, importunately; *obscur*, obscure, *obscurément*, obscurely; *précis*, precise, *précisément*, precisely; *profond*, profound, *profondément*, profoundly.

* The two following cases deviate from this Rule and follow the II.: *lent*, slow, *lentement*, slowly; *présent*, present, *présentement*, presently. The following Adverbs, notwithstanding their form, are not derived in any way from adjectives: *comment*, how, *incessamment*, presently, *notamment*, especially, *nuitamment*, by night, *profusément*, lavishly, *sciemment*, knowingly.

† Considering the participle of the compound tense as an adjective, to which it bears much resemblance, this rule would be the same as that in § 677. In almost all cases when the Adverb *follows* the

sometimes follows the participle of a compound tense ; e. g. *il a appuyé fortement son opinion*, he forcibly supported his opinion, *il a dit cela méchamment*, he said that mischievously.

§ 680. When an Adverb qualifies a whole sentence or clause, rather than a particular word, its position does not follow any general rule, save that it is put where it will best convey the exact sense intended. If it be put at the beginning of a clause, peculiar emphasis is given to the idea which it conveys ; e. g. *aujourd'hui il fait beau*, to-day it is fine weather, *il fait beau aujourd'hui*, it is fine weather to-day, *véritablement je vous dois cette somme*, it is true I owe you that sum.

§ 681. The Adverbs, *comment*, *combien*, *d'où*, *où*, *par où*, *pourquoi*, *quand*, always precede the verb, whether a question is asked or not ; e. g. *pourquoi riez-vous ?* why do you laugh ? *comment se porte-t-il ?* how is he ? *il ne sait où il va*, he knows not where he is going.

§ 682. When the Adverbs, *souvent*, *toujours*, and those of comparison and quantity, are used in connection with other Adverbs, the former always take precedence ; e. g. *il l'a souvent mûrement examiné*, he has often attentively examined it, *il souffre toujours constamment*, he always suffers with firmness, *il l'a écrit bien sagement*, he has written it with much discretion, *il a parlé si éloquemment*, he has spoken so eloquently. *Souvent* itself is preceded by an adverb of comparison or quantity ; e. g. *si souvent*, so often, *assez souvent*, often enough.

§ 683. All that it is necessary to say as to the position of the other Particles is, that the practice of the French in this respect corresponds with our own.

participle it may, probably, be perceived that it qualifies the whole sentence rather than the verb. (See § 680.)

Additional Peculiarities.

§ 684. There are some adjectives which are used at times as Adverbs ; e. g. *il chante faux*, he sings out of time, *elle chante juste*, she sings correctly, *ils ne voient pas clair*, they do not see clear, *cette fleur sent bon*, this flower smells well.

§ 685. The practice of the French in regard to *Negative Adverbs* is stated clearly and particularly in Appendix O, II.

§ 686. As to the use of the Prepositions *à*, *de*, and *pour*, before the infinitive mode, some general principles, which may be of advantage, will be presented here, and for further information the student is referred to Appendix P.

§ 687. I. The Preposition *à* is generally employed before an infinitive in the following cases : (1.) To convey the idea of *occupation*, *use*, or *inclination*, e. g. *je m'amuse à lire*, I amuse myself with reading, *cela m'aide à voir*, that helps me to live, *j'aime à écrire*, I love to write ; (2.) When the infinitive has a passive meaning, which might be rendered passively in English, e. g. *cette guerre est difficile à soutenir*, this war is difficult to sustain (to be sustained), *des fruits bons à cueillir*, fruits good to pluck (to be plucked).

§ 688. II. The Preposition *de* is generally employed before an infinitive when the infinitive may be rendered in English by the present participle with *of* or *from* ; e. g. *j'eus bientôt une autre occasion d'employer mon crédit*, I had soon another occasion of employing my credit, *vous m'empêchez de travailler*, you prevent me from working.

§ 689. III. The Preposition *pour* is employed before an infinitive to denote distinctly the *object* or *end* of an action or a condition ; e. g. *il a fait cela pour gagner son amitié*, he did that to gain his friendship, *j'ai dit cela pour rire*, I said that in jest, *c'est trop dur pour rôtir*, it is too hard to roast.

§ 690. IV. The infinitive is often used without any Preposition before it ; e. g. *venez me voir*, come to see me,

mourir n'est rien quand on a bien vécu, to die is nothing when one has lived well, *moi ! revoir cet homme*, I see that man !

§ 691. The Prepositions *à*, *de*, and *en*, are to be repeated before every substantive, pronoun, participle, or infinitive which they may govern ; e. g. *elle a de l'honnêteté, de la douceur, et de l'esprit*, she has politeness, sweetness, and ability, *tout ce que je dois à l'Auteur de mon être, au prochain, à moi-même*, all that I owe to the Author of my being, to my neighbor, to myself, *en Asie, en Europe, en Afrique*, in Asia, in Europe, in Africa.

§ 692. The other Prepositions are repeated when the substantives which they govern are contrasted or of very distinct signification, but may be used only once when the substantives are quite or nearly synonymous ; e. g. *pour le bien et pour le mal de mon maître*, to the advantage and disadvantage of my master, *par les ruses et les artifices de mes ennemis*, by the tricks and artifices of my enemies, *par les ruses et par les armes*, by cunning and by arms.

§ 693. When a Preposition is used before the expression *l'un et l'autre*, it must be used before both *l'un* and *l'autre* ; e. g. *j'ai répondu à l'un et à l'autre*, I have replied to both, *il se sert également de l'une et de l'autre main*, he makes use of both hands alike.

§ 694. The Preposition *à* is used before *chacun* in all such cases as the following, though in English it is omitted : *Dieu nous rendra à chacun selon nos œuvres*, God will render to us each according to his works.

§ 695. The Preposition *de* is often used after a comparative and before a substantive of dimension or quantity, to express the English Preposition *by* ; e. g. *vous êtes plus haut que moi de deux pouces*, you are taller than I by two inches.

§ 696. The Preposition *de* is often used after a superlative to express the English preposition *in* ; e. g. *le plus grand co-*

quin du royaume, the greatest rogue in the kingdom, *la plus belle femme de Londres*, the most beautiful woman in London.

§ 697. When *que*, *quoi*, or *rien* occur before an adjective in such expressions as the following, the Preposition *de* is required before the adjective, though no Preposition is used in English : *Que dit on de nouveau ?* what news is there ? *quoi de plus instructif ?* what more instructive ? *il n'a rien de grand que la naissance*, he has nothing great but birth, *y a-t-il rien de si beau*, is there anything so beautiful ?

§ 698. The Preposition *de* is used after *au travers*, and not after *à travers* ; e. g. *au travers des ennemis*, *à travers les ennemis*, through the enemy.

§ 699. The Preposition *de* is used in a very singular manner in such sentences as the following : *voyons qui l'emportera, de vous, de lui, ou de moi*, let us see which of us will excel, you, he, or I.

§ 700. The Preposition *dans* is generally used before a substantive when an article occurs before it, and *en* when no article occurs (comp. § 237) ; e. g. *en guerre*, in war, *dans la guerre*, in the war.

§ 701. The Preposition *en* is used (never *dans*) before the present participle. (Comp. § 567.)

§ 701. The Preposition *en* is often used to signify *like* ; e. g. *il parle en ami*, he talks like a friend, *il agit en prince*, he acts like a prince, *vivre en bon Chrétien*, to live like a good Christian.

§ 703. The French never use the Preposition *par* before *Dieu* ; e. g. *les méchants seront punis de Dieu*, the wicked will be punished by God.

§ 704. Sometimes, though not very often, the Preposition *durant* or *pendant*, during, is omitted ; e. g. *que ferez-vous cette hiver*, what shall you do this winter ? A more striking instance is afforded by a line of Boileau's 8th Satire :

“ Jour, l'hiver, des biens conquis durant l'été.”

§ 705. The Conjunction *et* is used more frequently in French than *and* in English. We may say in English, *he is an amiable, well-behaved man*; but we must insert the conjunction in French: *c'est un homme aimable et poli*.

§ 706. The Conjunction *que* is employed to denote *than* or *as* in a comparison; e. g. *l'Asie est plus grand que l'Europe*, Asia is larger than Europe, *elle est aussi belle que sa sœur*, she is as beautiful as her sister.

§ 707. The Conjunction *que* is often used to convey the sense of *comme*, *parceque*, *puisque*, *quand*, *quoique*, *si*, etc., before the second clause of such sentences as the following: *si l'on aimait son pays, et qu'on en désirât sincèrement la gloire*, if we loved our country and sincerely desired its glory.

§ 708. The Conjunction *que* is very frequently used in a very peculiar manner in such exclamatory sentences as, *le bon garçon que Henri!* what a fine boy Henry is! *le beau pays que l'Italie!* what a fine country Italy is!

§ 709. Other peculiar modes of employing *que* may be seen in the following examples: *on ne parle que de la victoire*, they talk only of victory, *cela ne finira pas qu'il ne vienne*, there will be no end to it unless he comes, *attendez qu'il vienne*, wait till he comes, *que ne se corrige-t-il?* why does he not reform? *méchant qu'il est*, wicked as he is, *que Dieu est grand!* how great is God! *c'est se tromper que de croire cela*, to believe that is to deceive one's self, *quelques progrès que de nouvelles observations puissent desormais faire*, whatever advances new observations may hereafter make.

§ 710. The Conjunction *que* following the pronoun *qui* gives it the sense of *whoever*; e. g. *qui que ce soit qui ait fait cela*, whoever (it be that) has done that: following the pronoun *quoi*, it gives to it the sense of *whatever*; e. g. *quoi que vous disiez*, whatever you may say: following the pronoun *quel*, it gives to it the sense of *whoever* or *whatever*; e. g. *quel qu'il soit*, whoever he may be: following *lequel*, it gives to it the sense of *whosoever*, *whichever*; e. g. *lequel des*

trois que vous choisissiez, whichever of the three you choose : following *quelque* with a substantive, it gives to it the sense of *whatever* ; e. g. *quelques efforts que vous fassiez*, whatever attempts you may make.

§ 711. The Conjunction *que* can never be omitted in French, as it often is in English ; e. g. *je crois que vous avez raison*, I think you are right, *on dit que nous aurons bientôt le paix*, they say we shall soon have peace.

§ 712. The Interjection *O* sometimes appears with the circumflex accent and sometimes without it. It is used without the accent in a direct apostrophe to God or to any person ; e. g. *O mon Dieu ! O my God ! O mon fils ! O my son !* In all other cases it has the accent ; e. g. *Ô temps ! Ô mœurs ! O times ! O manners ! Ô si je pouvais ! O, if I could ! Ô le plaisant homme ! O the funny man !*

APPENDIX.

A. (§ 37. note.)

WORDS IN WHICH *u*, PRECEDED BY *g* OR *q*, IS PRONOUNCED AS
PART OF A DIPHTHONG.

<i>Aiguade</i> , (f.) fresh water.	<i>'Equilatère</i> , equilateral.
<i>Aiguille</i> , (f.) needle (and its derivatives).	<i>'Equimultiple</i> , equimultiple.
<i>Aiguillon</i> , (m.) goad (and its derivatives).	<i>'Equitation</i> , (f.) equitation.
<i>Aiguiser</i> , to sharpen (and its derivatives).	<i>Guadaloupe</i> , Guadaloupe.
<i>Aquador</i> , (m.) waterman.	<i>Guadalquivir</i> , Guadalquivir.
<i>Aquarelle</i> , (f.) aquatinta.	<i>Guastalla</i> , Guastalla.
<i>Aquatile</i> , (f.) aquatic.	<i>Guatemala</i> , Guatemala.
<i>Aquatique</i> , aquatic.	<i>Guide</i> , (m.) Guido.
<i>Arguer</i> , to reprove, wire-draw.	<i>Guise</i> , (m.) Guise.
<i>Colliquatif</i> , dissolvent.	<i>Guisard</i> , Guisard.
<i>Colliquation</i> , (f.) dissolution.	<i>Lingual</i> , lingual.
<i>D'Aiguillon</i> , (m.) <i>D'Aiguillon</i> .	<i>Liquation</i> , liquation.
<i>'Equateur</i> , (m.) equator.	<i>Liquéfaction</i> , liquefaction.
<i>'Equatif</i> , equational.	<i>Loquacité</i> , (f.) loquacity.
<i>'Equation</i> , (f.) equation.	<i>Paraguante</i> , (f.) present.
<i>'Equestre</i> , equestrian.	<i>Quadragénaire</i> , forty years old.
<i>'Equiangle</i> , equiangular.	<i>Quadragesime</i> , (f.) first Sunday in Lent.
<i>'Equidistant</i> , equidistant.	<i>Quadrangulaire</i> , quadrangular.
<i>'Equilatéral</i> , equilateral.	<i>Quadrature</i> , (f.) quadrature.*
	<i>Quadricolor</i> , four-colored.

* In another sense *Quadrature* is pronounced differently. See Appendix B.

<i>Quadriennial</i> , quadriennial.	<i>Quia</i> , silence.
<i>Quadrifolium</i> , (m.) quadrifolium.	<i>Quindécagone</i> , (m.) quindecagon.
<i>Quadrige</i> , (m.) quadriga.	<i>Quindécemvir</i> , (m.) quindecemvir.
<i>Quadrilatère</i> , (m.) quadrilateral.	<i>Quinquagénnaire</i> , fifty years old.
<i>Quadrinome</i> , (m.) quadrinomial.	<i>Quinquagésime</i> , (f.) Quinquagesima Sunday.
<i>Quadrisyllabe</i> , (f.) quadrisyllable.	<i>Quinquennium</i> , (m.) period of fifty years.
<i>Quadrupède</i> , (m.) quadruped.	<i>Quinquerce</i> , (m.) quinquertium.
<i>Quadruple</i> , quadruple.	<i>Quintile</i> , quintile.
<i>Quamquam</i> , (m.) college part.	<i>Quintuple</i> , quintuple.
<i>Quakre</i> , (m.) quaker.	<i>Quirinal</i> , quirinal.
<i>Quarto</i> , quarto.	<i>Quinquèrème</i> , (f.) quinquereme.
<i>Quartz</i> , (m.) quartz.	<i>Ubiquiste, ubiquataire</i> , (m.) ubiquitarian.*
<i>Quaterne</i> , (m.) quaternion.	
<i>Quérimonie</i> , (f.) request.	
<i>Questeur</i> , (m.) questor.	
<i>Questure</i> , (f.) questorship.	

B. (§ 131.)

WORDS IN WHICH *u* PRECEDED BY *g* OR *q* IS SILENT.

<i>Aqueduc</i> , (m.) aqueduct.	<i>Bègue</i> , (c.) stammerer.
<i>Aqueux</i> , watery.	<i>Conjuguer</i> , to conjugate.
<i>Aquila alba</i> , white sublimate.	<i>Distinguer</i> , to distinguish.
<i>Bague</i> , (f.) ring.	<i>Dogue</i> , (m.) mastiff.

* When the *gu* or *qu* in these words is followed by *a*, the sound of the *u* is that mentioned in the latter part of § 37 of the Grammar. When followed by any other vowel, it has the peculiar French sound. —It is to be remembered that all compounds or other derivatives or cognates of any of the words in this catalogue, follow in their pronunciation the analogy of the words to which they are related.

- 'Equarrir*, to square.
'Equilibre, (m.) equilibrium.
'Equinoxe, (m.) equinox.
'Equipage, (m.) equipage.
'Equipée, (f.) rank.
'Equiper, to equip.
'Equipoller, to be equivalent.
'Équité, equity.
'Equivalent, equivalent.
'Équivaloir, to be equivalent.
'Équivoque, equivocal; (f.) pun.
Figue, (f.) fig.
Fougue, (f.) heat.
Fugue, (f.) fugue.
Gué, (m.) ford.
Guèbre, (m.) Guebre.
Guède, (f.) woad.
Guéder, to cram.
Guéter, to wash.
Guelfes, (m. pl.) Guelphs.
Guêpe, (f.) wasp.
Guerdon, (m.) reward.
Guère, *Guères*, but little, scarcely.
Guéret, (m.) fallow-ground.
Guéridon, (m.) stand.
Guérir, to cure.
Guérite, (f.) sentry-box.
Guerre, (f.) war.
Guerroyer, to make war.
Guet, (m.) watch.
Guêtre, (f.) spatterdash.
Guetter, to watch.
Gueule, (f.) mouth.
Gueusaille, (f.) troop of beggars.
Gueuse, (f.) pig (of iron, lead, etc.)
Gueuser, to beg.
Gueux, beggarly, indigent.
Gui, (m.) misletoe.
Guichet, (m.) wicket.
Guichetier, (m.) turnkey.
Guide, (m.) guide; (f.) rein.
Guidon, (m.) standard.
Guigne, (f.) kind of cherry.
Guigner, to ogle, leer, have in one's eye.
Guignon, (m.) ill luck.
Guilée, (f.) shower.
Guillage, (f.) fermentation.
Guillaume, (m.) William, plane.
Guilledin, (m.) gelding, nag.
Guilledou, (m.) *courir le—*, to gad about.
Guillemets, (m. pl.) inverted commas.
Guillemot, (m.) kind of plover.
Guilleret, sprightly.
Guilleri, (m.) sparrow's note.
Guillocher, to wave.
Guillotine, (f.) guillotine.
Guimauve, (f.) marsh-mallow.
Guimbarde, (f.) kind of wagon.
Guimpe, (f.) nun's stomacher.
Guinder, to hoist up, overstrain.
Guinée, (f.) guinea.

- Guingais*, (m.) wryness, irregularity.
Guinguette, (f.) country tavern.
Guipure, (f.) kind of lace.
Guirlande, (f.) garland.
Guise, (f.) guise, fashion.
Guitare, (f.) guitar.
Langue, (f.) tongue.
Langueur, (f.) languor.
Languéyer, to examine a hog's tongue.
Languir, to languish.
Longue, long.
Morgue, (f.) dead-house, surly or haughty mien.
Nargue (*nargue de vous*, a fig for you).
Onguent, (m.) unguent.
Quadrature, (f.) watch-work.
Quadrer, to quadrate.
Quadrille, (f.) troop; (m.) quadrille.
Quai, (m.) quay.
Quaiche, (f.) ketch.
Qualifier, to call, qualify.
Qualité, (f.) quality.
Quand, when.
Quant, as.
Quantième, what, which; (m.) which day.
Quantité, (f.) quantity.
Quarante, forty.
Quarrer, to square.
Quart, (m.) fourth.
- Quartaut*, (m.) quarter-cask.
Quarte, (f.) quart.
Quarténier or *Quartinier*, (m.) officer of a ward.
Quartier, (m.) quarter.
Quasi, almost.
Quatorze, fourteen.
Quatrain, (m.) quatrain.
Quatre, four.
Que, that; whom, which, what.
Quel, what.
Quelconque, whatever.
Quelque, some.
Quelquefois, sometimes.
Quelqu'un, some one.
Quémander, to beg privately.
Quenotte, (f.) tooth of a little child.
Quenouille, (f.) distaff.
Queraiba, (m.) Brazil-wood.
Querelle, (f.) quarrel.
Quérir, to fetch.
Question, (f.) question.
Quête, (f.) quest.
Quéter, to hunt, beg.
Queue, (f.) tail.
Queussi-queumi, absolutely the same.
Queux, (m.) king's cook.
Qui, who, which.
Quiconque, whoever.
Quidam, (m.) a certain man;
quidame, (f.) a certain woman.
Quiet, quiet.

<i>Quignon</i> , (m.) great piece of bread.	<i>Quinze</i> , fifteen.
<i>Quillage</i> , (m.) ship-toll.	<i>Quiproquo</i> , (m.) mistake.
<i>Quille</i> , (f.) nine-pin, keel.	<i>Quiqueron</i> , (m.) nightman.
<i>Quinaire</i> , (m.) quinarius (Latin).	<i>Quittance</i> , (f.) receipt.
<i>Quinaud</i> , abashed, silly.	<i>Quitter</i> , to quit.
<i>Quincaille</i> , (f.) copper or iron ware.	<i>Quolibet</i> , (m.) quirk, pun.
<i>Quinconce</i> , (m.) quincunx.	<i>Quotepart</i> , (f.) quota.
<i>Quine</i> , (m.) two fives at dice.	<i>Quotidien</i> , quotidian, daily.
<i>Quinola</i> , (m.) knave of hearts (at cards).	<i>Quotient</i> , (m.) quotient.
<i>Quinquenove</i> , (m.) game with dice.	<i>Quotité</i> , (f.) quota, share.
<i>Quinquina</i> , (m.) Peruvian bark.	<i>Requiem</i> , (m.) requiem.
<i>Quint</i> , fifth.	<i>Requin</i> , (m.) shark.
<i>Quintaine</i> , (f.) quintain.	<i>Requiner</i> , to trick up, set off.
<i>Quintal</i> , (m.) quintal.	<i>Requint</i> , (m.) a tax.
<i>Quinte</i> , (f.) a cough, freak, fifth.	<i>Requis</i> , requisite.
<i>Quintessence</i> , (f.) quintessence.	<i>Requisition</i> , (f.) requisition.
	<i>Séquelle</i> , (f.) series, train, gang.
	<i>Séquence</i> , (f.) sequence.
	<i>Séquestre</i> , (m.) sequestration.
	<i>Sequin</i> , (m.) zechin.
	<i>Vergue</i> , (f.) ship's yard.*

C. (§ 139.)

WORDS WHICH BEGIN WITH SILENT *h*.

<i>Habile</i> , clever.	<i>Habilissime</i> , very able.
<i>Habilement</i> , cleverly.	<i>Habillement</i> , (m.) dress.
<i>Habileté</i> , (f.) cleverness.	<i>Habiller</i> , to dress.

* All compounds, or other derivatives or cognates, of any of the words in this catalogue, follow in their pronunciation the analogy of the words to which they are related.

<i>Habilleur</i> , (m.) dresser.	<i>Hebdomadier</i> , (m.) hebdomadary.
<i>Habit</i> , (m.) coat.	<i>Héberger</i> , to harbor.
<i>Habitable</i> , habitable.	<i>Hébété</i> , (m.) dunce.
<i>Habitacle</i> , (m.) habitation.	<i>Hébéter</i> , to stultify.
<i>Habitant</i> , (m.) inhabitant.	<i>Hébraïque</i> , Hebrew.
<i>Habitation</i> , (f.) habitation.	<i>Hébraïsme</i> , (m.) Hebraism.
<i>Habiter</i> , to inhabit.	<i>Hébreu</i> , Hebrew.
<i>Habitude</i> , (f.) habit.	<i>Hécatombe</i> , (f.) hecatomb.
<i>Habituel</i> , habitual.	<i>Hégire</i> , (f.) Hegira.
<i>Habituellement</i> , habitually.	<i>Heiduque</i> , (m.) heyduc.
<i>Habituer</i> , to habituate.	<i>Hélas !</i> alas !
<i>Hagiographe</i> , hagiographical.	<i>Hélique</i> , heliacal.
<i>Haleine</i> , (f.) breath.	<i>Héliastes</i> , (m. pl.) heliastes.
<i>Halenée</i> , (f.) breath.	<i>Hélice</i> , (f.) spiral line.
<i>Halo</i> , (m.) halo.	<i>Hélicon</i> , (m.) Helicon.
<i>Hamadryade</i> , (f.) hamadryad.	<i>Hélioscope</i> , (m.) helioscope.
<i>Haméçon</i> , (m.) fish-hook.	<i>Héliotrope</i> , (m.) turnsole.
<i>Harlequin</i> , (m.) harlequin.	<i>Hémérocale</i> , (f.) day-lily.
<i>Harlequinade</i> , (f.) buffoonery.	<i>Hémicycle</i> , (m.) semi-circle.
<i>Harmale</i> , (f.) wild rue.	<i>Hémine</i> , (f.) hemina (measure).
<i>Harmonica</i> , (m.) set of musical glasses.	<i>Hémisphère</i> , (m.) hemisphere.
<i>Harmonie</i> , (f.) harmony.	<i>Hémisphérique</i> , hemispherical.
<i>Harmonieusement</i> , harmoniously.	<i>Hémistiche</i> , (m.) hemistich.
<i>Harmonieux</i> , harmonious.	<i>Hémorrhagie</i> , (f.) hemorrhage.
<i>Harmonique</i> , harmonical.	<i>Hémorrhoidal</i> , hemorrhoidal.
<i>Harmoniquement</i> , harmonically.	<i>Hémorrhoides</i> , (f. pl.) piles.
<i>Hast</i> , (m.) spear, long weapon.	<i>Hépatique</i> , hepatical ; (f.) liverwort.
<i>Hâtif</i> , forward, bold.	<i>Heptagon</i> , (m.) heptagon.
<i>Hâtiveau</i> , (m.) hasty pear.	<i>Heptarchie</i> , (f.) heptarchy.
<i>Hâtivement</i> , forwardly.	<i>Héraldique</i> , heraldic.
<i>Hâtiveté</i> , (f.) forwardness.	<i>Herbacé</i> , herbaceous.
<i>Hebdomadaire</i> , weekly.	<i>Herbage</i> , (m.) herbage.

- Herbe*, (f.) grass, herb.
Herber, to spread on the grass.
Herbette, (f.) tender grass.
Herbeux, grassy.
Herbier, (m.) herbal.
Herbière, (f.) herbwoman.
Herboriser, to seek plants.
Herboriste, (m.) herbalist.
Herbu, grassy.
Héréditaire, hereditary.
Héréditairement, hereditarily.
Hérédité, (f.) heirship, heritage.
Hérésiarque, (m.) heresiarch.
Hérésie, (f.) heresy.
Hérétique, heretic.
Héritage, (m.) inheritance.
Hériter, to inherit.
Héritier, (m.) heir.
Héritière, (f.) heiress.
Hermaphrodite, (m.) hermaphrodite.
Hermétique, alchemical.
Hermétiquement, hermetically.
Hermine, (f.) ermine.
Herminé, ermined.
Hermitage, (m.) hermitage.
Hermite, (m.) hermit.
Hérodians, (m. pl.) Herodians.
Héroïcomique, heroicomical.
Héroïde, (f.) Heroid.
Héroïne, (f.) heroine.
Héroïque, heroic.
Héroïquement, heroically.
Héroïsme, (m.) heroism.
Héronneau, (m.) young heron.
- Héronnière*, (f.) heron's mew.
Hésitation, (f.) hesitation.
Hésiter, to hesitate.
Héteroclite, heteroclite.
Hétérodox, heterodox.
Hétérodoxie, (f.) heterodoxy.
Hétérogène, heterogeneous.
Hétérogénéité, (f.) heterogeneity.
Hétérosciens, (m. pl.) heterosciens.
Heur, (m.) good luck.
Heure, (f.) hour.
Heures, (f. pl.) prayer-book.
Heureusement, happily.
Heureux, happy.
Hexaèdre, (m.) hexædron.
Hexagone, (m.) hexagon.
Hexamètre, hexameter.
Hiatus, (m.) hiatus, gap.
Hidalgo, (m.) nobleman.
Hier, yesterday.
Hiéroglyphe, (m.) hieroglyphic.
Hiéroglyphique, hieroglyphical.
Hiéroglyphiquement, hieroglyphically.
Hilarité, (f.) hilarity.
Hippiatrique, (f.) veterinary art.
Hippocras, (m.) hippocras.
Hippodrome, (m.) hippodrome.
Hippoglosse, (f.) horse-tongue, (plant.)
Hippogriffe, (m.) hippogriff.

<i>Hippopotame</i> , (m.) hippopotamus.	<i>Homologation</i> , (f.) allowance (law term.)
<i>Hirondelle</i> , (f.) swallow.	<i>Homologue</i> , homologous.
<i>Hispanisme</i> , (m.) Spanish idiom.	<i>Homologuer</i> , to allow, confirm.
<i>Histoire</i> , (f.) history.	<i>Homonyme</i> , homonymous.
<i>Historial</i> , historical.	<i>Honnête</i> , honest, civil.
<i>Historien</i> , (m.) historian.	<i>Honnêtement</i> , honestly.
<i>Historier</i> , to embellish.	<i>Honnêteté</i> , (f.) civility, honesty.
<i>Historiette</i> , (f.) story.	<i>Honneur</i> , (m.) honor.
<i>Historiographe</i> , (m.) historiographer.	<i>Honorable</i> , honorable.
<i>Historique</i> , historical.	<i>Honorablement</i> , honorably.
<i>Historiquement</i> , historically.	<i>Honoraire</i> , honorary ; (m.) fee.
<i>Histrion</i> , (m.) buffoon.	<i>Honorer</i> , to honor.
<i>Hiver</i> , (m.) winter.	<i>Honorifique</i> , titular.
<i>Hivernage</i> , (m.) winter-rest.	<i>Hôpital</i> , (m.) hospital.
<i>Hivernal</i> , winter, brumal.	<i>Horaire</i> , horary.
<i>Hiverner</i> , to winter.	<i>Horizon</i> , (m.) horizon.
<i>Ho ! ho !</i>	<i>Horizontal</i> , horizontal.
<i>Hogner</i> , to scold.	<i>Horizontalement</i> , horizontally.
<i>Hoir</i> , (m.) heir.	<i>Horloge</i> , (f.) clock.
<i>Hoirie</i> , (f.) inheritance.	<i>Horloger</i> , (m.) clock-maker.
<i>Holocauste</i> , (m.) burnt-offering.	<i>Horlogère</i> , (f.) clock-maker's wife.
<i>Holographe</i> , all written with one's own hand.	<i>Horlogerie</i> , (f.) clock-making.
<i>Hombre</i> , (m.) ombre.	<i>Hormis</i> , except, but.
<i>Homélie</i> , (f.) homily.	<i>Horographie</i> , (f.) horography.
<i>Homicide</i> , (m.) homicide.	<i>Horoscope</i> , (m.) horoscope.
<i>Hommage</i> , (m.) homage, duty.	<i>Horoscooper</i> , to cast a nativity.
<i>Hommager</i> , (m.) homager.	<i>Horreur</i> , (f.) horror.
<i>Hommase</i> , manly.	<i>Horrible</i> , horrible.
<i>Homme</i> , (m.) man.	<i>Horriblement</i> , horribly.
<i>Homogène</i> , homogeneous.	<i>Hortolage</i> , (m.) pot-herbs.
<i>Homogénéité</i> , (f.) homogeneity.	<i>Hospice</i> , (m.) asylum for monks.

<i>Hospitalier</i> , hospitable ; (m.)	<i>Humide</i> , moist.
hospitaller.	<i>Humidement</i> , in a damp place.
<i>Hospitalité</i> , (f.) hospitality.	<i>Humidité</i> , (f.) humidity.
<i>Hostie</i> , (f.) victim, host.	<i>Humiliant</i> , mortifying.
<i>Hostile</i> , hostile.	<i>Humiliation</i> , (f.) humiliation.
<i>Hostilement</i> , in a hostile manner.	<i>Humilier</i> , to humble.
<i>Hostilité</i> , (f.) hostility.	<i>Humilité</i> , (f.) humility.
<i>Hôte</i> , (m.) host, guest.	<i>Humoral</i> , humoral.
<i>Hôtel</i> , (m.) hotel, house.	<i>Humoriste</i> , (m.) humorist.
<i>Hôtelier</i> , (m.) inn-keeper, host.	<i>Hyacinthe</i> , (f.) hyacinth.
<i>Hôtellerie</i> , (f.) inn.	<i>Hyades</i> , (f. pl.) Hyades.
<i>Hôtesse</i> , (f.) hostess.	<i>Hydraulique</i> , hydraulic ; (f.) hydraulics.
<i>Hue !</i> gee !	<i>Hydre</i> , (f.) hydra.
<i>Hui</i> , now.	<i>Hydrographe</i> , (m.) hydrographer.
<i>Huile</i> , (f.) oil.	<i>Hydrographie</i> , (f.) hydrography.
<i>Huiler</i> , to oil.	<i>Hydrographique</i> , hydrographical.
<i>Huiler</i> , (m.) oilman, cruet.	<i>Hydromancie</i> , (f.) hydromancy.
<i>Huileux</i> , oily.	<i>Hydromel</i> , (m.) mead.
<i>Huis</i> , (m.) door.	<i>Hydrophobie</i> , (f.) hydrophobia.
<i>Huisserie</i> , (f.) door-case.	<i>Hydropique</i> , hydropic.
<i>Huissier</i> , (m.) door-keeper, usher.	<i>Hydropisie</i> , (f.) dropsy.
<i>Huitre</i> , (f.) oyster.	<i>Hydropote</i> , (m.) water-drinker.
<i>Humain</i> , human, humane.	<i>Hydrostatique</i> , (f.) hydrostatics.
<i>Humainement</i> , humanly, humanely.	<i>Hygiène</i> , (f.) diet, regimen.
<i>Humains</i> , (m. pl.) mortals.	<i>Hygromètre</i> , (m.) hygrometer.
<i>Humaniser</i> , to humanize.	<i>Hymen</i> , (m.) Hymen.
<i>Humaniste</i> , (m.) humanist.	<i>Hyménée</i> , (m.) hymen, marriage.
<i>Humanité</i> , (f.) humanity.	<i>Hymne</i> , (m. and f.) hymn.
<i>Humble</i> , humble.	<i>Hyperbole</i> , (f.) hyperbole, hyperbola,
<i>Humblement</i> , humbly.	
<i>Humectation</i> , (f.) humectation.	
<i>Humecter</i> , to moisten.	
<i>Humeur</i> , (f.) humor,	

<i>Hyperbolique</i> , hyperbolical.	<i>Hypothénuse</i> , (f.) hypotenuse.
<i>Hyperboliquement</i> , hyperbolically.	<i>Hypothécaire</i> , hypothecary.
<i>Hyperborée</i> , hyperborean.	<i>Hypothécairement</i> , by hypothecary action.
<i>Hypercritique</i> , (m.) hypercritic.	<i>Hypothèque</i> , (f.) mortgage.
<i>Hypocondre</i> , hypocondriac.	<i>Hypothéquer</i> , to hypothecate.
<i>Hypocondriaque</i> , hypocondriac.	<i>Hypothèse</i> , (f.) hypothesis.
<i>Hypocrisie</i> , (f.) hypocrisy.	<i>Hypothétique</i> , hypothetical.
<i>Hypocrite</i> , hypocritical; (m.) hypocrite.	<i>Hypothétiquement</i> , hypothetically.
<i>Hypostase</i> , (f.) hypostasis.	<i>Hypotypose</i> , (f.) Hypotyposis.
<i>Hypostatique</i> , hypostatical.	<i>Hysope</i> , (f.) hyssop.
<i>Hypostatiquement</i> , hypostatically.	<i>Hystérique</i> , hysterical.

N. B. The *h* is aspirated at the beginning of nearly all proper names. The exceptions are: *Hamilton*, *Harcourt*, *Hector*, *Hélène*, *Hercule*, *Hérode*, *Homère*, *Horace*, *Hymen*, *Hyppolite*. So too with the following: *Hanovre*, *Hollande*, and *Hongrie*, when they are preceded by the preposition *de*. Thus we must say, *d'Hanovre*, *d'Holland*, *d'Hongrie*, though we say, *le Hanovre*, *la Hollande*, *la Hongrie*.

D. (§ 150.)

WORDS ENDING WITH *er* IN WHICH THE FINAL *r* IS SOUNDED.

<i>Alger</i> , Algiers.	<i>Enfer</i> , (m.) hell.
<i>Amer</i> , bitter.	<i>Éther</i> , (m.) ether.
<i>Avant-hier</i> , day before yesterday.	<i>Fer</i> , (m.) iron.
<i>Belvédér</i> , Belvidere.	<i>Fier</i> , haughty.
<i>Cancer</i> , (m.) cancer.	<i>Frater</i> , (m.) young surgeon.
<i>Cher</i> , dear.	<i>Gaster</i> , (m.) stomach.
<i>Cuiller</i> , (f.) spoon.	<i>Gessner</i> , Gessner.
	<i>Hier</i> , yesterday.

<i>Hiver</i> , (m.) winter.	<i>Niger</i> , Niger.
<i>Jupiter</i> , Jupiter.	<i>Outremer</i> , (m.) ultramarine.
<i>Lucifer</i> , Lucifer.	<i>Pater</i> , (m.) the Lord's prayer.
<i>Magister</i> , (m.) village teacher.	<i>Sadder</i> , Sadder.
<i>Mer</i> , (f.) sea.	<i>Stathouder</i> , (m.) stadtholder.
<i>Messer</i> , (m.) master.	<i>Ver</i> , (m.) worm.

By many persons final *r* in the infinitive present of all verbs ending in *er*, though commonly silent, is sounded whenever the next word begins with a vowel. So too in the case of some adjectives ending in *er*, when the substantive which they qualify follows immediately and begins with a vowel; e. g. (sounded) *le premier acte*, the first act, *un léger obstacle*, a light obstacle; but (not sounded) *il est le premier à vous promettre*, he is the first to promise you, *c'est un homme léger et singulier en tout*, he is a man fickle and singular in every thing.

E. (§ 153.)

WORDS IN WHICH FINAL *s* IS SOUNDED.

<i>Adonis</i> , Adonis.	<i>Bis</i> , encore, over again.
<i>Agésilas</i> , Agesilas.	<i>Blas</i> , Blas.
<i>Agnus</i> , (m.) religious toy.	<i>Blocus</i> , (m.) blockade.
<i>Aloès</i> , (m.) aloes.	<i>Bolus</i> , (m.) bolus.
<i>Amadis</i> , Amadis.	<i>Bris</i> , (m.) breaking, fracture.
<i>Angelus</i> , (m.) angelus (a prayer).	<i>Briséis</i> , Brisëis.
<i>Anus</i> , (m.) anus.	<i>Brutus</i> , Brutus.
<i>Argus</i> , Argus.	<i>Calus</i> , (m.) callus.
<i>As</i> , (m.) ace.	<i>Carolus</i> , (m.) ancient coin.
<i>Athos</i> , Athos.	<i>Cholera-morbus</i> , (m.) cholera-
<i>Atlas</i> , Atlas.	morbus.
<i>Bibus</i> , (m.) trifle, of no importance.	<i>Chorus</i> , (m.) chorus.
	<i>Delos</i> , Delos.

<i>Dervis</i> , (m.) dervis.	<i>Minos</i> , Minos.
<i>Devis</i> , (m.) discourse.	<i>Motus</i> , hush.
<i>Dumasis</i> , Dumasis.	<i>Obtus</i> , obtuse.
<i>'Ethiops</i> , (m.) mixture of mercury and sulphur.	<i>Olibrius</i> , (m.) conceited fool.
<i>Extremis</i> (<i>in</i>), in extremity.	<i>Orémus</i> , (m.) orison, prayer.
<i>Fils</i> , (m.) son.	<i>Palus</i> , (m.) marsh.
<i>Fœtus</i> , (m.) fœtus.	<i>Paris</i> , Paris (man's name).
<i>Gars</i> , (m.) boy.	<i>Parisis</i> , Parisian.
<i>Gil Blas</i> , Gil Blas.	<i>Paros</i> , Paros.
<i>Gratis</i> , gratis.	<i>Pathos</i> , (m.) pathos.
<i>Hiatus</i> , (m.) hiatus.	<i>Phébus</i> , (m.) bombast.
<i>Hippocras</i> , (m.) hippocras.	<i>Prospectus</i> , (m.) prospectus.
<i>Ibis</i> , (m.) ibis.	<i>Protésilas</i> , Protesilas.
<i>Indivis</i> , undivided.	<i>Pubis</i> , (m.) pubis.
<i>Intrus</i> , intruded.	<i>Quitus</i> , (m.) acquittance.
<i>Iris</i> , Iris.	<i>Rasibus</i> , close.
<i>Jadis</i> , of old.	<i>Rebus</i> , (m.) rebus.
<i>Jonas</i> , Jonas.	<i>Regulus</i> , Regulus.
<i>Jonathas</i> , Jonathan.	<i>Relaps</i> , relapsed; (m.) relapse.
<i>Lapis</i> , (m.) lapis lazuli.	<i>Rhinocéros</i> , (m.) rhinoceros.
<i>Laps</i> , lapsed.	<i>Sinus</i> , (m.) sinus, sine.
<i>Las Casas</i> , Las Casas.	<i>Sus</i> (<i>en</i>), above.
<i>Lesbos</i> , Lesbos.	<i>Tétanos</i> , (m.) tetanus.
<i>Lis</i> , (m.) lily.	<i>Thémis</i> , Themis.
<i>La Lys</i> , the Lys (river).	<i>Titus</i> , Titus.
<i>Maïs</i> , (m.) maize.	<i>Tournevis</i> , (m.) key of a screw.
<i>Matthias</i> , Matthias.	<i>Vénus</i> , Venus.
<i>Mars</i> , Mars.	<i>Virus</i> , (m.) virus.
<i>Métis</i> , mestizo, mongrel.	<i>Vis</i> , (f.) screw.

There are a few words in which final *s* is pronounced by some when they end a sentence or clause, and only then; viz. *gens*, people, *Jésus*, Jesus, *os*, (m.) bone, *sens*, (m.) sense, *temps*, (m.) time.

F. (§ 154.)

WORDS IN WHICH FINAL *t* IS SOUNDED.

<i>Abject</i> , abject.	<i>Introit</i> , (m.) prelude, beginning.
<i>Accessit</i> , (m.) second prize.	<i>Lest</i> , (m.) ballast.
<i>Achmet</i> , Achmet.	<i>Licet</i> , (m.) permission.
<i>Aconit</i> , (m.) aconite.	<i>Lut</i> , (m.) lute.
<i>Astarot</i> , Ashtaroth.	<i>Malt</i> , (m.) malt.
<i>Azimut</i> , (m.) Azimuth.	<i>Mat</i> , unwrought; (m.) mate.
<i>Bajazet</i> , Bajazet.	<i>Nazaret</i> , Nazareth.
<i>Bismut</i> , (m.) bismuth.	<i>Net</i> , neat.
<i>Brest</i> , Brest.	<i>Occiput</i> , (m.) occiput.
<i>Brut</i> , rough.	<i>Opiat</i> , (m.) opiate.
<i>Christ</i> (<i>le</i>), Christ.	<i>Ouest</i> (<i>l'</i>), (m.) the West.
<i>Chut!</i> hush!	<i>Pat</i> , stale-mate (in chess).
<i>Compact</i> , compact.	<i>Pest</i> , pest.
<i>Comput</i> , (m.) computation.	<i>Préciput</i> , (m.) preference (law).
<i>Contact</i> , (m.) contact.	<i>Préterit</i> , (m.) preterite.
<i>Correct</i> , correct.	<i>Prurit</i> , (m.) itch.
<i>Déficit</i> , (m.) deficit.	<i>Rapt</i> , (m.) rape.
<i>Direct</i> , direct.	<i>Rit</i> , (m.) rite.
<i>Dot</i> , (f.) dowry.	<i>Rut</i> , (m.) rut.
<i>Elizabet</i> , Elizabeth.	<i>Sept</i> , seven.
<i>Est</i> (<i>l'</i>), (m.) the East.	<i>Sinciput</i> , (m.) sinciput.
<i>Et cetera</i> , et cetera.	<i>Spalt</i> , (m.) spalt.
<i>Fat</i> , (m.) coxcomb.	<i>Spat</i> , (m.) spar.
<i>Fret</i> , (m.) freight.	<i>Strict</i> , strict.
<i>Goliat</i> , Goliath.	<i>Subit</i> , sudden.
<i>Granit</i> , (m.) granite.	<i>Tacet</i> , (m.) pause, rest.
<i>Hast</i> , (m.) spear.	<i>Tacit</i> , tacit.
<i>Huit</i> , eight.	<i>Tact</i> , (m.) touch, tact.
<i>Indirect</i> , indirect.	<i>Test</i> , (m.) test.
<i>Indult</i> , (m.) indulgence.	<i>Thibet</i> , Thibet.
<i>Intact</i> , untouched.	<i>Toast</i> , (m.) toast.

<i>Transeat</i> , (m.) transeat.	<i>Yacht</i> , (m.) yacht.
<i>Transit</i> , (m.) passport.	<i>Zénit</i> , (m.) zenith.
<i>Ut</i> , (m.) ut (note in the gamut).	<i>Zest</i> , } <i>entre le zist et le zest</i> ,
<i>Vivat</i> , long live.	<i>Zist</i> , } neither good nor bad.

G. (§ 225.)

PROPER NAMES OF COUNTRIES, AND DISTRICTS LARGER THAN
CITIES, WHICH DO NOT TAKE THE DEFINITE ARTICLE.

<i>Acadie</i> , Acadia.	<i>Ithaque</i> , Ithaca.
<i>Alger</i> , Algiers.	<i>Léon</i> , Leon.
<i>Avignon</i> , Avignon.	<i>Lucques</i> , Lucca.
<i>Babylone</i> , Babylon.	<i>Madère</i> , Madeira.
<i>Calabre</i> , Calabria.	<i>Majorque</i> , Majorca.
<i>Cambaie</i> , Cambay.	<i>Madagascar</i> , Madagascar.
<i>Candie</i> , Candia.	<i>Malacca</i> , Malacca.
<i>Carthage</i> , Carthage.	<i>Malte</i> , Malta.
<i>Cephalonie</i> , Cephalonia.	<i>Maroc</i> , Morocco.
<i>Cordoue</i> , Cordova.	<i>Mékelbourg</i> , Mecklenburg.
<i>Cornuaille</i> , Cornwall.	<i>Minorque</i> , Minorca.
<i>Corse</i> , Corsica.	<i>Modène</i> , Modena.
<i>Courlande</i> , Courland.	<i>Naples</i> , Naples.
<i>Cypre</i> , Cyprus.	<i>Naxos</i> , Naxos.
<i>Dominique (St.)</i> , St. Domingo.	<i>Orange</i> , Orange.
<i>Florence</i> , Florence.	<i>Otrante</i> , Otranto.
<i>Gènes</i> , Genoa.	<i>Palmyre</i> , Palmyra.
<i>Genève</i> , Geneva.	<i>Piedmont</i> , Piedmont.
<i>Grenesey</i> , Guernsey.	<i>Rome</i> , Rome.
<i>Groningue</i> , Groningen.	<i>Scanie</i> or <i>Schonen</i> , Scania or
<i>Gueldres</i> , Guelderland.	Schonen.
<i>Istrie</i> , Istria.	<i>Seville</i> , Seville.

Tolède, Toledo.
Tripoli, Tripoli.
Tunis, Tunis.
Valence, Valencia.

Venise, Venice.
Vicence, Vicenza.
Wurtemberg, Wurtemberg.
Wurzbouurg, Wurtzburg.

H. (§§ 237, 238.)

EXPRESSIONS IN WHICH SUBSTANTIVES ARE USED WITHOUT
 ANY DEFINITE ARTICLE.

<i>À balle</i> , with ball.	<i>À fond</i> , at bottom.
<i>À barbe</i> , for the beard.	<i>À force de</i> , by means of.
<i>À bâtons rompus</i> , at various times.	<i>À forfait</i> , as forfeited.
<i>À belles dents</i> , with fine teeth.	<i>À froid</i> , when cold.
<i>À bled</i> , for corn.	<i>À froment</i> , for corn.
<i>À bon titre</i> , by good right.	<i>À genoux</i> , on one's knees.
<i>À bras</i> , for the hand.	<i>À heure indue</i> , at an undue hour.
<i>À califourchon</i> , astride.	<i>À honneur</i> , as an honor.
<i>À cartouche</i> , with a cartouch.	<i>À huis clos</i> , privately.
<i>À chaud et à ciment</i> , with solidity.	<i>À injure</i> , as an injury.
<i>À cheval</i> , on horseback.	<i>À intérêt</i> , on interest.
<i>À cœur jeûn</i> , fasting.	<i>À jour préfix</i> , at an appointed day.
<i>À condition</i> , on condition.	<i>À loisir</i> , at leisure.
<i>À contretemps</i> , unseasonably.	<i>À main</i> , for the hand, etc.
<i>À courbettes</i> , in curvettes.	<i>À mort</i> , to death.
<i>À dessein</i> , designedly.	<i>À nuit fermante</i> , at night-fall.
<i>À eau</i> , for water.	<i>À outrance</i> , to extremity.
<i>À demeure</i> , for an end.	<i>À papier</i> , for paper.
<i>À feu</i> , for fire.	<i>À perpétuité</i> , in perpetuity.
<i>À fleur</i> , even with.	<i>À perte de vue</i> , out of sight.

<i>À pied</i> , on foot.	<i>Avec prudence</i> , with prudence.
<i>À plaisir</i> , at pleasure.	<i>Avec raison</i> , with reason.
<i>À poil</i> , bare.	<i>Avec soin</i> , with care.
<i>À point</i> , opportunely.	<i>Avoir bonne mine</i> , to look well.
<i>À portée</i> , at hand.	<i>Avoir commandement</i> , to command.
<i>À poudre</i> , for powder.	<i>Avoir congé</i> , to have holiday.
<i>À raison</i> , by reason.	<i>Avoir courage</i> , to have spirit.
<i>À reculons</i> , backward.	<i>Avoir dispute</i> , to have a quarrel.
<i>À regret</i> , with regret.	<i>Demander réparation</i> , to ask reparation.
<i>À tâtons</i> , in the dark, groping.	<i>Depuis minuit</i> , since midnight.
<i>À témoin</i> , to witness.	<i>Donner assignation</i> , to give a summons.
<i>À temps</i> , in good time.	<i>Donner assurance</i> , to assure.
<i>À terre</i> , on the ground.	<i>Donner attention</i> , to attend.
<i>À titre</i> , under color.	<i>Donner chasse</i> , to give chase.
<i>À tort</i> , wrongfully.	<i>Donner congé</i> , to give leave.
<i>À vent</i> , for wind.	<i>Donner croyance</i> , to give credence.
<i>À voiles et à rames</i> , by sails and oars.	<i>Donner (se) garde</i> , to take care.
<i>Après dîner</i> , after dinner.	<i>Donner (se) joie</i> , to feel joy.
<i>Avant dîner</i> , before dinner.	<i>Donner matière</i> , to afford matter.
<i>Avant midi</i> , before noon.	<i>Donner place</i> , to give place.
<i>Avant terme</i> , before time.	<i>Donner rang</i> , to give rank.
<i>Avec clemence</i> , with clemency.	<i>Donner séance</i> , to give a seat.
<i>Avec courage</i> , with courage.	<i>Donner voix</i> , to give a voice.
<i>Avec douleur</i> , with pain.	<i>'Ecuelle à oreilles</i> , porringer with ears.
<i>Avec facilité</i> , with facility.	<i>En ami</i> , as a friend.
<i>Avec joie</i> , with joy.	<i>En amitié</i> , in friendship.
<i>Avec justesse</i> , with justness.	<i>En avance</i> , in advance.
<i>Avec maturité</i> , with maturity.	<i>En bataille</i> , in battle.
<i>Avec patience</i> , with patience.	
<i>Avec plaisir</i> , with pleasure.	
<i>Avec peine</i> , with difficulty.	
<i>Avec précipitation</i> , with precipitation.	
<i>Avec précision</i> , with precision.	

<i>En bateau</i> , in a boat.	<i>En oraison</i> , at prayer.
<i>En bonheur</i> , in happiness.	<i>En paix</i> , in peace.
<i>En campagne</i> , in the field.	<i>En parchemin</i> , in parchment.
<i>En carrosse</i> , in a coach.	<i>En patience</i> , in patience.
<i>En chaleur</i> , in heat.	<i>En pièces</i> , in pieces.
<i>En colère</i> , in choler.	<i>En place</i> , in place.
<i>En conformité</i> , in conformity.	<i>En plein jour</i> , in open day.
<i>En conscience</i> , in conscience.	<i>En possession</i> , in possession.
<i>En couche</i> , brought to bed.	<i>En proie</i> , as a prey.
<i>En course</i> , on a cruise.	<i>En regne</i> , in vogue.
<i>En crainte</i> , in fear.	<i>En repos</i> , quietly.
<i>En décadence</i> , in a decline.	<i>En reste</i> , remaining.
<i>En défaillance</i> , in a swoon.	<i>En songe</i> , in a dream.
<i>En demeure</i> , in arrears.	<i>En temps</i> , in season.
<i>En deuil</i> , in mourning.	<i>En tête</i> , in head.
<i>En dévotion</i> , in devotion.	<i>En veau</i> , in calf.
<i>En eau</i> , in water.	<i>En vérité</i> , in truth.
<i>En espérance</i> , in hope.	<i>En vie</i> , in life.
<i>En été</i> , in summer.	<i>En ville</i> , in the city.
<i>En exercise</i> , in exercise.	<i>En vue</i> , in sight.
<i>En extase</i> , in extasy.	<i>Faire achat</i> , to purchase.
<i>En face</i> , in face.	<i>Faire bonne chère</i> , to live in style.
<i>En fleur</i> , in flower.	<i>Faire chemin</i> , to advance.
<i>En fond</i> , at bottom.	<i>Faire commandement</i> , to command.
<i>En fraude</i> , deceitfully.	<i>Faire défense</i> , to defend.
<i>En fumée</i> , in smoke.	<i>Faire dépense</i> , to expend.
<i>En fureur</i> , in fury.	<i>Faire déplaisir</i> , to displease.
<i>En guerre</i> , at war.	<i>Faire diacre</i> , to do deacon's duty.
<i>En haine</i> , in hatred.	<i>Faire diète</i> , to diet.
<i>En haleine</i> , in breath.	<i>Faire diligence</i> , to exert one's self.
<i>En hiver</i> , in winter.	<i>Faire divorce</i> , to divorce one's self.
<i>En larmes</i> , in tears.	
<i>En main</i> , in hand.	
<i>En manteau</i> , in a gown.	
<i>En même temps</i> , at the same time.	

<i>Faire don</i> , to give.	<i>Par chants</i> , by cantos.
<i>Faire estime</i> , to cause esteem.	<i>Par charité</i> , by charity.
<i>Faire faillite</i> , to fail.	<i>Par chicane</i> , by trickery.
<i>Faire guet et garde</i> , to keep watch and ward.	<i>Par crainte</i> , by fear.
<i>Faire (se) jour</i> , to make way.	<i>Par dépit</i> , in spite.
<i>Faire lecture</i> , to read.	<i>Par droit</i> , by right.
<i>Faire loi</i> , to be obligatory.	<i>Par eau</i> , by water.
<i>Faire maison nette</i> , to clear the house.	<i>Par force</i> , by force.
<i>Faire œuvre</i> , to do something.	<i>Par fraude</i> , by fraud.
<i>Faire offre</i> , to offer.	<i>Par haine</i> , by hatred.
<i>Faire planche</i> , to set a heroic example.	<i>Par hasard</i> , by chance.
<i>Faire préjudice</i> , to do harm.	<i>Par inadvertence</i> , by inadver- tence.
<i>Faire rage</i> , to storm, rage.	<i>Par intérêt</i> , by interest.
<i>Faire séjour</i> , to reside, sojourn.	<i>Par ironie</i> , by way of irony.
<i>Faire service</i> , to do service.	<i>Par jeu</i> , by play.
<i>Faire vengeance</i> , to derive pro- fit.	<i>Par lambeaux</i> , by shreds.
<i>Lier conversation</i> , to enter into conversation.	<i>Par manière d'acquit</i> , by way of quittance.
<i>Lier société</i> , to enter into com- pany.	<i>Par mégarde</i> , by inatten- tion.
<i>Par adresse</i> , by art.	<i>Par mépris</i> , by contempt.
<i>Par amour</i> , by love.	<i>Par mer</i> , by sea.
<i>Par animosité</i> , by animosity.	<i>Par morceaux</i> , by bits.
<i>Par aumône</i> , by way of alms.	<i>Par ordre</i> , by order.
<i>Par aventure</i> , by chance.	<i>Par parties</i> , by parts.
<i>Par bonds</i> , by jumps.	<i>Par pièces</i> , by pieces.
<i>Par bonheur</i> , by good fortune.	<i>Par quartiers</i> , by quarters.
<i>Par bonté</i> , by goodness.	<i>Par raillerie</i> , by way of rail- lery.
<i>Par chagrin</i> , in spite.	<i>Par raison</i> , on account.
<i>Par cantons</i> , by cantons.	<i>Par sauts</i> , by leaps.
	<i>Par tas</i> , in heaps.
	<i>Par terre</i> , by land.

<i>Par voies et par chemins</i> , on the road.	<i>Sans miséricorde</i> , without mercy.
<i>Parler affaires</i> , to talk of business.	<i>Sans peine</i> , without difficulty.
<i>Parler chasse</i> , to talk of the chase.	<i>Sans peur et sans reproche</i> , without fear or reproach.
<i>Parler chicane</i> , to talk chicanery.	<i>Sans réplique</i> , without reply.
<i>Parler géométrie</i> , to talk geometry.	<i>Sans réserve</i> , without reserve.
<i>Pour cause</i> , for cause.	<i>Sans souci</i> , without care.
<i>Pour Dieu</i> , for God's sake.	<i>Sans vanité</i> , without vanity.
<i>Pour fève</i> , (<i>pois pour fève</i>) for a bean.	<i>Sou à sou</i> , cent by cent.
<i>Pour lit</i> , for bed.	<i>Soutenir noblesse</i> , to maintain one's nobility.
<i>Pour oreiller</i> , for pillow.	<i>Sur mer</i> , on the sea.
<i>Pour raison</i> , for a reason.	<i>Sur parole</i> , on hearsay.
<i>Pour récompense</i> , for recompense.	<i>Sur pied</i> , a-foot.
<i>Sans argent</i> , without money.	<i>Sur terre</i> , on the ground.
<i>Sans cérémonie</i> , without ceremony.	<i>Tenir académie</i> , to keep an academy.
<i>Sans cesse</i> , unceasingly.	<i>Tenir auberge</i> , to keep an inn.
<i>Sans compliment</i> , without compliment.	<i>Tenir banque</i> , to keep a bank.
<i>Sans contredit</i> , without contradiction.	<i>Tenir chambre garnie</i> , to keep furnished lodgings.
<i>Sans délai</i> , without delay.	<i>Tenir chapelle</i> , to be present at chapel.
<i>Sans difficulté</i> , without difficulty.	<i>Tenir école</i> , to keep school.
<i>Sans doute</i> , undoubtedly.	<i>Tenir hotellerie</i> , to keep tavern.
<i>Sans façon</i> , without ceremony.	<i>Tenir jeu</i> , to keep on playing.
<i>Sans faute</i> , without fail.	<i>Tenir pension</i> , to keep a boarding-school.
<i>Sans fin</i> , without end.	<i>Tenir registre</i> , to keep a register.
<i>Sans honneur</i> , without honor.	<i>Tirer parole</i> , to get a promise.
<i>Sans jugement</i> , without judgment.	<i>Tirer promesse</i> , to get a promise.
	<i>Tirer vanité</i> , to get nothing.
	<i>Trouver moyen</i> , to find means.

SUBSTANTIVES WHICH HAVE TWO GENDERS, AND A DIFFERENT
SIGNIFICATION IN EACH.

I. (§ 257.)

	<i>Masculine.</i>	<i>Feminine.</i>
<i>Aide,</i>	assistant,	assistance.
<i>Aigle,</i>	eagle (bird, and coin),	eagle (standard, constellation, and device).
<i>Ange,</i>	angel,	fish like a thorn-back.
<i>Aune,</i>	alder,	ell.
<i>Barbe,</i>	barb (horse),	beard.
<i>Barde,</i>	bard,	slice of bacon.
<i>Berce,</i>	red-breast,	cow-parsnip.
<i>Câpre,</i>	privateer,	caper (pickle).
<i>Cartouche,</i>	scroll (in painting),	cartridge.
<i>Coche,</i>	coach, caravan, boat,	sow, notch.
<i>Cornette,</i>	cornet (officer),	mob-cap.
<i>Couple,</i>	couple (man and wife),	brace, two.
<i>Coureur, euse,</i>	racer, runner,	street-walker.
<i>Courtisan, e,</i>	courtier,	courtesan.
<i>Cravate,</i>	Croat,	cravat.
<i>Crêpe,</i>	crape,	pancake.
<i>Echo,</i>	echo,	echo (nymph).
<i>Enseigne,</i>	ensign (officer),	sign, mark.
<i>Exemple,</i>	example, instance,	writing-copy.
<i>Forêt,</i>	gimlet,	forest.
<i>Foudre,</i>	tun,	thunderbolt. [nurse.
<i>Garde,</i>	keeper, warden,	guards, watch, hilt,
<i>Givre,</i>	rime, hoar-frost,	snake (in heraldry).
<i>Greffe,</i>	rolls, register,	graft.
<i>Guide,</i>	guide, tutor,	rein.
<i>Héliotrope,</i>	sun-flower,	jasper.
<i>Iris,</i>	rainbow, iris of the eye,	sprig-crystal, name of a goddess.

	<i>Masculine.</i>	<i>Feminine.</i>
<i>Laque,</i>	lacker,	gum-lac.
<i>Livre,</i>	book,	pound.
<i>Loutre,</i>	otter-hat,	otter (animal).
<i>Manche,</i>	handle,	sleeve, channel.
<i>Manœuvre,</i>	laborer,	manœuvre.
<i>Masque,</i>	mask,	ugly woman.
<i>Mémoire,</i>	memoir, bill,	memory.
<i>Merci,</i>	thanks,	mercy, pity.
<i>Mode,</i>	mood, mode (of verbs),	fashion, way.
<i>Môle,</i>	pier, mole (structure),	moon-calf.
<i>Mort,</i>	dead man,	death.
<i>Moule,</i>	mould,	muscle (shell-fish).
<i>Mousse,</i>	cabin-boy,	moss, froth.
<i>Œuvre,</i>	philosopher's stone,	work, action.
<i>Office,</i>	duty, charge, business,	office, pantry, larder.
	prayers,	
<i>Ombre,</i>	ombre (game),	shadow.
<i>Page,</i>	page (boy),	page (of a book).
<i>Paillasse,</i>	harlequin,	straw-bed.
<i>Palme,</i>	hand's-breadth,	palm-branch, victory.
<i>Pantomime,</i>	a buffoon,	dumb-show.
<i>Pâque,</i>	Easter,	passover.
<i>Parallèle,</i>	comparison,	parallel line.
<i>Pendule,</i>	pendulum,	clock.
<i>Perche,</i>	Perche (place),	pole, perch.
<i>Période,</i>	summit, pitch,	period, epoch.
<i>Personne,</i>	nobody, any body,	person.
<i>Pique,</i>	spade (at cards),	pike.
<i>Pivoine,</i>	gnat-snapper (bird),	peony (flower).
<i>Plane,</i>	plane (tree),	plane (instrument).
<i>Poêle,</i>	stove, canopy,	frying-pan.
<i>Ponte,</i>	punto, the punter (at cards),	laying of eggs.
<i>Poste,</i>	post (military),	post (for letters).

	<i>Masculine.</i>	<i>Feminine.</i>
<i>Pourpre,</i>	purples (disease), purple (color),	purple dye, purple fish.
<i>Prétexte,</i>	pretext, pretence,	pretexta (gown).
<i>Quadrille,</i>	quadrille (game at cards),	party of cavaliers.
<i>Réclame,</i>	recall of a hawk,	catch-word (in printing).
<i>Relâche,</i>	rest, recreation,	harbor.
<i>Satyre,</i>	satyr,	satire.
<i>Serpentaire,</i>	serpentarius (constellation),	snake-root.
<i>Somme,</i>	nap, slumber,	sum, summary, load, name of a river.
<i>Souris,</i>	smile,	mouse.
<i>Suisse,</i>	porter,	Switzerland.
<i>Teneur,</i>	book-keeper,	tenor, contents.
<i>Tour,</i>	circuit, turn, tour, trick,	tower, rook (at chess).
<i>Triomphe,</i>	triumph,	trump.
<i>Trompette,</i>	trumpeter,	trumpet.
<i>Vague,</i>	space, expanse,	wave.
<i>Vase,</i>	vase,	slime.
<i>Vigogne,</i>	hat of Vigonia wool,	Peruvian sheep.
<i>Voile,</i>	veil,	sail.

J. (§§ 345, 355.)

FRENCH NUMERALS.

Cardinal.	Ordinal.
<i>Un, une,</i> one.	<i>Premier</i> or <i>unième</i> , first.
<i>Deux,</i> two.	<i>Second</i> or <i>deuxième</i> , second.
<i>Trois,</i> three.	<i>Troisième</i> , third.
<i>Quatre,</i> four.	<i>Quatrième</i> , fourth.
<i>Cinq,</i> five.	<i>Cinquième</i> , fifth.

Cardinal.

Six, six.
Sept, seven.
Huit, eight.
Neuf, nine.
Dix, ten.
Onze, eleven.
Douze, twelve.
Treize, thirteen.
Quatorze, fourteen.
Quinze, fifteen.
Seize, sixteen.
Dix-sept, seventeen.
Dix-huit, eighteen.
Dix-neuf, nineteen.
Vingt, twenty.
Vingt-et-un, twenty-one.
Vingt-deux, twenty-two.

Vingt-trois, twenty-three.
Vingt-quatre, twenty-four.
Vingt-cinq, twenty-five, etc.
Trente, thirty.
Trente-et-un, thirty-one.
Trente-deux, thirty-two, etc.
Quarante, forty.
Cinquante, fifty.
Soixante, sixty.
Soixante-dix, seventy.
Soixante-onze, seventy-one.
Soixante-douze, seventy-two.

Soixante-treize, seventy-three,
 etc.
Quatre-vingt, eighty.

Ordinal.

Sixième, sixth.
Septième, seventh.
Huitième, eighth.
Neuvième, ninth.
Dixième, tenth.
Onzième, eleventh.
Douzième, twelfth.
Treizième, thirteenth.
Quatorzième, fourteenth.
Quinzième, fifteenth.
Seizième, sixteenth.
Dix-septième, seventeenth.
Dix-huitième, eighteenth.
Dix-neuvième, nineteenth.
Vingtième, twentieth.
Vingt-et-unième, twenty-first.
Vingt-deuxième, twenty-second.

Vingt-troisième, twenty-third.
Vingt-quatrième, twenty-fourth.
Vingt-cinquième, twenty-fifth.
Trentième, thirtieth. [etc.
Trente-et-unième, thirty-first.
Trente-deuxième, thirty-second,
Quarantième, fortieth. [etc.
Cinquantième, fiftieth.
Soixantième, sixtieth.
Soixante-dixième, seventieth.
Soixante-onzième, seventy-first.
Soixante-douzième, seventy-second.

Soixante-treizième, seventy-third, etc.
Quatre-vingtième, eightieth.

Cardinal.	Ordinal.
<i>Quatre-vingt-dix</i> , ninety.	<i>Quatre-vingt-dixième</i> , ninetyeth.
<i>Cent</i> , hundred.	<i>Centième</i> , hundredth.
<i>Cent-un</i> , hundred and one.	<i>Cent-unième</i> , hundred and first.
<i>Deux cents</i> , two hundred.	<i>Deux-centième</i> , two hundredth.
<i>Trois cents</i> , three hundred.	<i>Trois-centième</i> , three hundredth.
<i>Mille</i> or <i>mil</i> , thousand.	<i>Millième</i> , thousandth.
<i>Deux mille</i> , two thousand.	<i>Deux-millième</i> , two thousandth.
<i>Dix mille</i> , ten thousand.	<i>Dix-millième</i> , ten thousandth.
<i>Mille fois mille</i> , million.	<i>Millionième</i> , millionth.]

Observations on French Numerals.

§ I. The numbers from twenty to thirty, from thirty to forty, from forty to fifty, from fifty to sixty, and from sixty to seventy, are all represented by adding the units to the tens, in the manner indicated above as to the numbers from twenty to twenty-five. The *un* is connected by means of the conjunction *et* with the numeral denoting the ten, except in the case of the number eighty-one. The other units are connected with the ten *without et* in all instances.

§ II. The French method of representing the numbers seventy and ninety is just as if we should call the number seventy sixty-ten, and the number ninety eighty-ten. The intermediate numbers between seventy and eighty, and ninety and one hundred, are represented in a way equivalent to our calling the number seventy-one sixty-eleven, seventy-two sixty-twelve, (and so on to sixty-nineteen for seventy-nine,) and ninety-one eighty-eleven, etc. The French representation of the number eighty is equivalent to our calling it four-twenties, or, as we sometimes do call it, four-score.

§ III. Of the cardinal numbers, *un* has, as represented, a fem. sing. *une*, a pl. masc. *uns*, a pl. fem. *unes*; and *quatre-vingt* and *cent* have as plurals *quatre-vingts* and *cents* or *cens*, when

they are *immediately followed by a substantive*, and not otherwise. E. g. we say, *quatre-vingt volumes*, eighty volumes, *deux cents* (or *cens*) *hommes*, two hundred men; but we must say, *quatre-vingt-huit volumes*, eighty-eight volumes, *deux cent cinquante hommes*, two hundred and fifty men. No other cardinal number is varied at all by way of gender or number. *Vingt milles* means twenty miles, not twenty thousand, which is *vingt mille*.

§ IV. The only ordinal numbers which are varied at all by way of gender are *premier* and *second*, which have feminine forms, *première* and *seconde*. Some of the ordinal numbers occasionally appear in the plural, which is formed by adding *s*; e. g. *tous les seconds jours du mois*, every second day of the month, *les secondes noces*, the second nuptials.

§ V. The ordinal number *unième* is never found except in compounds, where *premier* (as also *second*) is inadmissible.

§ VI. In dates *mil* is always used instead of *mille*; in all other cases *mille* is used. E. g. *mil huit cent quarante*, 1840, *deux mille femmes*, two thousand women.

§ VII. In mentioning the *hour*, the cardinal numbers are employed instead of the ordinal; e. g. *il est trois heures*, it is three o'clock. In mentioning the *day of the month*, either the cardinal or the ordinal numbers may be employed; e. g. *le onze du mois*, or *le onzième du mois*, the eleventh of the month.* In mentioning the year of an era we must use the cardinal numbers; e. g. *l'an mil sept cent*, the year 1700. But we say *le dixième siècle*, the tenth century, *dans sa onzième année*, in his eleventh year.

§ VIII. In speaking of the order of sovereigns, the cardinal numbers must be employed, excepting for *first* and *second*. E. g. we must say, *Henri Quatre*, Henry Fourth, *Louis Quatorze*, Louis Fourteenth, *George Trois*, George Third;

* To this statement there is one exception: *un* can never be used thus. We must always say, *le premier du mois*, the first of the month.

but, *Philippe Premier*, Philip First, *Jean Second*, John Second.*

§ IX. The numerals *cent* and *mille* are used in an indefinite manner, just as the corresponding numerals in English often occur; e. g. *il lui fit cent caresses*, he showed him a hundred marks of kindness, *faites lui mille amitiés de ma part*, present him a thousand compliments on my behalf.

§ X. There are many words of a numerical character in the French language besides those contained in the table which has been presented. Some of these additional numerals are called *collective substantives*; e. g. *trio*, trio, *demi-douzaine*, half-a-dozen, *huitaine*, week, *dizaine*, half-a-score, *douzaine*, dozen, *quinzaine*, fortnight, *vingtaine*, score, *centaine*, hundred, etc. Others are called *distributive*; e. g. *la moitié*, the half, *le quart*, the quarter, *un cinquième*, a fifth, etc. Others still are called *proportional*; e. g. *double*, double, *triple*, triple, *centuple*, hundred-fold.

K. (§ 350.)

ADJECTIVES WHICH HAVE DIFFERENT SIGNIFICATIONS ACCORDING AS THEY STAND BEFORE OR AFTER THE SUBSTANTIVE TO WHICH THEY RELATE.

	Before.	After.
<i>Certain.</i>	<i>Certaine chose</i> , certain thing.	<i>Chose certaine</i> , thing undoubted.
<i>Different.</i>	<i>Differentes choses</i> , several things.	<i>Choses differentes</i> , dissimilar things.
<i>Galant.</i>	<i>Galant homme</i> , man of probity or tact.	<i>Homme galant</i> , man of gallantry.
<i>Gentil.</i>	<i>Gentille femme</i> , genteel woman.	<i>Femme gentille</i> , heathen woman.
<i>Grand.</i>	<i>Grand homme</i> , great man.	<i>Homme grand</i> , large man.

* *Quint* is used for *Cinq*, five, in speaking of the emperor Charles Fifth (*Charles Quint*) and pope Sixtus Fifth (*Sixte Quint*).

<i>Grosse.</i>	<i>Grosse femme</i> , large wo- man.	<i>Femme grosse</i> , woman with child.
<i>Honnête.</i>	<i>Honnête homme</i> , honest man.	<i>Homme honnête</i> , polite man.
<i>Nouveau.</i>	<i>Nouveau vin</i> , wine just brought.	<i>Vin nouveau</i> , new wine.
<i>Plaisant.</i>	<i>Plaisant homme</i> , ridicu- lous man.	<i>Homme plaisant</i> , agree- able man.
<i>Propre.</i>	<i>Mon propre habit</i> , my own coat.	<i>Habit propre</i> , neat coat.
<i>Sage.</i>	<i>Sage-femme</i> , midwife.	<i>Femme sage</i> , discreet wo- man.
<i>Seul.</i>	<i>Seul homme</i> , only man.	<i>Homme seul</i> , man alone.

L. (§§ 532, 546.)

INTRANSITIVE VERBS CONJUGATED WITH *être* INSTEAD OF *avoir*.

* <i>Aborder</i> , to land.	<i>Disconvenir</i> , to deny, to dis- own.
* <i>Accoucher</i> , to bring forth.	* <i>'Echapper</i> , to escape.
* <i>Accourir</i> , to run to.	<i>'Echoir</i> , to become due.
<i>Aller</i> , to go.	<i>'Eclore</i> , to blow.
* <i>Apparaître</i> , to appear.	<i>Entrer</i> , to enter.
<i>Arriver</i> , to arrive.	* <i>Expirer</i> , to expire.
<i>Avenir</i> , to happen.	<i>Intervenir</i> , to intervene.
<i>Choir</i> , to fall.	* <i>Monter</i> , to go or come up.
* <i>Convenir</i> , to suit.	<i>Mourir</i> , to die.
<i>Décéder</i> , to die.	<i>Naître</i> , to be born.
<i>Déchoir</i> , to decay.	<i>Partir</i> , to depart.
* <i>Demeurer</i> , to stay.	<i>Parvenir</i> , to attain.
* <i>Descendre</i> , to come down.	* <i>Passer</i> , to pass.
<i>Devenir</i> , to become.	

* <i>Périr</i> , to perish.	<i>Rester</i> , to remain.
<i>Provenir</i> , to proceed.	<i>Retomber</i> , to fall again.
<i>Redescendre</i> , to redescend.	<i>Retourner</i> , to return.
* <i>Remonter</i> , to remount.	* <i>Résulter</i> , to result.
<i>Rentrer</i> , to reënter.	<i>Revenir</i> , to come again.
<i>Repartir</i> , to set out again.	<i>Sortir</i> , to go or come out.
* <i>Repasser</i> , to repass.	<i>Survenir</i> , to befall.
<i>Ressouvenir</i> , to remember.	<i>Tomber</i> , to fall.
<i>Ressortir</i> , to go out again.	<i>Venir</i> , to come.

N. B. The verbs marked with an asterisk in the above catalogue sometimes take *avoir* as the auxiliary in their compound tenses. *Convenir*, for instance, takes *avoir* when it means *to please* or *suit*, and *être* when it means *to agree*; e. g. *cette maison m'a convenu, et je suis convenu du prix*, this house has pleased me, and I have agreed about the price. In most, if not all, other cases there is a slight shade of difference in signification which determines whether *avoir* or *être* shall be employed. When *avoir* is used the sense is ordinarily more *active* than when *être* is used; e. g. the expression *il a descendu* fixes the mind on the *action of descent*, while *il est descendu* indicates more directly the *situation after descent*.

M. (§§ 547, 548.)

TABLE OF IRREGULAR AND DEFECTIVE VERBS.*

ABATTRE, TO PULL DOWN. See *Battre*.
 ABSOUDRE, TO ABSOLVE. See *Résoudre*.
 ABSTENIR, TO ABSTAIN. See *Tenir*.
 ABSTRAIRE, TO ABSTRACT. See *Traire*.

* In this Table of Conjugation the compound tenses and all the personal pronouns are omitted, since they can easily be supplied.

ACCOURIR, TO RUN TO. See *Courir*.

ACCROIRE, TO BELIEVE. See *Croire*.

ACCROÎTRE, TO INCREASE. See *Croître*.

ACCUEILLIR, TO RECEIVE. See *Cueillir*.

ACQUERIR, TO ACQUIRE.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. *Acquérant*.

Past, *Acquis*.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Acquiers.</i>	<i>Acquérons.</i>
<i>Acquiers.</i>	<i>Acquérez.</i>
<i>Acquiert.</i>	<i>Acquièrent.</i>

Imperfect.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Acquérais.</i>	<i>Acquériers.</i>
<i>Acquérais.</i>	<i>Acquériez.</i>
<i>Acquérait.</i>	<i>Acquéraient.</i>

Perfect.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Acquis.</i>	<i>Acquîmes.</i>
<i>Acquis.</i>	<i>Acquîtes.</i>
<i>Acquit.</i>	<i>Acquirent.</i>

Future.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Acquerrai.</i>	<i>Acquerrons.</i>
<i>Acquerras.</i>	<i>Acquerrez.</i>
<i>Acquerra.</i>	<i>Acquerront.</i>

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Acquerrais.</i>	<i>Acquerriers.</i>
<i>Acquerrais.</i>	<i>Acquerriez.</i>
<i>Acquerrait.</i>	<i>Acquerraient.</i>

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Acquière.</i>	<i>Acquériers.</i>
<i>Acquières.</i>	<i>Acquériez.</i>
<i>Acquière.</i>	<i>Acquièrent.</i>

Imperfect.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Acquisse.</i>	<i>Acquissions.</i>
<i>Acquisses.</i>	<i>Acquissiez.</i>
<i>Acquît.</i>	<i>Acquissent.</i>

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.	Plural.
	<i>Acquérons.</i>
<i>Acquièrs.</i>	<i>Acquérez.</i>
<i>Acquièrè.</i>	<i>Acquièrènt.</i>

VERBS CONJUGATED LIKE *Acquérir*.

<i>Conquérir</i> , to conquer.	<i>Reconquérir</i> , to reconquer.
<i>s'Enquérir</i> , to inquire.	<i>Requérir</i> , to require.

Conquérir is used only in the infinitive, the indicative perfect, subjunctive imperfect, and the compound tenses. *Requérir* is used only in law. *S'enquérir* is not used now, its place being supplied by *s'informer*. *Querir*, to fetch, is used only in the Infinitive after some form of the verbs *Aller*, *Envoyer*, *Venir*.

ADJOINDRE, TO ADJOIN. See *Joindre*.

ADMETTRE, TO ADMIT. See *Mettre*.

ALLER, TO GO.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. <i>Allant.</i>	Past. <i>Allé.</i>
----------------------	--------------------

INDICATIVE.

Present.		Imperfect.	
Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
<i>Vais.</i>	<i>Allons.</i>	<i>Allais.</i>	<i>Allions.</i>
<i>Vas.</i>	<i>Allez.</i>	<i>Allais.</i>	<i>Alliez.</i>
<i>Va.</i>	<i>Vont.</i>	<i>Allait.</i>	<i>Allaient.</i>
Perfect.		Future.	
Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
<i>Allai.</i>	<i>Allâmes.</i>	<i>Irai.</i>	<i>Irons.</i>
<i>Allas.</i>	<i>Allâtes.</i>	<i>Iras.</i>	<i>Irez.</i>
<i>Alla.</i>	<i>Allèrent.</i>	<i>Ira.</i>	<i>Iront.</i>

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Irais.</i>	<i>Irions.</i>
<i>Irais.</i>	<i>Iriez.</i>
<i>Irait.</i>	<i>Iraient.</i>

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

Imperfect.

Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
<i>Aille.</i>	<i>Aillions.</i>	<i>Allasse.</i>	<i>Allassions.</i>
<i>Ailles.</i>	<i>Ailliez.</i>	<i>Allasses.</i>	<i>Allassiez.</i>
<i>Aille.</i>	<i>Aillent.</i>	<i>Allât.</i>	<i>Allassent.</i>

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.	Plural.
	<i>Allons.</i>
<i>Va.</i>	<i>Allez.</i>
<i>Aille.</i>	<i>Aillent.</i>

This verb is often Reflexive, and accompanied by the pronoun *en*. As the verb thus used involves considerable difficulty for novices in French, we will exhibit the different tenses of *s'en Aller*, to go off or away.

INFINITIVE.

Present.

s'en Aller.

PARTICIPLE.

Present.

s'en Allant.

INDICATIVE.

Present.		Imperfect.	
Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
<i>Je m'en vais.</i>	<i>Nous nous en allons.</i>	<i>Je m'en allais.</i>	<i>Nous nous en allions.</i>
<i>Tu t'en vas.</i>	<i>Vous vous en allez.</i>	<i>Tu t'en allais.</i>	<i>Vous vous en alliez.</i>
<i>Il s'en va.</i>	<i>Il s'en vont.</i>	<i>Il s'en allait.</i>	<i>Ils s'en allaient.</i>

Perfect.	Future.
<i>Je m'en allai, etc.</i>	<i>Je m'en irai, etc.</i>

CONDITIONAL.

Present.
<i>Je m'en irais, etc.</i>

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.	Imperfect.
<i>Que je m'en aille, etc.</i>	<i>Que je m'en allasse, etc.</i>

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Va t'en.</i>	<i>Allons nous en.</i>
<i>Qu'il s'en aille.</i>	<i>Allez vous en.</i>
	<i>Qu'ils s'en aillent.</i>

COMPOUND TENSES.

Comp. of INDIC.	Pres. <i>Je m'en suis allé, etc.</i>
Comp. of “	Imperf. <i>Je m'en étais allé, etc.</i>
Comp. of “	Perf. <i>Je m'en fus allé, etc.</i>
Comp. of “	Fut. <i>Je m'en serai allé, etc.</i>

Comp. of CONDIT. Pres. *Je m'en serais allé*, etc.

Comp. of SUBJ. Pres. *Que je m'en sois allé*, etc.

Comp. of " Imperf. *Que je m'en fusse allé*, etc.

APPARAÎTRE, TO APPEAR (as a ghost). See *Connaître*.

APPAROÎR, TO APPEAR. Used only in the infinitive, and in the 3d person sing. indic. pres. *Appert*.

APPARTENIR, TO APPERTAIN. See *Tenir*.

APPRENDRE, TO LEARN. See *Prendre*.

ASSAILLIR, TO ASSAULT.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. *Assaillant*.

Past, *Assailli*.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

Singular.

Plural.

Assaille.

Assaillons.

Assailles.

Assaillez.

Assaille.

Assaillent.

Imperfect.

Singular.

Plural.

Assaillais.

Assaillions.

Assaillais.

Assailliez.

Assaillait.

Assaillaient.

Perfect.

Assaillis, etc.

Future.

Assaillirai, etc.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

Assaillirais, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

Assaille, etc.

Imperfect.

Assaillisse, etc.

Assaillir has no Imperative mode. *Tressaillir*, to start, is conjugated in the same way. So is *Saillir*, to project, in the forms where it is used, which are only the participles and the third persons of the different tenses. *Saillir*, when it means to gush out, is conjugated regularly, like *Finir*.

ASSEOIR, TO SIT DOWN.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. *Asseyant*.

Past, *Assis*.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

Imperfect.

Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
<i>Assieds.</i>	<i>Asseyons.</i>	<i>Asseyais.</i>	<i>Asseyions.</i>
<i>Assieds.</i>	<i>Asseyez.</i>	<i>Asseyais.</i>	<i>Asseyiez.</i>
<i>Assied.</i>	<i>Asseyent.</i>	<i>Asseyait.</i>	<i>Asseyaient.</i>

Perfect.

Future.

Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
<i>Assis.</i>	<i>Assîmes.</i>	<i>Assiêrai.</i>	<i>Assiêrons.</i>
<i>Assis.</i>	<i>Assîtes.</i>	<i>Assiêras.</i>	<i>Assiêrez.</i>
<i>Assit.</i>	<i>Assirent.</i>	<i>Assiêra.</i>	<i>Assiêront.</i>

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

Assiêrais, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.		Imperfect.	
Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
<i>Asseie.</i>	<i>Asseyions.</i>	<i>Assisse.</i>	<i>Assissions.</i>
<i>Asseies.</i>	<i>Asseyiez.</i>	<i>Assisses.</i>	<i>Assissiez.</i>
<i>Asseie.</i>	<i>Asseient.</i>	<i>Assit.</i>	<i>Assissent.</i>

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.	Plural.
	<i>Asseyons.</i>
<i>Assieds.</i>	<i>Asseyez.</i>
<i>Asseie.</i>	<i>Asseient.</i>

This verb most often appears as a Reflexive verb, *s'asseoir*, the tenses of which are formed by adding a second pronoun and employing *être* for the auxiliary, as in all Reflexive verbs. (See *se repentir*, § 559.) The verb *se rasseoir*, to sit down again, is conjugated like *s'asseoir*.

ASTREINDRE, TO CONFINE. See *Craindre*.

ATTEINDRE, TO REACH. See *Craindre*.

AVEINDRE, TO FETCH OUT. See *Craindre*.

AVOIR, TO HAVE. See Gramm. § 533.

BATTRE, TO BEAT.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. *Battant.* Past, *Battu.*

INDICATIVE.

Present.		Imperfect.	
Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
<i>Bats.</i>	<i>Battons.</i>	<i>Battais.</i>	<i>Battions.</i>
<i>Bats.</i>	<i>Battez.</i>	<i>Battais.</i>	<i>Battiez.</i>
<i>Bat.</i>	<i>Battent.</i>	<i>Battait.</i>	<i>Battaient.</i>

Perfect.		Future.	
Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
<i>Battis.</i>	<i>Battînes.</i>	<i>Battrai.</i>	<i>Battrons.</i>
<i>Battis.</i>	<i>Battîtes.</i>	<i>Battras.</i>	<i>Battrez.</i>
<i>Battit.</i>	<i>Battîrent.</i>	<i>Battrà.</i>	<i>Battront.</i>

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

Battrais, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

Batte, etc.

Imperfect.

Battisse, etc.

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.	Plural.
	<i>Battons.</i>
<i>Bats.</i>	<i>Battez.</i>
<i>Batte.</i>	<i>Battent.</i>

This verb, it will be seen, is conjugated regularly, save that one *t* is dropped in all the persons of the sing. number in the pres. indic. and in the 2d pers. sing. imperative.

VERBS CONJUGATED LIKE *Battre*.*Abattre*, to pull down.*S'Ebattre*, to be merry.*Combattre*, to fight.*Embattre*, to lay the tire of a*Débattre*, to debate.*Rabattre*, to beat down. [wheel.*Se Débattre*, to struggle.*Rebattre*, to beat again.

BOIRE, TO DRINK.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. *Buvant*.Past, *Bu*.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Bois.</i>	<i>Buvons.</i>
<i>Bois.</i>	<i>Buvez.</i>
<i>Boit.</i>	<i>Boivent.</i>

Imperfect.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Buvais.</i>	<i>Buvions.</i>
<i>Buvais.</i>	<i>Buviez.</i>
<i>Buvait.</i>	<i>Buvaient.</i>

Perfect.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Bus.</i>	<i>Bûmes.</i>
<i>Bus.</i>	<i>Bûtes.</i>
<i>But.</i>	<i>Burent.</i>

Future.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Boirai.</i>	<i>Boirons.</i>
<i>Boiras.</i>	<i>Boirez.</i>
<i>Boira.</i>	<i>Boiront.</i>

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

Boirais, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.		Imperfect.	
Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
<i>Boive.</i>	<i>Buvions.</i>	<i>Busse.</i>	<i>Bussions.</i>
<i>Boives.</i>	<i>Buviez.</i>	<i>Busses.</i>	<i>Bussiez.</i>
<i>Boive.</i>	<i>Boivent.</i>	<i>Bûl.</i>	<i>Bussent.</i>

IMPERATIVE.

Present.	
Singular.	Plural.
	<i>Buvons.</i>
<i>Bois.</i>	<i>Buvez.</i>
<i>Boive.</i>	<i>Boivent.</i>

The verb *s'Emboire*, to soak in, is conjugated in the same manner.

BENIR, TO BLESS.

This verb exhibits no irregularity, save that it has two past participles, *Beni* and *Benit*. The latter form is used only of things consecrated by a priest's blessing.

BOUILLIR, TO BOIL.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. *Bouillant.* Past, *Bouilli.*

INDICATIVE.

Present.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Bous.</i>	<i>Bouillons.</i>
<i>Bous.</i>	<i>Bouillez.</i>
<i>Bout.</i>	<i>Bouillent.</i>

Imperfect.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Bouillais.</i>	<i>Bouillions.</i>
<i>Bouillais.</i>	<i>Bouilliez.</i>
<i>Bouillait.</i>	<i>Bouillaient.</i>

Perfect.

Bouillis, etc.

Future.

Bouillirai, etc.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

Bouillirais, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

Bouille, etc.

Imperfect.

Bouillisse, etc.

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.

Bous.
Bouille.

Plural.

Bouillons.
Bouillez.
Bouillent.

So are conjugated :

*Ebouillir, to boil away.**Rebouillir, to boil again.*

Bouillir and *Rebouillir* are seldom employed except in the 3d persons singular, or in the infinitive preceded by *faire*.

'*Ebouillir* is seldom employed except in the infinitive and past participle.

BRAIRE, TO BRAY.

This verb is seldom or never used except in the infinitive present, and the following tenses and persons :

	Singular.	Plural.
INDIC. Pres.	<i>Il brait.</i>	<i>Ils braient.</i>
" Fut.	<i>Il braira.</i>	<i>Ils brairont.</i>
CONDIT. Pres.	<i>Il brairait.</i>	<i>Ils brairaient.</i>

BRUIRE, TO ROAR.

This verb is used only in the infinitive present, in the present participle, *Bruyant*, and in the 3d persons singular and plural of the imperfect indicative, *Bruyait*, *Bruyaient*. The participle *bruyant* is often only an adjective ; e. g. *voix bruyante*, sonorous voice.

CEINDRE, TO GIRD. See *Craindre*.

CHOIR, TO FALL. See *Déchoir*.

CIRCONCIRE, TO CIRCUMCISE. See *Dire*.

CIRCONVENIR, TO CIRCUMVENT. See *Tenir*.

CLORE, TO SHUT UP. See *'Eclorre*.

COMBATTRE, TO FIGHT. See *Battre*.

COMMETTRE, TO COMMIT. See *Mettre*.

COMPARAITRE, TO APPEAR (as a witness). See *Connaitre*.

COMPLAIRE, TO HUMOR. See *Plaire*.

COMPRENDRE, TO COMPREHEND. See *Prendre*.

COMPROMETTRE, TO COMPROMISE. See *Mettre*.

CONCLURE, TO CONCLUDE.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. *Concluant*.

Past, *Conclu*.

INDICATIVE.

Present.		Imperfect.	
Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
<i>Conclus.</i>	<i>Concluons.</i>	<i>Concluais.</i>	<i>Concluions.</i>
<i>Conclus.</i>	<i>Concluez.</i>	<i>Concluais.</i>	<i>Concluiez.</i>
<i>Conclut.</i>	<i>Concluent.</i>	<i>Concluait.</i>	<i>Concluaient.</i>
Perfect.		Future.	
<i>Conclus, etc.</i>		<i>Conclurai, etc.</i>	

CONDITIONAL.

Present.
<i>Conclurais, etc.</i>

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.		Imperfect.	
Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
<i>Conclue.</i>	<i>Concluions.</i>	<i>Conclusse.</i>	<i>Conclussions.</i>
<i>Conclues.</i>	<i>Concluiez.</i>	<i>Conclusses.</i>	<i>Conclussiez.</i>
<i>Conclue.</i>	<i>Concluent.</i>	<i>Conclût.</i>	<i>Conclussent.</i>

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Conclus.</i>	<i>Concluons.</i>
<i>Conclue.</i>	<i>Concluez.</i>
	<i>Concluent.</i>

So are conjugated *Exclure*, to exclude, and *Reclure*, to shut up; except that the past part. of *Exclure* is either *Exclu* or *Exclus*, and the past part. of *Reclure* is always *Reclus*.

CONCOURIR, TO CONCUR. See *Courir*.

CONDUIRE, TO CONDUCT.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. *Conduisant.* Past, *Conduit.*

INDICATIVE.

Present.		Imperfect.	
Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
<i>Conduis.</i>	<i>Conduisons.</i>	<i>Conduisais.</i>	<i>Conduisions.</i>
<i>Conduis.</i>	<i>Conduisez.</i>	<i>Conduisais.</i>	<i>Conduisiez.</i>
<i>Conduit.</i>	<i>Conduisent.</i>	<i>Conduisait.</i>	<i>Conduisaient.</i>
Perfect.		Future.	
<i>Conduisis, etc.</i>		<i>Conduirai, etc.</i>	

CONDITIONAL.

Present.
Conduirais, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present. Imperfect.
Conduise, etc. *Conduisisse, etc.*

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.	Plural.
	<i>Conduisons.</i>
<i>Conduis.</i>	<i>Conduisez.</i>
<i>Conduise.</i>	<i>Conduisent.</i>

VERBS CONJUGATED LIKE *Conduire*.

<i>Construire</i> , to construct.	* <i>Luire</i> , to shine.
<i>Cuire</i> , to cook, bake.	* <i>Nuire</i> , to hurt.
<i>Déconstruire</i> , to demolish.	<i>Produire</i> , to produce.
<i>Décuire</i> , to thin, render more	<i>Reconduire</i> , to reconduct.
<i>Déduire</i> , to deduct. [liquid.	<i>Reconstruire</i> , to reconstruct.
<i>Détruire</i> , to destroy. [fuse.	<i>Recuire</i> , to rebake.
<i>Econduire</i> , to conduct out, re-	<i>Réduire</i> , to reduce.
<i>Enduire</i> , to plaster, do over.	<i>Reluire</i> , to glitter.
<i>Entreluire</i> , to gleam, shine a	<i>Renduire</i> , to plaster anew.
<i>Induire</i> , to induce. [little.	<i>Reproduire</i> , to reproduce.
<i>Instruire</i> , to instruct.	<i>Séduire</i> , to seduce.
<i>Introduire</i> , to introduce.	<i>Traduire</i> , to translate.

CONFIRE, TO PRESERVE (fruits, etc.). See *Dire*.

CONNAITRE, TO KNOW.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. *Connaissant*.Past, *Connu*.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

Imperfect.

Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
<i>Connais.</i>	<i>Connaissons.</i>	<i>Connaisais.</i>	<i>Connaissons.</i>
<i>Connais.</i>	<i>Connaissez.</i>	<i>Connaisais.</i>	<i>Connaissez.</i>
<i>Connait.</i>	<i>Connassent.</i>	<i>Connaisais.</i>	<i>Connaisaient.</i>

Perfect.

Future.

Connus, etc.*Connaitrai*, etc.

* The past participle of *Luire* (with its compounds,) and *Nuire* drop the final *t* which belongs to the past part. of the other verbs; making *Lui* and *Nui*, not *Luit*, *Nuit*.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

Connaitrais, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

Connaisse, etc.

Imperfect.

Connusse, etc.

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.

Connais.
Connaisse.

Plural.

Connaissons.
Connaissez.
*Connassent.*VERBS CONJUGATED LIKE *Connaitre*.

<i>Apparaître</i> , to appear (as a ghost.)	<i>Paître</i> , to graze.*
<i>Comparaître</i> , to appear (as a witness.)	<i>Paraître</i> , to appear.
<i>Disparaître</i> , to disappear.	<i>Reconnaître</i> , to recognize.
<i>Méconnaître</i> , to mistake.	<i>Reparaître</i> , to feed.
	<i>Reparaître</i> , to reappear.

CONQUERIR, TO CONQUER. See *Acquérir*.CONSENTIR, TO CONSENT. See *Sentir*.CONSTRUIRE, TO CONSTRUCT. See *Conduire*.CONTENIR, TO CONTAIN. See *Tenir*.CONTRAINdre, TO CONSTRAIN. See *Craindre*.CONTREDIRE, TO CONTRADICT. See *Dire*.CONTREFAIRE, TO COUNTERFEIT. See *Faire*.

* The verb *Paître* is not used in the perfect indicative or the imperfect subjunctive. Its compound, *Reparaître*, has those tenses.

CONTREVENIR, TO CONTRAVENE. See *Tenir*.

CONVAINCRE, TO CONVINCe. See *Vaincre*.

CONVENIR, TO AGREE, SUIT. See *Tenir*.

CORROMPRE, TO CORRUPT. See *Rompre*.

COUDRE, TO SEW.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. *Cousant*.

Past, *Cousu*.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

Imperfect.

Singular.

Plural.

Singular.

Plural.

Couds.

Cousons.

Cousais.

Cousions.

Couds.

Cousez.

Cousais.

Cousiez.

Coud.

Cousent.

Cousait.

Cousaient.

Perfect.

Future.

Cousis, etc.

Coudrai, etc.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

Coudrais, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

Imperfect.

Singular.

Plural.

Singular.

Plural.

Couse.

Cousions.

Cousisse.

Cousissions.

Couses.

Cousiez.

Cousisses.

Cousissiez.

Couse.

Cousent.

Cousit.

Cousissent.

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.	Plural.
	<i>Cousons.</i>
<i>Couds.</i>	<i>Cousez.</i>
<i>Couse.</i>	<i>Cousent.</i>

So are conjugated the compounds :

Découdre, to unsew.

Recoudre, to sew again.

COURIR, TO RUN.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. <i>Courant.</i>	Past, <i>Couru.</i>
-----------------------	---------------------

INDICATIVE.

Present.	Imperfect.
<i>Cours</i> , etc.	<i>Courais</i> , etc.
Perfect.	Future.
<i>Courus</i> , etc.	<i>Courrai</i> , etc.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.
<i>Courrais</i> , etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.	Imperfect.
<i>Coure</i> , etc.	<i>Courusse</i> , etc.

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.	Plural.
	<i>Courons.</i>
<i>Cours.</i>	<i>Courez.</i>
<i>Coure.</i>	<i>Courent.</i>

VERBS CONJUGATED LIKE *Courir*.

<i>Accourir</i> , to run to.	<i>Parcourir</i> , to run over.
<i>Concourir</i> , to concur.	<i>Recourir</i> , to have recourse to.
<i>Discourir</i> , to discourse.	<i>Secourir</i> , to succor.
<i>Encourir</i> , to incur.	

COUVRIR, TO COVER. See *Offrir*.

CRAINIRE, TO FEAR.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. <i>Craignant.</i>	Past, <i>Craint.</i>
-------------------------	----------------------

INDICATIVE.

Present.		Imperfect.	
Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
<i>Crains.</i>	<i>Craignons.</i>	<i>Craignais.</i>	<i>Craignons.</i>
<i>Crains.</i>	<i>Craignez.</i>	<i>Craignais.</i>	<i>Craigniez.</i>
<i>Craint.</i>	<i>Craignent.</i>	<i>Craignait.</i>	<i>Craignaient.</i>
Perfect.		Future.	
<i>Craignis</i> , etc.		<i>Craindrai</i> , etc.	

CONDITIONAL.

Present.
<i>Craindrais</i> , etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.		Imperfect.	
Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
<i>Craigne.</i>	<i>Craignons.</i>	<i>Craignisse.</i>	<i>Craignissions.</i>
<i>Craignes.</i>	<i>Craigniez.</i>	<i>Craignisses.</i>	<i>Craignissiez.</i>
<i>Craigne.</i>	<i>Craignent.</i>	<i>Craignât.</i>	<i>Craignissent.</i>

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.	Plural.
	<i>Craignons.</i>
<i>Crains.</i>	<i>Craigniez.</i>
<i>Craigne.</i>	<i>Craignent.</i>

VERBS CONJUGATED LIKE *Craindre*.*

<i>Adjoindre</i> , to adjoin.	<i>'Eteindre</i> , to extinguish.
<i>Astreindre</i> , to constrain.	<i>'Etreindre</i> , to bind.
<i>Atteindre</i> , to reach.	<i>Feindre</i> , to feign.
<i>Aveindre</i> , to fetch out.	<i>Geindre</i> , to whine, moan.
<i>Ceindre</i> , to enclose.	<i>Joindre</i> , to join.
<i>Contraindre</i> , to compel.	<i>Oindre</i> , to anoint.
<i>Déjoindre</i> , to disjoin.	<i>Peindre</i> , to paint.
<i>Dépeindre</i> , to describe.	<i>Plaindre</i> , to pity.
<i>Déleindre</i> , to discolor.	<i>se Plaindre</i> , to complain.
<i>Disjoindre</i> , to disjoin.	<i>Poindre</i> , to dawn.
<i>Empreindre</i> , to imprint.	<i>Ratteindre</i> , to catch again.
<i>Enceindre</i> , to enclose.	<i>Repeindre</i> , to paint again.
<i>Enfreindre</i> , to infringe.	<i>Rejoindre</i> , to join again.
<i>Enjoindre</i> , to enjoin.	<i>Restreindre</i> , to restrain.
<i>'Epreindre</i> , to squeeze out.	<i>Teindre</i> , to dye.
<i>s' 'Eprendre</i> , to be smitten.	

* It must be observed, to avoid mistake, that in all these verbs the characteristic vowel preceding the termination *indre* is maintained throughout. Thus, the 1st pers. pl. pres. indic. of verbs ending in *aindre* is *aignons*; that of verbs ending in *cinde* is *eignons*; that of verbs ending in *oindre* is *oignons*. So throughout the verbs. If this remark be borne in mind, *Craindre* will serve as a model for all the verbs ending in *indre*.

CROIRE, TO BELIEVE.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. *Croyant.*Past, *Cru.*

INDICATIVE.

Present.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Crois.</i>	<i>Croyons.</i>
<i>Crois.</i>	<i>Croyez.</i>
<i>Croit.</i>	<i>Croient.</i>

Imperfect.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Croyais.</i>	<i>Croyions.</i>
<i>Croyais.</i>	<i>Croyiez.</i>
<i>Croyait.</i>	<i>Croyaient.</i>

Perfect.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Crus.</i>	<i>Crûmes.</i>
<i>Crus.</i>	<i>Crûtes.</i>
<i>Crut.</i>	<i>Crurent.</i>

Future.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Croirai.</i>	<i>Croirons.</i>
<i>Croiras.</i>	<i>Croirez.</i>
<i>Croira.</i>	<i>Croiront.</i>

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

Croirais, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Croies.</i>	<i>Croyions.</i>
<i>Croies.</i>	<i>Croyiez.</i>
<i>Croie.</i>	<i>Croient.</i>

Imperfect.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Crusse.</i>	<i>Crussions.</i>
<i>Crusses.</i>	<i>Crussiez.</i>
<i>Crût.</i>	<i>Crussent.</i>

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.	Plural.
	<i>Croyons.</i>
<i>Crois.</i>	<i>Croyez.</i>
<i>Croie.</i>	<i>Croient.</i>

VERBS CONJUGATED LIKE *Croire*.*Décroire*, disbelieve.*Mécroire*, to disbelieve.

The verb *Accroire* is used only in the infinitive mode after *faire*; e. g. *vous voulez me faire accroire cela*, you wish to make me believe that. *Décroire* is used only in opposition to *croire*; e. g. *je ne crois ni ne décrois*, I neither believe nor disbelieve.

CROÎTRE, TO GROW.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. *Croissant*.Past, *Crû*.

INDICATIVE.

Present.		Imperfect.	
Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
<i>Crûs.</i>	<i>Croissons.</i>	<i>Croissais.</i>	<i>Croissions.</i>
<i>Crûs.</i>	<i>Croissez.</i>	<i>Croissais.</i>	<i>Croissiez.</i>
<i>Crût.</i>	<i>Croissent.</i>	<i>Croissait.</i>	<i>Croissaient.</i>
Perfect.		Future.	
Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
<i>Crûs.</i>	<i>Crûmes.</i>	<i>Croitrai.</i>	<i>Croîtrons.</i>
<i>Crûs.</i>	<i>Crûtes.</i>	<i>Croïtras.</i>	<i>Croîtrez.</i>
<i>Crût.</i>	<i>Crurent.</i>	<i>Croitra.</i>	<i>Croîtront.</i>

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

Croitrais, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

Imperfect.

Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
<i>Croisse.</i>	<i>Croissions.</i>	<i>Crusse.</i>	<i>Crussions.</i>
<i>Croisses.</i>	<i>Croissiez.</i>	<i>Crusses.</i>	<i>Crussiez.</i>
<i>Croisse.</i>	<i>Croissent.</i>	<i>Crût.</i>	<i>Crussent.</i>

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

*Crois.**Croissons.**Croisse.**Croissez.**Croissent.*VERBS CONJUGATED LIKE *Croître*.*Accroître*, to accrue.*Recroître*, to grow again.*Décroître*, to decrease.*Surcroître*, to grow out.

CUEILLIR, TO GATHER.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. *Cueillant*.Past, *Cueilli*.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

Imperfect.

Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
<i>Cueille</i> , etc.	<i>Cueillons</i> , etc.	<i>Cueillais</i> , etc.	<i>Cueillions</i> , etc.

Perfect.		Future.	
Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
<i>Cueillis</i> , etc.	<i>Cueillimes</i> , etc.	<i>Cueilleraï</i> , etc.	<i>Cueillerons</i> , etc.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

Cueillerais, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

Cueille, etc.

Imperfect.

Cueillisse, etc.

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.

*Cueille.**Cueille.*

Plural.

*Cueillons.**Cueillez.**Cueillent.*VERBS CONJUGATED LIKE *Cueillir*.*Accueillir*, to welcome.*Recueillir*, to collect.CUIRE, TO COOK. See *Conduire*.DEBATTRE, TO DEBATE. See *Battre*.

DECHOIR, TO DECAY.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. (None.)

Past, *Déchu*.

INDICATIVE.

Present.		Imperfect.	
Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
<i>Déchois.</i>	<i>Déchoyons.</i>	<i>Déchoyais.</i>	<i>Déchoyions.</i>
<i>Déchois.</i>	<i>Déchoyez.</i>	<i>Déchoyais.</i>	<i>Déchoyiez.</i>
<i>Déchoit.</i>	<i>Déchoient.</i>	<i>Déchoyait.</i>	<i>Déchoyaient.</i>
Perfect.		Future.	
<i>Déchus, etc.</i>		<i>Décherrai, etc.</i>	

CONDITIONAL.

Present.
<i>Décherrais, etc.</i>

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.		Imperfect.	
Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
<i>Déchoie.</i>	<i>Déchoyions.</i>	<i>Déchusse.</i>	<i>Déchussions.</i>
<i>Déchoies.</i>	<i>Déchoyiez.</i>	<i>Déchusses.</i>	<i>Déchussiez.</i>
<i>Déchoie.</i>	<i>Déchoient.</i>	<i>Déchût.</i>	<i>Déchussent.</i>

IMPERATIVE.

(None.)

Choir, to fall, is used only in the infinitive, and the past participle *chu*. *'Echoir*, to fall out, happen, is conjugated like *Déchoir*, and has besides a pres. participle, *échéant*.

DECLORE, TO OPEN. See *'Eclore*.

DECONFIRE, TO DISCOMFIT. See *Confire*.

DECONSTRUIRE, TO DEMOLISH. See *Conduire*.

- DECOUDRE, TO UNSEW. See *Coudre*.
 DECOUVRIER, TO DISCOVER. See *Couvrir*.
 DECRIRE, TO DESCRIBE. See *Ecrire*.
 DECROIRE, TO DISBELIEVE. See *Croire*.
 DECROÎTRE, TO DECREASE. See *Croître*.
 DECUIRE, TO THIN. See *Cuire*.
 DEDIRE, TO UNSAY. See *Dire*.
 DEDUIRE, TO DEDUCT. See *Conduire*.
 DEFALLIR, TO FAIL, SWOON. See *Faillir*.
 DEFAIRE, TO UNDO. See *Faire*.
 DEMENTIR, TO CONTRADICT. See *Sentir*.
 DEMETTRE, TO DISPLACE. See *Mettre*.
 DEMOUVOIR, TO TURN FROM. See *Mouvoir*.
 DEPARTIR, TO DISTRIBUTE. See *Partir*.
 DEPEINDRE, TO DEPICT. See *Peindre*.
 DEPLAIRE, TO DISPLEASE. See *Plaire*.
 DEPOURVOIR, TO DEPRIVE. See *Pourvoir*.
 DEPRENDRE, TO DISENGAGE. See *Prendre*.
 DEPREVENIR, TO REMOVE PREJUDICES. See *Prévenir*.
 DESAPPRENDRE, TO UNLEARN. See *Prendre*.
 DESSERVIR, TO CLEAR (a table). See *Servir*.
 DETEINDRE, TO DISCOLOR. See *Craindre*.
 DETENIR, TO DETAIN. See *Tenir*.
 DETRUIRE, TO DESTROY. See *Conduire*.
 DEVENIR, TO BECOME. See *Tenir*.
 DEVETIR, TO UNDRRESS. See *Revêtir*.
 DIRE, TO SAY.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. *Disant*.Past, *Dit*.

INDICATIVE.

Present.		Imperfect.	
Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
<i>Dis.</i>	<i>Disons.</i>	<i>Disais.</i>	<i>Disions.</i>
<i>Dis.</i>	<i>Disez.</i>	<i>Disais.</i>	<i>Disiez.</i>
<i>Dit.</i>	<i>Disent.</i>	<i>Disait.</i>	<i>Disaient.</i>

Perfect.		Future.	
Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
<i>Dis.</i>	<i>Dimes.</i>	<i>Dirai.</i>	<i>Dirons.</i>
<i>Dis.</i>	<i>Dites.</i>	<i>Diras.</i>	<i>Direz.</i>
<i>Dit.</i>	<i>Dirent.</i>	<i>Dira.</i>	<i>Diront.</i>

CONDITIONAL.

Present.
Dirais, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.		Imperfect.	
Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
<i>Dise.</i>	<i>Dissions.</i>	<i>Disse.</i>	<i>Dissions.</i>
<i>Dises.</i>	<i>Disiez.</i>	<i>Disses.</i>	<i>Dissiez.</i>
<i>Dise.</i>	<i>Disent.</i>	<i>Dit.</i>	<i>Dissent.</i>

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Dis.</i>	<i>Disons.</i>
<i>Dise.</i>	<i>Dites.</i>
	<i>Disent.</i>

VERBS CONJUGATED LIKE *Dire*.

<i>Circoncire</i> , to circumcise.	<i>Maudire</i> , to curse.
<i>Confire</i> , to preserve.	<i>Médire</i> , to slander.
<i>Contredire</i> , to contradict.	<i>Prédire</i> , to predict.
<i>Déconfire</i> , to discomfit.	<i>Redire</i> , to say again.
<i>se Dédire</i> , to unsay.	<i>Suffire</i> , to suffice.
<i>Interdire</i> , to interdict.	

All these verbs, except *Redire*, differ from *Dire* in the 2d pers. pl. of the pres. indic. and the same pers. pl. of the imper., which end in *sez* instead of *tes* ; e. g. *circoncisez*, etc. *Maudire* doubles *s* whenever it occurs not final ; e. g. *maudissons*, *maudissez*, *maudissent*, etc. The past participle of *Circoncire* is *circoncis* ; that of *Suffire* is *suffi*.

DISCONVENIR, TO DISAGREE. See *Tenir*.
 DISCOURIR, TO DISCOURSE. See *Courir*.
 DISJOINDRE, TO DISJOIN. See *Craindre*.
 DISPARAITRE, TO DISAPPEAR. See *Connaitre*.
 DISSOUDRE, TO DISSOLVE. See *Résoudre*.
 DISTRAIRE, TO DISTRACT. See *Traire*.
 DORMIR, TO SLEEP. See *Sentir*.

s'EBATTRE, TO BE MERRY. See *Battre*.
 EBOUILLIR, TO BOIL AWAY. See *Bouillir*.
 ECHOIR, TO FALL OUT. See *Déchoir*.
 ECLORE, TO OPEN, HATCH.

This verb is used only in the infinitive mode, and the following forms :

PART. Past, *'Eclos*.

	Singular.	Plural.
INDIC. Pres.	'Eclôt.	'Eclotent.
“ Fut.	'Eclôra.	'Eclôront.
CONDIT. Pres.	'Eclôrait.	'Eclôraient.
SUBJ. Pres.	'Eclose.	'Eclotent.

VERBS CONJUGATED LIKE *'Eclore*.

<i>Clore</i> , to shut up.	<i>Enclore</i> , to enclose.
<i>Déclore</i> , to open.	<i>Forclorre</i> , to foreclose.

These verbs are seldom employed save in the infinitive or the participle past.

ECONDUIRE, TO CONDUCT OUT, REFUSE. See *Conduire*.

ECRIRE, TO WRITE.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. <i>'Ecrivant</i> .	Past, <i>'Ecrit</i> .
--------------------------	-----------------------

INDICATIVE.

Present.		Imperfect.	
Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
'Ecris.	'Ecrivons.	'Ecrivais.	'Ecrivions.
'Ecris.	'Ecrivez.	'Ecrivais.	'Ecriviez.
'Ecrit.	'Ecrivent.	'Ecrivait.	'Ecrivaient.

Perfect.	Future.
'Ecrivis, etc.	'Ecrirai, etc.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.
'Ecrirais, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.	Imperfect.
'Ecrive, etc.	'Ecrivisse, etc.

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.	Plural.
'Ecris.	'Ecrivons.
'Ecrive.	'Ecrivez.
	'Ecrivent.

VERBS CONJUGATED LIKE 'Ecrire.

<i>Circonscrire</i> , to circumscribe.	<i>Proscrire</i> , to proscribe.
<i>Décrire</i> , to describe.	<i>Récrire</i> , to write again.
<i>Inscrire</i> , to inscribe.	<i>Souscrire</i> , to subscribe.
<i>Prescrire</i> , to prescribe.	<i>Transcrire</i> , to transcribe.

ELIRE, TO ELECT. See *Lire*.

EMBATTRE, TO LAY THE TIRE OF A WHEEL. See *Battre*.

EMBOIRE (S'), TO IMBIBE. See *Boire*.

EMETTRE, TO EMIT. See *Mettre*.

EMOUDRE, TO GRIND. See *Moudre*.

EMOUVOIR, TO MOVE. See *Mouvoir*.

EMPREINDRE, TO IMPRINT. See *Craindre*.

ENCEINDRE, TO ENCLOSE. See *Ceindre*.

ENCLORE, TO ENCLOSE. See *'Eclorre*.

ENCOURIR, TO INCUR. See *Courir*.

ENDORMIR, TO LULL ASLEEP. See *Dormir*.

ENDUIRE, TO PLASTER. See *Conduire*.

ENFREINDRE, TO INFRINGE. See *Craindre*.

ENJOINDRE, TO ENJOIN. See *Craindre*.

ENQUERIR (S'), TO INQUIRE. See *Acquérir*.

ENSUIVRE (S'), TO FOLLOW. See *Suivre*.

ENTRELUIRE, TO GLEAM. See *Conduire*.

ENTREMETTRE (S'), TO INTERPOSE. See *Mettre*.

ENTREPRENDRE, TO UNDERTAKE. See *Prendre*.

ENTRETENIR, TO ENTERTAIN. See *Tenir*.

ENTREVOIR, TO PENETRATE, SEE DIMLY. See *Voir*.

ENTR'OUÏR, TO HEAR IMPERFECTLY. See *Ouïr*.

ENTR'OUVRIR, TO OPEN A LITTLE. See *Offrir*.

ENVOYER, TO SEND.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. *Envoyant*.

Past, *Envoyé*.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

Imperfect.

Singular.

Plural.

Singular.

Plural.

Envoie.

Envoyons.

Envoyais.

Envoyions.

Envoyes.

Envoyez.

Envoyais.

Envoyiez.

Envoie.

Envoyent.

Envoyait.

Envoyaient.

Perfect.

Future.

Envoyai, etc.

Enverrai, etc.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

Enverrais, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

Imperfect.

Envoie, etc.

Envoyasse, etc.

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.	Plural.
	<i>Envoyons.</i>
<i>Envoye.</i>	<i>Envoyez.</i>
<i>Envoye.</i>	<i>Envoyent.</i>

So conjugate *Renvoyer*, to send back. N. B. It will be perceived that *Envoyer* is regular only in the fut. indic. and pres. condit., making *Enverrai* and *Enverrais* instead of *Envoyeraï* and *Envoyerais*.

EPREINDRE, TO SQUEEZE OUT. See *Craindre*.

EPRENDRE (S'), TO BE SMITTEN. See *Prendre*.

EQUIVALOIR, TO BE EQUIVALENT. See *Valoir*.

ETEINDRE, TO EXTINGUISH. See *Craindre*.

ETRE, TO BE. See Gramm. § 534.

ETREINDRE, TO BIND. See *Craindre*.

EXCLURE, TO EXCLUDE. See *Conclure*.

EXTRAIRE, TO EXTRACT. See *Traire*.

FAILLIR, TO FAIL.

This verb is used only in the infinitive and in the following forms :

PART. Pres. *Faillant*.

“ Past, *Failli*.

INDIC. Perf. *Faillis*, etc. (regularly).

FAIRE, TO DO, MAKE.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. *Faisant*.

Past, *Fait*.

INDICATIVE.

Present.		Imperfect.	
Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
<i>Fais.</i>	<i>Faisons.</i>	<i>Faisais.</i>	<i>Faisions.</i>
<i>Fais.</i>	<i>Faites.</i>	<i>Faisais.</i>	<i>Faisiez.</i>
<i>Fait.</i>	<i>Font.</i>	<i>Faisait.</i>	<i>Faisaient.</i>
Perfect.		Future.	
<i>Fis, etc.</i>		<i>Ferai, etc.</i>	

CONDITIONAL.

Present.
<i>Ferais, etc.</i>

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.		Imperfect.	
Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
<i>Fasse.</i>	<i>Fassions.</i>	<i>Fisse.</i>	<i>Fissions.</i>
<i>Fasses.</i>	<i>Fassiez.</i>	<i>Fisses.</i>	<i>Fissiez.</i>
<i>Fasse,</i>	<i>Fassent.</i>	<i>Fît.</i>	<i>Fissent.</i>

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.	Plural.
	<i>Faisons.</i>
<i>Fais.</i>	<i>Faites.</i>
<i>Fasse.</i>	<i>Fassent.</i>

VERBS CONJUGATED LIKE *Faire*.

<i>Contrefaire</i> , to counterfeit.	<i>Forfaire</i> , to forfeit.
<i>Défaire</i> , to undo, defeat.	<i>Malfaire</i> , to do mischief.
<i>se Défaire</i> , to get rid of.	<i>Méfaire</i> , to do wrong.

Parfaire, to complete.

Satisfaire, to satisfy.

Redéfaire, to undo again.

Surfaire, to exact.

Refaire, to do or make again.

FALLOIR, TO BE NECESSARY.

This is the same as the impersonal verb *il faut*. See Gramm. § 551.

FEINDRE, TO FEIGN. See *Craindre*.

FERIR, TO STRIKE.

This verb is used only in the phrase *sans coup férir*, without striking a blow ; and, rarely, in the past part. *féru*.

FLEURIR, TO BLOSSOM, FLOURISH.

This verb, when it is used concerning plants or flowers, is perfectly regular in its forms. When it is used figuratively, as e. g. in speaking of the prosperity of a kingdom, its pres. part. is *Florissant*, and the imperf. tense indic. is *Florissais*, etc., and otherwise it is regular. *Refleurir*, to blossom or flourish again, follows the analogy of its primitive in this respect.

FRIRE, TO FRY.

This verb is generally used in the infinitive with some tense of *faire* ; as *faites frire*, etc. The following forms, however, sometimes occur :

PART. Past, *Frit*.

INDIC. Pres. *Fris, Fris, Frit*. (No plural.)

“ Fut. *Frirai*, etc., throughout.

CONDIT. Pres. *Frirais*, etc., throughout.

So is conjugated *Refrir*, to fry again.

FUIR, TO FLEE.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. *Fuyant*.

Past, *Fui*.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Fuis.</i>	<i>Fuyons.</i>
<i>Fuis.</i>	<i>Fuyez.</i>
<i>Fuit.</i>	<i>Fuient.</i>

Imperfect.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Fuyais.</i>	<i>Fuyions.</i>
<i>Fuyais.</i>	<i>Fuyiez.</i>
<i>Fuyait.</i>	<i>Fuyaient.</i>

Perfect.

Fuis, etc.

Future.

Fuirai, etc.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

Fuirais, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Fuie.</i>	<i>Fuyions.</i>
<i>Fuies.</i>	<i>Fuyiez.</i>
<i>Fuie.</i>	<i>Fuyent.</i>

Imperfect.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Fuisse.</i>	<i>Fuissions.</i>
<i>Fuisses.</i>	<i>Fuissiez.</i>
<i>Fût.</i>	<i>Fuissent.</i>

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.	Plural.
	<i>Fuyons.</i>
<i>Fuis.</i>	<i>Fuyez.</i>
<i>Fuie.</i>	<i>Fuyent.</i>

So conjugate *s'Enfuir*, to run away. It is not uncommon to employ the verb *Prendre*, to take, with the substantive *la fuite*, instead of the forms of *Fuir* or *s'Enfuir*; e. g. *je pris la fuite*, I fled, etc.

GEINDRE, TO WHINE, MOAN. See *Craindre*.

GESIR, TO LIE.

This verb is now employed only in the following forms :

PART. Pres. *Gisant*.

INDIC. Pres. *Gît, Nous gisons, Ils gisent*.

“ Imperf. *Il gisait*.

It is very seldom used except in monumental inscriptions thus : *ci-gît*, here lies.

HAÏR, TO HATE.

There is no irregularity in the manner of *spelling* the different forms of this verb. In the manner of *pronunciation*, however, there is some deviation from the model, *Finir* ; viz. in the three singular persons of the present indicative, and in the 2d pers. singular imperative, the letters *ai*, which are elsewhere referred to distinct syllables, are sounded together in one syllable, as represented in § 20 of the Grammar. It should be observed, moreover, that there is no perfect tense in the indicative of this verb, nor imperfect tense in the subjunctive.

INDUIRE, TO INDUCE. See *Conduire*.

INSCRIRE, TO INSCRIBE. See *Ecrire*.

INSTRUIRE, TO INSTRUCT. See *Construire*.

INTERDIRE, TO INTERDICT. See *Dire*.

INTERROMPRE, TO INTERRUPT. See *Rompre*.

INTERVENIR, TO INTERVENE. See *Venir*.

INTRODUIRE, TO INTRODUCE. See *Conduire*.

ISSIR, TO COME FROM.

The only forms of this verb which are in use are the part. pres., *Issant*, and the part. past, *Issu*.

JOINDRE, TO JOIN. See *Craindre*.

LIRE, TO READ.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. *Lisant*.

Past, *Lu*.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

Singular.

Plural.

Lis.

Lisons.

Lis.

Lisez.

Lit.

Lisent.

Imperfect.

Singular.

Plural.

Lisais.

Lisions.

Lisais.

Lisiez.

Lisail.

Lisaient.

Perfect.

Lus, etc.

Future.

Lirai, etc.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

Lirais, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

	Present.	Imperfect.
<i>Lise</i> , etc.		<i>Lusse</i> , etc.

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Lis.</i>	<i>Lisons.</i>
<i>Lise.</i>	<i>Lisez.</i>
	<i>Lisent.</i>

VERBS CONJUGATED LIKE *Lire*.

<i>'Elire</i> , to elect.	<i>Relire</i> , to read again.
---------------------------	--------------------------------

LUIRE, TO SHINE. See *Conduire*.

MAINTENIR, TO MAINTAIN. See *Tenir*.

MALFAIRE, TO DO MISCHIEF. See *Faire*.

MAUDIRE, TO CURSE. See *Dire*.

MECONNAITRE, TO MISTAKE. See *Connaître*.

MECROIRE, TO DISBELIEVE. See *Croire*.

MEDIRE, TO SLANDER. See *Dire*.

MEFAIRE, TO DO WRONG. See *Faire*.

MENTIR, TO LIE. See *Sentir*.

MEPRENDRE, TO MISTAKE. See *Prendre*.

MESAvenir, TO SUCCEED ILL. See *Tenir*.

MESOFFRIR, TO UNDERBID. See *Offrir*.

MESSEoir, NOT TO FIT. See *Seoir*.

METTRE, TO PUT.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. <i>Mettant</i> .	Past, <i>Mis</i> .
------------------------	--------------------

INDICATIVE.

Present.		Imperfect.	
Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
<i>Mets.</i>	<i>Mettons.</i>	<i>Mettais.</i>	<i>Mettions.</i>
<i>Mets.</i>	<i>Mettez.</i>	<i>Mettais.</i>	<i>Mettiez.</i>
<i>Met.</i>	<i>Mettent.</i>	<i>Mettaient.</i>	<i>Mettaient.</i>
Perfect.		Future.	
<i>Mis, etc.</i>		<i>Mettrai, etc.</i>	

CONDITIONAL.

Present.
<i>Mettrais, etc.</i>

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.		Imperfect.	
Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
<i>Mette.</i>	<i>Mettions.</i>	<i>Misse.</i>	<i>Missions.</i>
<i>Mettes.</i>	<i>Mettiez.</i>	<i>Misses.</i>	<i>Missiez.</i>
<i>Mette.</i>	<i>Mettent.</i>	<i>Mit.</i>	<i>Missent.</i>

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.	Plural.
	<i>Mettons.</i>
<i>Mets.</i>	<i>Mettez.</i>
<i>Mette.</i>	<i>Mettent.</i>

VERBS CONJUGATED LIKE *Mettre*.

<i>Admettre</i> , to admit.	<i>Démètre</i> , to put out.
<i>Commètre</i> , to commit.	<i>Émettre</i> , to emit.
<i>Compromètre</i> , to compromise.	<i>Entremètre</i> (s'), to interpose.

Omettre, to omit.*Permettre*, to permit.*Promettre*, to promise.*Remettre*, to remit, etc.*Soumettre*, to submit.*Transmettre*, to transmit.

MOUDRE, TO GRIND.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. *Moulant*.Past, *Moulu*.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

Imperfect.

Singular.

Plural.

Singular.

Plural.

*Mouds.**Moulons.**Moulais.**Moulions.**Mouds.**Moulez.**Moulais.**Mouliez.**Moud.**Moulent.**Moulait.**Moulaient.*

Perfect.

Future.

Moulus, etc.*Moudrai*, etc.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

Moudrais, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

Imperfect.

Moule, etc.*Moulusse*, etc.

IMPERATIVE.

Present.

Singular.

Plural.

*Mouds.**Moulons.**Moule.**Moulez.**Moulent.*

VERBS CONJUGATED LIKE *Moudre*.*'Emoudre*, to whet.*Remoudre*, to grind again.

MOURIR, TO DIE.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. *Mourant*.Past, *Mort*.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

Imperfect.

Singular.

Plural.

Singular.

Plural.

*Meurs.**Mourons.**Mourais.**Mourions.**Meurs.**Mourez.**Mourais.**Mouriez.**Meurt.**Meurent.**Mourait.**Mouraient.*

Perfect.

Future.

Mourus, etc.*Mourrai*, etc.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

Mourrais, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

Imperfect.

Singular.

Plural.

Singular.

Plural.

*Meure.**Mourions.**Mourusse.**Mourussions.**Meures.**Mouriez.**Mourusses.**Mourussiez.**Meure.**Meurent.**Mourût.**Mourussent.*

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

*Meurs.**Mourons.**Meure.**Mourez.**Meurent.*

MOUVOIR, TO MOVE.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. *Mouvant*.Past, *Mu*.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

Imperfect.

Singular.

Plural.

Singular.

Plural.

*Meus.**Mouvons.**Mouvais.**Mouvions.**Meus.**Mouvez.**Mouvais.**Mouviez.**Meut.**Meuvent.**Mouvait.**Mouvaiant.*

Perfect.

Future.

Mus, etc.*Mouvrai*, etc.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

Mouvrais, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

Imperfect.

Singular.

Plural.

Singular.

Plural.

*Meuve.**Mouvions.**Musse.**Mussions.**Meuves.**Mouviez.**Musses.**Mussiez.**Meuve.**Meuvent.**Mût.**Mussent.*

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

*Meus.**Mouvons.**Meuve.**Mouvez.**Meuvent.*

VERBS CONJUGATED LIKE *Mouvoir*.*Démouvoir*, to dissuade.*Promouvoir*, to promote.*Emouvoir*, to stir up, move.

NAITRE, TO BE BORN.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. *Naissant*.Past, *Né*.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

Imperfect.

Singular.

Plural.

Singular.

Plural.

*Nais.**Naissions.**Naissais.**Naissions.**Nais.**Naissiez.**Naissais.**Naissiez.**Nait.**Naissent.**Naissait.**Naissaient.*

Perfect.

Future.

Naquis, etc.*Naitrai*, etc.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

Naitrais, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

Imperfect.

Naïsse, etc.*Naquisse*, etc.

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

*Nais.**Naissions.**Naïsse.**Naissiez.**Naissent.*

So conjugate *Renaitre*, to be born again.

NUIRE, TO HURT. See *Conduire*.

OBTENIR, TO OBTAIN. See *Tenir*.

OFFRIR, TO OFFER.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. *Offrant*. Past, *Offert*.

INDICATIVE.

	Present.	Imperfect.
<i>Offre</i> , etc.		<i>Offrais</i> , etc.
	Perfect.	Future.
<i>Offris</i> , etc.		<i>Offrirai</i> , etc.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.
Offrirais, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

	Present.	Imperfect.
<i>Offre</i> , etc.		<i>Offrisse</i> , etc.

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.	Plural.
	<i>Offrons</i> .
<i>Offre</i> .	<i>Offrez</i> .
<i>Offre</i> .	<i>Offrent</i> .

VERBS CONJUGATED LIKE *Offrir*.*Couvrir*, to cover.*Ouvrir*, to open.*Découvrir*, to discover.*Recouvrir*, to cover again.*Entr'ouvrir*, to open a little.*Rouvrir*, to open again.*Mésoffrir*, to underbid.*Souffrir*, to suffer.OINDRE, TO ANOINT. See **Craindre*.OMETTRE, TO OMIT. See *Mettre*.

OUIR, TO HEAR.

This verb is used only in the infinitive and in the following forms :

PART. Past, *Oui* (used with *Avoir*).INDIC. Perf. *J'ouïs, Il ouït.*SUBJ. Imperf. *Que j'ouïsse, Qu'il ouït.*

The same is true of the compound *Entr'ouïr*, to hear imperfectly.

OUVRIER, TO OPEN. See *Offrir*.PAITRE, TO FEED. See *Connaitre*.PARAITRE, TO APPEAR. See *Connaitre*.PARCOURIR, TO RUN OVER. See *Courir*.PARFAIRE, TO COMPLETE. See *Faire*.PARTIR, TO SET OUT. See *Sentir*.PARVENIR, TO ATTAIN. See *Tenir*.PEINDRE, TO PAINT. See *Craindre*.PERMETTRE, TO PERMIT. See *Mettre*.PLAINdre, TO PITY. See *Craindre*.

PLAIRE, TO PLEASE.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. *Plaisant*.Past, *Plu*.

INDICATIVE.

	Present.		Imperfect.
<i>Plais</i> , etc.		<i>Plaisais</i> , etc.	
	Perfect.		Future.
<i>Plus</i> , etc.		<i>Plairai</i> , etc.	

CONDITIONAL.

Present.
<i>Plairais</i> , etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

	Present.		Imperfect.
<i>Plaise</i> , etc.		<i>Plusse</i> , etc.	

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Plais.</i>	<i>Plaisons.</i>
<i>Plaise.</i>	<i>Plaisez.</i>
	<i>Plaisent.</i>

VERBS CONJUGATED LIKE *Plaire*.

<i>Complaire</i> , to humor.	<i>Faire</i> , to conceal.
<i>Déplaire</i> , to displease.	

PLEUVOIR, TO RAIN.

This verb is seldom used save impersonally, as in § 553. The forms there given will indicate the forms of the plural number and of the 1st and 2d persons singular.

POINDRE, TO DAWN. See *Craindre*.

POURSUIVRE, TO PURSUE. See *Suivre*.

POURVOIR, TO PROVIDE.

This verb is a compound of *Voir*, but differs from it in the following tenses, and in these only.

INDIC. Perf. *Pourvus*, etc.

“ Fut. *Pourvoirai*, etc.

CONDIT. Pres. *Pourvoirais*, etc.

SUBJ. Imperf. *Pourvusse*, etc.

POUVOIR, TO BE ABLE.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. *Pouvant*.

Past, *Pu*.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

Imperfect.

Singular.

Plural.

Singular.

Plural.

Puis or *Peux*.*

Pouvons.

Pouvais.

Pouvions.

Peux.

Pouvez.

Pouvais.

Pouviez.

Peut.

Peuvent.

Pouvait.

Pouvaient.

Perfect.

Future.

Pus, etc.

Pourrai, etc.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

Pourrais, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

Imperfect.

Puisse, etc.

Pusse, etc.

* Of these two forms the first is most commonly used. It must always be used in an interrogative expression: *Puis-je?* not *Peux-je?*

IMPERATIVE.

(Wanting.)

PREDIRE, TO PREDICT. See *Dire*.

PRENDRE, TO TAKE.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. *Prenant*.Past, *Pris*.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

Imperfect.

Singular.

Plural.

Singular.

Plural.

*Prends.**Prenons.**Prenais.**Prenions.**Prends.**Prenez.**Prenais.**Preniez.**Prend.**Prennent.**Prenait.**Prenaient.*

Perfect.

Future.

Pris, etc.*Prendrai*, etc.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

Prendrais, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

Imperfect.

Singular.

Plural.

Singular.

Plural.

*Prenne.**Prenions.**Prisse.**Prissions.**Prennes.**Preniez.**Prisses.**Prissiez.**Prenne.**Prennent.**Prît.**Prissent.*

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

*Prends.**Prenons.**Prenne.**Prenez.**Prennent.*

VERBS CONJUGATED LIKE *Prendre*.

<i>Apprendre</i> , to learn.	<i>'Eprendre (s')</i> , to be smitten.
<i>Comprendre</i> , to comprehend.	<i>Méprendre</i> , to mistake.
<i>Déprendre</i> , to loosen.	<i>Rapprendre</i> , to learn again.
<i>Désapprendre</i> , to unlearn.	<i>Reprendre</i> , to rebuke.
<i>Entreprendre</i> , to undertake.	<i>Surprendre</i> , to surprise.

PRESCRIRE, TO PRESCRIBE. See *'Ecrire*.

PRESENTIR, TO FORESEE. See *Sentir*.

PREVALOIR, TO PREVAIL. See *Valoir*.

PREVENIR, TO PREVENT. See *Venir*.

PREVOIR, TO FORESEE.

This verb is conjugated like *Voir*, except that the indicative Future is *Prévoirai*, etc., and the conditional Present, *Prévoirais*, etc.

PRODUIRE, TO PRODUCE. See *Conduire*.

PROMETTRE, TO PROMISE. See *Mettre*.

PROMOUVOIR, TO PROMOTE. See *Mouvoir*.

PROSCRIRE, TO PROSCRIBE. See *'Ecrire*.

PROVENIR, TO PROCEED. See *Tenir*.

QUERIR, TO FETCH. See *Acquérir*.

RABATTRE, TO BEAT DOWN. See *Battre*.

RAPPRENDRE, TO LEARN AGAIN. See *Prendre*.

RASSEOIR, TO SIT DOWN AGAIN. See *Asseoir*.

RATTEINDRE, TO CATCH AGAIN. See *Atteindre*.

RAVOIR, TO HAVE AGAIN.

Only used in the infinitive.

REBATTRE, TO BEAT AGAIN. See *Battre*.

REBOUILLIR, TO BOIL AGAIN. See *Bouillir*.

RECLURE, TO SHUT UP. See *Conclure*.

RECONDUIRE, TO RECONDUCT. See *Conduire*.

RECONNAITRE, TO RECOGNIZE. See *Connaitre*.

- RECONQUERIR, TO RECONQUER. See *Acquérir*.
 RECONSTRUIRE, TO RECONSTRUCT. See *Conduire*.
 RECOUDRE, TO SEW AGAIN. See *Coudre*.
 RECOURIR, TO RECUR. See *Courir*.
 RECOUVRIER, TO RECOVER. See *Offrir*.
 RECRIRE, TO REWRITE. See *Ecrire*.
 RECROITRE, TO GROW AGAIN. See *Croître*.
 RECUEILLIR, TO COLLECT. See *Cueillir*.
 RECUIRE, TO COOK AGAIN. See *Conduire*.
 REDEFAIRE, TO UNDO AGAIN. See *Faire*.
 REDEVENIR, TO BECOME AGAIN. See *Tenir*.
 REDIRE, TO SAY AGAIN. See *Dire*.
 REDORMIR, TO SLEEP AGAIN. See *Sentir*.
 REDUIRE, TO REDUCE. See *Conduire*.
 REFAIRE, TO REMAKE. See *Faire*.
 REFLEURIR, TO FLOURISH AGAIN. See *Fleurir*.
 REFRIRE, TO FRY AGAIN. See *Frir*.
 REJOINDRE, TO REJOIN. See *Craindre*.
 RELIRE, TO READ AGAIN. See *Lire*.
 RELUIRE, TO SHINE AGAIN. See *Conduire*.
 REMETTRE, TO PUT BACK. See *Mettre*.
 REMOUDRE, TO GRIND AGAIN. See *Moudre*.
 RENAITRE, TO BE BORN AGAIN. See *Naitre*.
 RENDORMIR, TO FALL ASLEEP AGAIN. See *Sentir*.
 RENDUIRE, TO PLASTER ANEW. See *Conduire*.
 RENTRAIRE, TO FINE-DRAW. See *Traire*.
 REPAITRE, TO FEED. See *Connaitre*.
 REPARAITRE, TO REAPPEAR. See *Connaitre*.
 REPARTIR, TO REPLY. See *Sentir*.
 REPEINDRE, TO REPAINT. See *Craindre*.
 REPENTIR (SE). See Gramm. § 559.
 PRENDRE, TO RETAKE. See *Prendre*.
 REPRODUIRE, TO REPRODUCE. See *Conduire*.
 REQUERIR, TO REQUIRE. See *Acquérir*.
 RESOUDRE, TO RESOLVE.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. *Resolvant*.Past, *Résolu, Résous* (fem. *Résoute*).*

INDICATIVE.

Present.

Imperfect.

Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
<i>Résous.</i>	<i>Réolvons.</i>	<i>Réolvais.</i>	<i>Réolvions.</i>
<i>Résous.</i>	<i>Réolvez.</i>	<i>Réolvais.</i>	<i>Réolvez.</i>
<i>Résout.</i>	<i>Réolvent.</i>	<i>Réolvait.</i>	<i>Réolvaient.</i>

Perfect.

Future.

Résolus, etc.*Résoudrai*, etc.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

Résoudrais, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

Imperfect.

Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
<i>Réolve.</i>	<i>Réolvions.</i>	<i>Réolusse.</i>	<i>Réolussions.</i>
<i>Réolves.</i>	<i>Réolvez.</i>	<i>Réolusses.</i>	<i>Réolussiez.</i>
<i>Réolve.</i>	<i>Réolvent.</i>	<i>Réolût.</i>	<i>Réolussent.</i>

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

	<i>Réolvons.</i>
<i>Résous.</i>	<i>Réolvez.</i>
<i>Réolve.</i>	<i>Réolvent.</i>

The verbs *Absoudre*, to absolve, and *Dissoudre*, to dissolve, are conjugated like *Résoudre*, save that they have no perfect indicative and imperfect subjunctive, and that their past parti-

* The form *Résous* is employed only in the sense of *changed*; e. g. *brouillard résous en pluie*, a fog resolved (or changed) into a rain.

ciples are always *Absous* and *Dissous*, never *Absolu* and *Dissolu*. The verb *Soudre*, to solve, is never used save in the infinitive.

RESSENTIR, TO FEEL, RESENT. See *Sentir*.

RESSORTIR, TO GO OUT AGAIN. See *Sentir*.

RESSOUVENIR (SE), TO RECOLLECT. See *Tenir*.

RESTREINDRE, TO RESTRAIN. See *Craindre*.

RETENIR, TO RETAIN. See *Tenir*.

RETRAIRE, TO REDEEM (an estate). See *Traire*.

REVALOIR, TO REQUITE. See *Valoir*.

REVENIR, TO RETURN. See *Tenir*.

REVETIR, TO INVEST.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. *Revêtant*.

Past, *Revêtu*.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Revêts.</i>	<i>Revêtons.</i>
<i>Revêts.</i>	<i>Revêtez.</i>
<i>Revêt.</i>	<i>Revêtent.</i>

Imperfect.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Revétais.</i>	<i>Revétions.</i>
<i>Revétais.</i>	<i>Revétiez.</i>
<i>Revêtait.</i>	<i>Revétaient.</i>

Perfect.

Revétis, etc.

Future.

Revétirai, etc.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

Revétirais, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

Revête, etc.

Imperfect.

Revétisse, etc.

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.	Plural.
	<i>Revêtons.</i>
<i>Revêts.</i>	<i>Revêtez.</i>
<i>Revête.</i>	<i>Revétent.</i>

VERBS CONJUGATED LIKE *Revêtir*.*Dévêtir*, to undress.*Vêtir*, to clothe.

The verb *Vêtir* is seldom, if at all, used in the present participle, the singular number of the present indicative, or of the imperative.

REVIVRE, TO REVIVE. See *Vivre*.REVOIR, TO SEE AGAIN. See *Voir*.

RIRE, TO LAUGH.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. *Riant*.Past, *Ri*.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

Imperfect.

Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
<i>Ris.</i>	<i>Rions.</i>	<i>Riais.</i>	<i>Riions.</i>
<i>Ris.</i>	<i>Riez.</i>	<i>Riais.</i>	<i>Riiez.</i>
<i>Rit.</i>	<i>Rient.</i>	<i>Riait.</i>	<i>Riaient.</i>

Perfect.

Future.

Ris, etc.*Rirai*, etc.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

Rirais, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.		Imperfect.	
Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
<i>Rie.</i>	<i>Rions.</i>	<i>Risse.</i>	<i>Rissions.</i>
<i>Ries.</i>	<i>Riez.</i>	<i>Risses.</i>	<i>Rissiez.</i>
<i>Rie.</i>	<i>Rient.</i>	<i>Rît.</i>	<i>Rissent.</i>

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.	Plural.
	<i>Rions.</i>
<i>Ris.</i>	<i>Riez.</i>
<i>Rie.</i>	<i>Rient.</i>

So conjugate the verb *Sourire*, to smile.

ROMPRE, TO BREAK.

The only irregularity in this verb and its compounds, *Corrompre*, to corrupt, and *Interrompre*, to interrupt, is, that they take the letter *t* at the end of the 3d person present indicative ; e. g. *Rompt*, instead of the regular form, *Romp*.

ROUVRIER, TO OPEN AGAIN. See *Offrir*.

SAILLIR, TO PROJECT. See *Assaillir*.

SATISFAIRE, TO SATISFY. See *Faire*.

SAVOIR, TO KNOW.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. <i>Sachant.</i>	Past, <i>Su.</i>
-----------------------	------------------

INDICATIVE.

Present.		Imperfect.	
Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
<i>Sais.</i>	<i>Savons.</i>	<i>Savais.</i>	<i>Savions.</i>
<i>Sais.</i>	<i>Savez.</i>	<i>Savais.</i>	<i>Saviez.</i>
<i>Sait.</i>	<i>Savent.</i>	<i>Savait.</i>	<i>Savaient.</i>

	Perfect.	Future.
<i>Sus</i> , etc.		<i>Saurai</i> , etc.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.
<i>Saurais</i> , etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.	Imperfect.
<i>Sache</i> , etc.	<i>Susse</i> , etc.

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.	Plural.
	<i>Sachons.</i>
<i>Sache.</i>	<i>Sachez.</i>
<i>Sache.</i>	<i>Sachent.</i>

SECOURIR, TO SUCCOR. See *Courir*.

SEDUIRE, TO SEDUCE. See *Conduire*.

SENTIR, TO FEEL.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. <i>Sentant</i> .	Past, <i>Senti</i> .
------------------------	----------------------

INDICATIVE.

Present.		Imperfect.	
Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
<i>Sens.</i>	<i>Sentons.</i>	<i>Sentais.</i>	<i>Sentions.</i>
<i>Sens.</i>	<i>Sentez.</i>	<i>Sentais.</i>	<i>Sentiez.</i>
<i>Sent.</i>	<i>Sentent.</i>	<i>Sentait.</i>	<i>Sentaient.</i>

Perfect.	Future.
<i>Sentis</i> , etc.	<i>Sentirai</i> , etc.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

Sentirais, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

Imperfect.

Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
<i>Sente.</i>	<i>Sentions.</i>	<i>Sentisse.</i>	<i>Sentissions.</i>
<i>Sentes.</i>	<i>Sentiez.</i>	<i>Sentisses.</i>	<i>Sentissiez.</i>
<i>Sente.</i>	<i>Sentent.</i>	<i>Sentit.</i>	<i>Sentissent.</i>

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

*Sens.**Sentons.**Sente.**Sentez.**Sentent.*VERBS CONJUGATED LIKE *Sentir*.*Consentir*, to agree.*Redormir*, to sleep again.*Démentir*, to belie.*Rendormir*, to put to sleep.*Départir*, to distribute.*Répartir*, to reply.**Desservir*, to disserve.*Repentir*, to repent. (Gramm. § 559.)*Dormir*, to sleep.*Ressentir*, to feel, resent.*Endormir*, to lull.*Ressortir*, to go out again.†*Mentir*, to lie.*Servir*, to serve.*Partir*, to set out.*Sortir*, to go out.*Pressentir*, to foresee.

SEOIR, TO FIT, BECOME.

This verb is never used in the infinitive, and only in the following forms :

* *Répartir*, to distribute, is conjugated regularly. The only difference between the infinitives of the two verbs is, that one has an acute accent over the *e* in the first syllable, and the other has not.

† *Ressortir*, to belong to (a jurisdiction), is conjugated regularly. There is no difference in the form of the infinitive with these different meanings.

PART.	Pres. <i>Seyant</i> .*
INDIC.	Pres. <i>Il sied, Ils siéent.</i>
"	Imperf. <i>Il seyait, Ils seyaient.</i>
"	Perf. <i>Il siéra, Ils siéront.</i>
CONDIT.	Pres. <i>Il siérait, Ils siéraient.</i>

So conjugate *Messeoir*, to be unbecoming; which, however, is seldom used, *Seoir*, with a negative, being considered more elegant.

SERVIR, TO SERVE.	See <i>Sentir</i> .
SORTIR, TO GO OUT.	See <i>Sentir</i> .
SOUDRE, TO SOLVE.	See <i>Resoudre</i> .
SOUFFRIR, TO SUFFER.	See <i>Offrir</i> .
SOUMETTRE, TO SUBMIT.	See <i>Mettre</i> .
SOURDRE, TO SPRING OUT.	

This verb is used only in the infinitive and in the present indicative 3d person, which is *Sourd*.

SOURIRE, TO SMILE.	See <i>Rire</i> .
SOUSCRIRE, TO SUBSCRIBE.	See <i>Ecrire</i> .
SOUSTRAIRE, TO SUBTRACT.	See <i>Traire</i> .
SOUTENIR, TO SUSTAIN.	See <i>Tenir</i> .
SOUVENIR, TO REMEMBER.	See <i>Tenir</i> .
SUBVENIR, TO ASSIST.	See <i>Tenir</i> .
SUFFIRE, TO SUFFICE.	See <i>Dire</i> .
SUIVRE, TO FOLLOW.	

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. <i>Suivant</i> .	Past, <i>Suivi</i> .
------------------------	----------------------

INDICATIVE.

Present.		Imperfect.	
Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
<i>Suis.</i>	<i>Suivons.</i>	<i>Suivais.</i>	<i>Suivions.</i>
<i>Suis.</i>	<i>Suivez.</i>	<i>Suivais.</i>	<i>Suiviez.</i>
<i>Suit.</i>	<i>Suivent.</i>	<i>Suivait.</i>	<i>Suivaient.</i>

* The forms, *Séant, Sis*, are participles present and past from an obsolete verb *Seoir*, meaning *to be situated or seated*.

	Perfect.	Future.
<i>Suivis</i> , etc.		<i>Suivrai</i> , etc.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.
<i>Suivrais</i> , etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.		Imperfect.	
Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
<i>Suive</i> .	<i>Suivions</i> .	<i>Suivisse</i> .	<i>Suivissions</i> .
<i>Suives</i> .	<i>Suiviez</i> .	<i>Suivisses</i> .	<i>Suivissiez</i> .
<i>Suive</i> .	<i>Suivent</i> .	<i>Suivît</i> .	<i>Suivissent</i> .

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.	Plural.
	<i>Suivons</i> .
<i>Suis</i> .	<i>Suivez</i> .
<i>Suive</i> .	<i>Suivent</i> .

VERBS CONJUGATED LIKE *Suivre*.

Ensuivre (s'), to follow from. *Poursuivre*, to pursue.

SURCROITRE, TO GROW OUT. See *Croître*.

SURFAIRE, TO CHARGE TOO MUCH. See *Faire*.

SURPRENDRE, TO SURPRISE. See *Prendre*.

SURSEOIR, TO ADJOURN, DELAY. (Used only in law.)

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. <i>Sursoyant</i> .	Past, <i>Sursis</i> .
--------------------------	-----------------------

INDICATIVE.

Present.		Imperfect.	
Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
<i>Sursois</i> , etc.	<i>Sursoyons</i> , etc.	<i>Sursoyais</i> , etc.	<i>Sursoyions</i> , etc.

Perfect.	Future.
<i>Sursis</i> , etc.	<i>Surseoirai</i> , etc.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.
<i>Surseoirais</i> , etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.		Imperfect.	
Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
<i>Surseoie</i> , etc.	<i>Sursoyions</i> , etc.	<i>Sursisse</i> , etc.	<i>Sursissions</i> , etc.

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Surseois.</i>	<i>Sursoyons.</i>
<i>Surseoie.</i>	<i>Sursoyez.</i>
	<i>Surseoient.</i>

SURVENIR, TO HAPPEN. See *Tenir*.

SURVIVRE, TO SURVIVE. See *Vivre*.

TAIRE, TO CONCEAL, See *Plaire*.

TEINDRE, TO DYE. See *Craindre*.

TENIR, TO HOLD.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. <i>Tenant</i> .	Past, <i>Tenu</i> .
-----------------------	---------------------

INDICATIVE.

Present.		Imperfect.	
Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
<i>Tiens.</i>	<i>Tenons.</i>	<i>Tenais.</i>	<i>Tenions.</i>
<i>Tiens.</i>	<i>Tenez.</i>	<i>Tenais.</i>	<i>Teniez.</i>
<i>Tient.</i>	<i>Tiennent.</i>	<i>Tenait.</i>	<i>Tenaient.</i>

Perfect.		Future.	
Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
<i>Tins.</i>	<i>Tinmes.</i>	<i>Tiendrai.</i>	<i>Tiendrons.</i>
<i>Tins.</i>	<i>Tintes.</i>	<i>Tiendras.</i>	<i>Tiendrez.</i>
<i>Tint.</i>	<i>Tinrent.</i>	<i>Tiendra.</i>	<i>Tiendront.</i>

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

Tiendrais, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.		Imperfect.	
Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
<i>Tienne.</i>	<i>Tenions.</i>	<i>Tinnse.</i>	<i>Tinnssions.</i>
<i>Tiennes.</i>	<i>Teniez.</i>	<i>Tinnsses.</i>	<i>Tinnssiez.</i>
<i>Tienne.</i>	<i>Tiennent.</i>	<i>Tint.</i>	<i>Tinnssent.</i>

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.	Plural.
	<i>Tenons.</i>
<i>Tiens.</i>	<i>Tenez.</i>
<i>Tienne.</i>	<i>Tiennent.</i>

VERBS CONJUGATED LIKE *Tenir*.

<i>Abstenir</i> (s'), to abstain.	<i>Obtenir</i> , to obtain.
<i>Appartenir</i> , to belong.	<i>Parvenir</i> , to attain.
<i>Circonvenir</i> , to circumvent.	<i>Prévenir</i> , to prevent, prepos.
<i>Contenir</i> , to contain.	<i>Provenir</i> , to proceed. [sess.
<i>Contrevenir</i> , to infringe.	<i>Redevenir</i> , to become again.
<i>Convenir</i> , to agree.	<i>Ressouvenir</i> (se), to remember.
<i>Déprévenir</i> , to free from preju-	<i>Retenir</i> , to retain.
<i>Détenir</i> , to detain. [dice.	<i>Revenir</i> , to return.
<i>Devenir</i> , to become.	<i>Soutenir</i> , to sustain.
<i>Disconvenir</i> , to disagree.	<i>Souvenir</i> (se), to remember.
<i>Entretenir</i> , to entertain.	<i>Subvenir</i> , to assist.
<i>Intervenir</i> , to intervene.	<i>Survenir</i> , to happen.
<i>Maintenir</i> , to maintain.	<i>Venir</i> , to come.
<i>Mésavenir</i> , to succeed ill.	

TISTRE, TO WEAVE.

This verb is obsolete in every form but the past part. *Tissu*.

TRADUIRE, TO TRANSLATE. See *Conduire*.

TRAIRE, TO MILK.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. *Trayant*. Past, *Trait*.

INDICATIVE.

Present.		Imperfect.	
Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
<i>Trais</i> , etc.	<i>Trayons</i> , etc.	<i>Trayais</i> , etc.	<i>Trayions</i> , etc.
Perfect.		Future.	
(None.)		<i>Trairai</i> , etc.	

CONDITIONAL.

Present.
Trairais, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.		Imperfect.
Singular.	Plural.	
<i>Traie</i> .	<i>Trayions</i> .	(None.)
<i>Traies</i> .	<i>Trayiez</i> .	
<i>Traie</i> .	<i>Traient</i> .	

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.	Plural.
	<i>Trayons</i> .
<i>Trais</i> .	<i>Trayez</i> .
<i>Traie</i> .	<i>Traient</i> .

VERBS CONJUGATED LIKE *Traire*.*Abstraire*, to abstract.*Distraindre*, to distract.*Extraire*, to extract.*Rentraire*, to fine-draw.*Retraire*, to redeem (an estate).*Soustraire*, to subtract.TRANSCRIRE, TO TRANSCRIBE. See *'Ecrire*.TRANSMETTRE, TO TRANSMIT. See *Mettre*.TRESSAILLIR, TO START. See *Assaillir*.

VAINCRE, TO VANQUISH.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. *Vainquant*.Past, *Vaincu*.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

Singular.

Plural.

*Vaincs.**Vainquons.**Vaincs.**Vainquez.**Vainc.**Vainquent.*

Imperfect.

Singular.

Plural.

*Vainquais.**Vainquions.**Vainquais.**Vainquiez.**Vainquait.**Vainquaient.*

Perfect.

Vainquis, etc.

Future.

Vaincrai, etc.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

Vaincrais, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

Vainque, etc.

Imperfect.

Vainquisse, etc.

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

*Vaincs.**Vainquons.**Vainque.**Vainquez.**Vainquent.*

So conjugate *Convaincre*, to convince.—The three singular persons of the present indicative of *Vaincre* are seldom used. The same is true of the whole of the imperfect indicative.

VALOIR, TO BE WORTH.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. *Valant.* Past, *Valu.*

INDICATIVE.

Present.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Vaux.</i>	<i>Valons.</i>
<i>Vaux.</i>	<i>Valez.</i>
<i>Vaut.</i>	<i>Valent.</i>

Imperfect.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Valais.</i>	<i>Valions.</i>
<i>Valais.</i>	<i>Valiez.</i>
<i>Valait.</i>	<i>Valaient.</i>

Perfect.

Valus, etc.

Future.

Vaudrai, etc.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

Vaudrais, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Vaille.</i>	<i>Valions.</i>
<i>Vailles.</i>	<i>Valiez.</i>
<i>Vaille.</i>	<i>Vaillent.</i>

Imperfect.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Valusse.</i>	<i>Valussions.</i>
<i>Valusses.</i>	<i>Valussiez.</i>
<i>Valût.</i>	<i>Valussent.</i>

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.

Vaux.
Vaille.

Plural.

Valons.
Valez.
Vaillent.

VERBS CONJUGATED LIKE *Valoir*.

'Equivaloir, to be equivalent. *Revalo*ir, to requite.
*Prévalo*ir, to prevail.*

VENIR, TO COME. See *Tenir*.

VETIR, TO CLOTHE. See *Revetir*.

VIVRE, TO LIVE.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. *Vivant*. Past, *Vécu*.

INDICATIVE.

Present.		Imperfect.	
Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
<i>Vis</i> , etc.	<i>Vivons</i> , etc.	<i>Vivais</i> , etc.	<i>Vivions</i> , etc.
Perfect.		Future.	
<i>Vécus</i> , etc.		<i>Vivrai</i> , etc.	

CONDITIONAL.

Present.
Vivrais, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.	Imperfect.
<i>Vive</i> , etc.	<i>Vécusse</i> , etc.

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.	Plural.
	<i>Vivons</i> .
<i>Vis</i> .	<i>Vivez</i> .
<i>Vive</i> .	<i>Vivent</i> .

* The verb *Prévalo*ir, however, differs from *Valoir* in the present subjunctive, which is as follows: *Prévale*, *Prévales*, *Prévale*, *Prévations*, *Prevaliez*, *Prévalent*.

VERBS CONJUGATED LIKE *Vivre*.*Revivre*, to revive.*Survivre*, to survive.

VOIR, TO SEE.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. *Voyant*.Past, *Vu*.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

Imperfect.

Singular.

Plural.

Singular.

Plural.

*Vois.**Voyons.**Voyais.**Voyions.**Vois.**Voyez.**Voyais.**Voyiez.**Voit.**Voient.**Voyait.**Voyaient.*

Perfect.

Future.

Vis, etc.*Verrai*, etc.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

Verrais, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

Imperfect.

Singular.

Plural.

Singular.

Plural.

*Voie.**Voyions.**Visse.**Vissions.**Voies.**Voyiez.**Visses.**Vissiez.**Voie.**Voient.**Vit.**Vissent.*

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

*Vois.**Voyons.**Voie.**Voyez.**Voient.*VERBS CONJUGATED LIKE *Voir*.*Entrevoir*, to have a glimpse of. *Revoir*, to see again.

VOULOIR, TO BE WILLING.

PARTICIPLES.

Pres. *Voulant*.Past, *Voulu*.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

Imperfect.

Singular.

Plural.

Singular.

Plural.

*Veux.**Voulons.**Voulais.**Voulions.**Veux.**Voulez.**Voulais.**Vouliez.**Veut.**Veulent.**Voulait.**Voulaient.*

Perfect.

Future.

Voulus, etc.*Voudrai*, etc.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

Voudrais, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

Imperfect.

Singular.

Plural.

Singular.

Plural.

*Veuille.**Voulions.**Voulusse.**Voulussions.**Veuilles.**Vouliez.**Voulusses.**Voulussiez.**Veuille.**Veussent.**Voulût.**Voulussent.*

There is no *imperative* mood. At least there is but a single form, employed in the expression *veuillez-bien*, be so good as to.

Y AVOIR, THERE BE. See Gramm. § 552.

N. (§ 596.)

I. ADVERBIAL EXPRESSIONS WITH *que*, WHICH REQUIRE THE INDICATIVE MODE.

<i>À cause que</i> , because.	<i>Depuis que</i> , since.
<i>À ce que</i> , according as.	<i>Dès que</i> , as soon as.
<i>À la charge que</i> , on condition that.	<i>D'où vient que?</i> why is it that?
<i>À mesure que</i> , in proportion as.	<i>En tant que</i> , as.
<i>À peine-que</i> , hardly-when.	<i>Lorsque</i> , when.
<i>Ainsi que</i> , as, as well as.	<i>Outre que</i> , besides that.
<i>Après que</i> , when.	<i>Parceque</i> , because.
<i>Attendu que</i> , since, while.	<i>Pendant que</i> , while.
<i>Au lieu que</i> , whereas.	<i>Peut-être que</i> , perhaps.
<i>Aussi bien que</i> , as well as.	<i>Puisque</i> , since.
<i>Aussi loin que</i> , as far as.	<i>Selon que</i> , according as.
<i>Aussi long-temps que</i> , as long as.	<i>Sinon que</i> , except that, unless.
<i>Aussitôt que</i> , as soon as.	<i>Sitôt que</i> , as soon as.
<i>Autant que</i> , as far as.	<i>Suivant que</i> , according as.
<i>D'abord que</i> , as soon as.	<i>Tandis que</i> , while.
<i>D'autant que</i> , whereas.	<i>Tant que</i> , as long as.
<i>D'autant plus que</i> , so much the more as.	<i>Tout que</i> , for all that.
<i>De même que</i> , even as.	<i>Toutes les fois que</i> , whenever.
	<i>Vu que</i> , seeing that.

II. ADVERBIAL EXPRESSIONS WITH *que*, WHICH REQUIRE THE SUBJUNCTIVE MODE.

<i>À Dieu ne plaise que</i> , God forbid.	<i>De peur que</i> ,* for fear that.
<i>À moins que</i> , unless.*	<i>Dieuveuille que</i> , God grant that.
<i>À fin que</i> , in order that.	<i>En cas que</i> , in case that.
<i>Au cas que</i> , in case.	<i>Encore que</i> , although.
<i>Avant que</i> , before.	<i>Jusqu'à ce que</i> , until.
<i>Bien que</i> , although.	<i>Loin que</i> , far from.
<i>Bien entendu que</i> , provided.	<i>Malgré que</i> , notwithstanding.
<i>Ce n'est pas que</i> , not that.	<i>Moyennant que</i> , provided that.
<i>De crainte que</i> ,* for fear that.	<i>Non obstant que</i> , notwithstanding that.

* The adverbial expressions marked above with an asterisk always require the negative *ne* before the subjunctive following; e. g. *à moins qu'il ne le fasse*, unless he does it, *de crainte qu'ils ne viennent*, for fear they should come. (Comp. App. O. § XVI. c. d.)

<i>Plaise</i> or <i>plût à Dieu que</i> ,	<i>Quoique</i> , although.
please God that.	<i>Sans que</i> , without.
<i>Posé</i> or <i>posez le cas que</i> , sup-	<i>Si ce n'est que</i> , if it be not that.
pose that.	<i>Soit que</i> , whether.
<i>Pour peu que</i> , however little.	<i>Supposé, supposons, or suppo-</i>
<i>Pour que</i> , in order that.	<i>sez que</i> , suppose that.
<i>Pourvu que</i> , provided that.	<i>Tant s'en faut que</i> , so far from.

The following adverbial expressions : *à condition que*, on condition that, *de manière que*, so that, *de sorte que*, so that, *en sorte que*, so that, *tellement que*, so that, and perhaps some few others, require the indicative or the subjunctive, according as *certainty* is or is not denoted.

O. (§§ 652, 685.)

PRINCIPLES OF INTERROGATION AND NEGATION.

I. INTERROGATION.

§ I. The various grammatical principles which regulate interrogation in French have already been pretty fully stated. Little else is demanded here, therefore, than to designate, for connected examination, the sections of the Grammar which relate to this subject. These are §§ 190, 287 (with the *note*), 290, 458, 461, 636, 652, 667, 668, 670.

§ II. The impersonal verb *il y a* is rendered interrogative in its form by merely putting the pronoun last (the adverb *y* keeping its place before the word *a*,) and inserting the letter *t* whenever it becomes requisite in conformity with the principle in § 190 of the Grammar; e. g. *y a-t-il ?* is there ? *y avait-il ?* was there ? *y aura-t-il ?* will there be ? etc.

II. NEGATION.

§ I. The French commonly make use of two negatives to express our one. The words *ne pas* are those most frequently employed.

§ II. When the two negatives are used with a *simple tense* of a verb (and thus, of course, when used with the imperative mode), the first comes *before* the verb and the other *after* it; e. g. *je ne frappe pas*, I do not strike, *il ne vient pas*, he does not come, *ne badinez pas*, do not jest. The first negative always precedes the verb *immediately*, except in the cases instanced in §§ 468, 469 of the Grammar.

§ III. When the two negatives are used with a *compound tense* of a verb, the first comes *before* the auxiliary and the other *after* it; e. g. *je n'ai pas frappé*, I have not struck, *il n'a pas parlé*, he has not spoken. The first negative always precedes the auxiliary *immediately*, except in the cases mentioned in §§ 468, 469 of the Grammar.

§ IV. When the two negatives are used with the *infinitive mode* of a verb, *both* negatives generally come *before* the verb, though sometimes one before and one after; e. g. *ne pas parler*, not to speak, *pour ne voir pas*, in order not to see.

§ V. The negative adverb *point* is often used instead of *pas*, and is considered as a stronger negative: e. g. *je n'ai pas d'argent*, I have no money, *je n'ai point d'argent*, I have no money at all; *il ne lit pas*, he does not read, *il ne lit point*, he does not read at all.

§ VI. The negative adverb *point* can never be used instead of *pas* when another adverb or a numeral adjective follows immediately. E. g. *point* could not be used in the following phrases: *je ne vois pas souvent votre frère*, I do not often see your brother, *vous n'avez pas beaucoup d'arbres fruitiers*, you have not many fruit-trees, *Milton n'est pas moins sublime qu'Homère*, Milton is not less sublime than Homer, *il n'y a pas dix ans*, it is not ten years ago.

§ VII. In asking a question, *point* is often used if we have a real doubt in our minds, and *pas* if we are persuaded of the affirmative; e. g. *n'avez-vous point été là?* is it true that you have not been there? *n'avez-vous pas été là?* you have been there; have you not?

§ VIII. Neither *pas* nor *point* can be used when either of the adverbs, *jamais*, never, ever,* *guère* or *guères*, hardly, and *nullement* or *aucunement*, not at all, follows the verb; e. g. *il ne faut jamais se fier aux méchants*, one should never trust wicked persons, *il n'a jamais vu son père*, he has never seen his father, *il n'a guère de voix*, he has hardly any voice, *il n'y a guère de gens tout-à-fait désintéressés*, there are hardly any people entirely disinterested, *je ne le souffrirai nullement*, I will not suffer it at all, *il n'est nullement instruit de cette affaire*, he is not at all acquainted with that matter, *je n'en veux aucunement*, I want none of it.

§ IX. Neither *pas* nor *point* can be used when the adverb *plus* follows the verb, in the sense of *again* or *in addition*; e. g. *je ne le verrai plus*, I will see him no more, *je n'en veux plus*, I want no more.†

§ X. Neither *pas* nor *point* can be used when the substantive *goutte* follows the verb *voir*, or when *mot*, without an article or numeral adjective, follows the verb *dire*, or when *brin*, without an article or numeral adjective, follows any verb; e. g. *il ne voit goutte*, he does not see at all, *je ne disais mot*, I said not a word, *il n'y en a brin*, there is not a sprig of it.‡

§ XI. Neither *pas* nor *point* can be used when either of the indefinite pronouns, *aucun*, any or any one, *nul*, no or no one, *personne*, nobody, and *rien*, nothing, occurs, either *after* the

* When the adverb *jamais* is used without *ne* it signifies *ever*; e. g. *avez-vous jamais rien vu de si beau?* have you ever seen any thing so beautiful? *si vous venez jamais me voir*, if you ever come to see me.

† When *plus* occurs after a verb as the sign of the comparative degree, a double negative is employed; e. g. *je ne veux pas de plus belle que la vôtre*, I do not want any finer than yours, *il ne s'y en trouve pas de plus belle*, there is no finer to be seen there.

‡ But *pas* must be used when an article or numeral occurs before *mot* or *brin*; e. g. *il ne dit pas un mot qui m'intéresse*, he does not say a word which interests me, *il n'a pas un brin de bois pour se chauffer*, he has not a stick of wood to warm himself with.

verb or, as its *nominative*, before it ; e. g. *je ne connais aucun de vos juges*, I know no one of your judges, *il ne m'a rendu aucuns soins*, he has not rendered me any attentions, *il n'a nulle exactitude*, he has no exactness, *nul n'en sera excepté*, no one will be excepted, *je ne connais personne*, I know nobody, *je n'ai vu personne*, I saw nobody, *personne ne sera assez hardi*, no one will be bold enough, *c'est un homme qui n'aime rien*, he is a man who loves nothing, *je n'ai rien dit*, I said nothing, *rien ne me plait davantage*, nothing pleases me more.*

§ XII. Neither *pas* nor *point* can be used in the same clause with *quelconque*, *qui que ce soit*, *quoi que ce soit*, or *qui* employed instead of *qui est-ce qui* ; e. g. *il n'a mal quelconque*, he has no ailment, *je n'y ai trouvé qui que ce soit*, I found nobody there, *il ne peut réussir en quoi que ce soit*, he cannot succeed in anything, *qui (qui est-ce qui) ne voit que vous avez raison ?* who does not see that you are right ?

§ XIII. It is commonly the case that neither *pas* nor *point* is used after the verbs *cesser*, *oser*, *pouvoir*, and *savoir* ; e. g. *il ne cesse de se rendre ridicule*, he does not cease to render himself ridiculous, *on n'ose vous le dire*, they dare not tell it to you, *nous ne pouvons y penser sans frémir*, we cannot think of it without shuddering.

§ XIV. Both *pas* and *point* are suppressed in the following negative expressions : *gardez-qu'on ne vous voie*, take care that they do not see you, *ne bougez*, do not stir ; and in such as : *y a-t-il un homme dont elle ne médise*, is there a man whom she does not slander ? *avez-vous un ami qui ne soit des miens ?* have you a friend who is not also mine ?

§ XV. Both *pas* and *point* are suppressed before the preposition *de* used in describing a space of time ; e. g. *je ne lui parlerai de ma vie*, I will not speak to him during my life.

* It will be noticed that, in the examples given in this section, *aucun* and *personne*, when used with a verb in a compound tense, are placed *after the participle*, instead of before it like *rien*. The case is always thus with these pronouns.

§ XVI. Both *pas* and *point* are suppressed after the conjunction *que* in the following cases :

(a.) When *que* is employed to express the English *why* in a question ; e. g. *que n'allez-vous la voir ?* why do you not go to see her ?

(b.) When *que* signifies *but* or *only* ; e. g. *il n'est que pauvre*, he is only poor, *ils n'ont que peu de bien*, they have but little property.

(c.) When *que*, either alone or with *à moins*, signifies *unless*, and the expression is not of a negative form in English ; e. g. *je ne lui écrirai pas qu'il ne m'envoie mes livres*, I will not write to him unless he sends me my books, *à moins qu'il ne vienne*, unless he comes.

(d.) When *que* may be translated *lest*, and the expression is not of a negative form in English ; e. g. *de crainte qu'il ne vienne*, for fear lest he come, *de peur qu'il n'aille*, lest he should go, *il craint que sa récolte ne soit gâtée*, he fears lest his crop should be spoiled, *j'apprends que la fièvre ne revienne*, I have apprehension lest the fever should return, *je tremble qu'à mon retour je n'immole et toi et ton ami perfide*, I tremble lest at my return I should sacrifice both thyself and thy treacherous friend.*

(e.) When *que* is preceded by a word of comparison, such as *plus*, *moins*, *mieux*, *autre*, *autrement* ; e. g. *elle est plus riche que vous ne pensiez*, she is richer than you thought, *il est mieux qu'il n'était*, he is better than he was, *il est fait tout autrement que vous ne croyez*, he is made up very differently from what you think.

(f.) When *que* is preceded by the impersonal verb *il y a* or by *voici*, in speaking of length of time ; e. g. *il y a trois*

* When the expression *is* of a negative form in English, either in this case or in the one mentioned in the preceding paragraph (c.), *two* negatives must be employed in French ; e. g. *je crains qu'il ne vienne pas*, I fear he will not come, *à moins qu'il ne vienne pas*, unless he does not come, etc.

jours que vous n'avez mangé, it is three days since you have eaten, *voici cinq nuits que je n'ai fermé l'œil*, for five nights I have not closed my eyes.

(g.) When *que* is preceded by the expression *c'est dommage*; e. g. *c'est dommage qu'il ne fit cela*, it is a pity that he did not do that.

§ XVII. Both *pas* and *point* are suppressed when the conjunction *ni* occurs directly after the verb; e. g. *je ne chante ni ne danse*, I neither dance nor sing, *je ne suis ni démocrate ni aristocrate*, I am neither democrat nor aristocrat, *je ne le dirai ni à l'un ni à l'autre*, I will not tell it to either.

§ XVIII. Both *pas* and *point* are suppressed after the conjunction *si* when it can be rendered *unless* in English; e. g. *il n'en fera rien s'il ne veut*, he will do nothing about it unless he pleases, *il viendra à bout de cette affaire si les puissances ne s'y opposent*, he will accomplish this matter if the powers do not make opposition.

§ XIX. The negative *non* is generally used for the English adverb *no*, in answer to a question or otherwise, but sometimes *non pas* or *point* is used for more emphasis; e. g. *croyez-vous cela? Non* (or *Non pas*)! do you believe that? No! *irez-vous ce soir au parc? Point!* shall you go this evening to the park? No! *Je croyais avoir affaire à un honnête homme; mais point*, I thought I had to do with an honest man; but no.

§ XX. The negative *pas* is generally used alone to qualify an adjective or another adverb; e. g. *pas un seul*, not one, *pas beaucoup*, not much, *pas bien*, not well.

§ XXI. The English conjunctive expression *not that* is rendered in French by *non que*, or, more emphatically, by *non pas que*; e. g. *non que nous soyons ennemis, mais nos humeurs ne s'accordent pas*, not that we are enemies, but our dispositions do not harmonize, *non pas que je haisse la société*, not that I hate society.

§ XXII. The French negative *ne* is used alone in some in-

stances where no negative appears in English. This is always the case in the instances which come under the rule in § XVI, c, above. In regard to the cases mentioned in § XVI, d, e, the principle is as follows : When the verb preceding is *affirmative*, or *interrogative with a negation*, *ne* must be used, but not when the first verb is *negative* or *interrogative without negation* ; e. g. *j'apprehende qu'il ne vienne*, I apprehend he will come, *n'apprehendez-vous pas qu'il ne vienne ?* do you not apprehend that he will come ? *je n'apprehende pas qu'il vienne*, I do not apprehend that he will come, *apprehendez-vous qu'il vienne ?* do you apprehend that he will come ?

P. (§ 686.)

USE OF THE PREPOSITIONS *à* and *de* BEFORE INFINITIVES AND SUBSTANTIVES.

I. The following verbs require the preposition *à* after them before an infinitive, and those which are printed in *Italics* require it also before a substantive which they govern :

<i>s'Abandonner</i>	Autoriser	Eclairer	Inviter
<i>Aboutir</i>	Chercher	Encourager	<i>Jouer</i> (to game)
<i>s'Accoutumer</i>	<i>Compatir</i>	<i>s'Endurcir</i>	<i>se Mettre</i>
Admettre	Condamner	Engager	Montrer
<i>s'Adonner</i>	<i>Condescendre</i>	<i>s'Engager</i>	<i>Nuire</i>
<i>Adhérer</i>	Consister	Enhardir	<i>Obéir</i>
<i>Aider</i>	<i>Contrevenir</i>	Enseigner	<i>Obvier</i>
<i>Aimer</i>	Contribuer	Exciter	<i>s'Obstiner</i>
<i>Applaudir</i>	Convier	Exercer	<i>s'Occuper</i>
<i>s'Appliquer</i>	Demeurer	Exhorter	<i>s'Opiniâtrer</i>
<i>Apprendre</i>	<i>Déplaire</i>	<i>s'Exposer</i>	<i>s'Opposer</i>
Apprêter	<i>Désobéir</i>	<i>se Fier</i>	<i>Parvenir</i>
<i>s'Apprêter</i>	Destiner	Habituer	<i>Penser</i>
<i>s'Arrêter</i>	Déterminer	<i>s'Habituer</i>	Perdre
Assigner	Disposer	Inciter	<i>Persister</i>
<i>s'Attacher</i>	Donner	Incliner	<i>se Plaire</i>
<i>s'Attendre</i>	Dresser	<i>Insulter</i>	Porter

<i>Pourvoir</i>	<i>Prétendre</i>	<i>Rester</i>	<i>Tendre</i>
Pousser	Renoncer	Satisfaire	Travailler
<i>Précéder</i>	<i>Résister</i>	Subvenir	Viser.
Présenter	Ressembler	Survivre	

II. The following verbs require the preposition *de* after them before an infinitive, and those printed in Italics require it also before a substantive :

<i>Abuser</i>	Convaincre	<i>s'Empresser</i>	<i>se Lasser</i>
<i>s'Abstenir</i>	Convenir	Enjoindre	Louer
<i>s'Accommoder</i>	Craindre	<i>s'Ennuyer</i>	Mander
<i>s'Acquitter</i>	Décharger	<i>s'Enorgueillir</i>	<i>Manquer</i>
Affliger	Décourager	<i>Enrager</i>	<i>Médire</i>
<i>s'Affliger</i>	Défendre	Entreprendre	Méditer
<i>s'Apercevoir</i>	<i>se Défier</i>	Epouvanter	<i>se Méfier</i>
Appréhender	Dégouter	Essayer	<i>se Mêler</i>
<i>s'Approcher</i>	<i>se Démettre</i>	<i>s'Etonner</i>	<i>Menacer</i>
Approuver	<i>se Dépêcher</i>	Excuser	Mériter
Arrêter	<i>se Désaccoutu-</i>	Exempter	<i>se Moquer</i>
Attendrir	<i>mer</i>	Exiger	Négliger
Attrister	Désespérer	Feindre	Notifier
<i>s'Attrister</i>	<i>se Déshabituer</i>	Finir	Offrir
Avertir	<i>se Désister</i>	<i>se Flatter</i>	Omettre
<i>s'Aviser</i>	Déterminer	<i>se Garder</i>	Ordonner
Blâmer	Dire	Gêner	Oublier
Censurer	<i>Disconvenir</i>	Gronder	Pardonner
Cesser	Dispenser	Haïr	<i>Parler</i>
Chagriner	Divertir	<i>se Hâter</i>	Permettre
<i>se Chagriner</i>	<i>Douter</i>	<i>Hésiter</i>	Persuader
Charger	Ecrire	<i>s'Impatienter</i>	<i>Pester</i>
<i>se Charger</i>	Edifier	<i>s'Indigner</i>	<i>se Piquer</i>
Choisir	<i>s'Efforcer</i>	<i>s'Informer</i>	Plaindre
Commander	Effrayer	<i>s'Ingérer</i>	<i>se Plaindre*</i>
Conclure	<i>s'Emanciper</i>	<i>s'Inquiéter</i>	<i>Plaire</i>
Conjurer	Embarrasser	Inspirer	Précipiter
Conseiller	<i>s'Emparer</i>	Jouer	<i>se Précipiter</i>
<i>se Consoler</i>	Empêcher	Jurer	Prescrire
Contraindre	<i>s'Empêcher</i>	Justifier	Presser

* *Se plaindre* requires the preposition *de* before what is complained of, and *à* before the individual to whom complaint is made ; e. g. *se plaindre de quelque chose à quelqu'un*, to complain of something to some one.

Présumer	<i>se Réjouir</i>	<i>se Retracter</i>	Suffire
Professer	Rémercier	<i>se Rire</i>	Suggérer
<i>Profiter</i>	<i>se Repentir</i>	<i>se Saisir</i>	Supplier
Promettre	Réprendre	Scandaliser	Surprendre
Proposer	Réprimander	<i>se Scandaliser</i>	Susciter
<i>se Rebuter</i>	Reprocher	<i>se Servir</i>	Tromper
Recommander	Résoudre	Sommer	Troubler
Redouter	<i>se Ressouvenir</i>	<i>se Soucier</i>	User
Refuser	Retenir	Soupçonner	<i>se Vanter.</i>
Réjouir	<i>se Retenir</i>	<i>se Souvenir</i>	

III. The following verbs take either *à* or *de* before an infinitive, generally according to euphony :

Commencer	Couter	Forcer	Obliger
Continuer	s'Efforcer	Manquer*	Tâcher.†
Contraindre	Essayer		

IV. The following verbs allow no preposition after them before an infinitive or substantive which they govern :

Aimer mieux	Désirer	Faire	Savoir
Confesser	Entendre	s'Imaginer	Souhaiter
Croire	Devoir	Laisser	Voir
Déclarer	Envoyer	Prétendre	Vouloir.
Déposer	Espérer	Reconnaître	

V. The following verbs allow no preposition after them before an infinitive which they govern :

Aller	Oser	Paraître	Valoir mieux
Daigner	Ouïr	Sembler	Venir.
Falloir			

VI. The following *adjectives*, when used with *être*, require *à* after them before an infinitive :

Admirable	Affreux	Agréable	Ardent
Adroit	Agile	Aisé	Assidu

* *Manquer* requires *de* when it means *to fail*, and *à* when it means *to forget*.

† *Tâcher* generally requires *de* ; but sometimes, when it means *to aim at*, it requires *à* ; e. g. *il tâche à me nuire*, he aims to injure me.

Beau	Doux	Hideux	Premier
Bon	Effroyable	Honnête	Prêt
Charmant	Enclin	Horrible	Prompt
Civil	Exact	Incivil	Propre
Dernier	Facile	Lent	Second
Diligent	Habile	Malhonnête	Sujet
Disposé	Hardi	Porté	Terrible.

VII. The following adjectives, when used with *être*, require *de* after them before an infinitive :

Aise	Curieux	Incapable	Mécontent
Assuré	Digne	Incertain	Ravi
Avide	Ennuyé	Indigne	Satisfait
Capable	Fâché	Joyeux	Sûr.
Certain	Fatigué	Las	
Content	Honteux		

VIII. The following *substantives*, in all cases, require *de* before an infinitive :

Action	Commodité	Fermeté	Maître
Adresse	Confusion	Fierté	Mal-adresse
Ambition	Conseil	Force	Malheur
Amitié	Constance	Front	Malice
Amour	Contrainte	Fureur	Manière
Ardeur	Courage	Glorie	Mortification
Arrogance	Curiosité	Grâce	Motif
Art	Danger	Habitude	Moyen
Artifice	Dépit	Hardiesse	Nature
Assurance	Déplaisir	Hasard	Nécessité
Attente	Désespoir	Honnêteté	Obligation
Attention	Désir	Honte	Ordre
Audace	Dureté	Imprudence	Orgueil
Autorité	Effronterie	Impudence	Passion
Avantage	Embarras	Impuissance	Patience
Avidité	Envie	Incommodité	Peine
Avis	Espérance	Inquiétude	Plaisir
Bonheur	Espoir	Insolence	Pourvoir
Bonté	Esprit	Intention	Précaution
Chagrin	Facilité	Jugement	Présomption
Choix	Façon	Justice	Puissance
Cœur	Faveur	Liberté	Rage

Risque	Satisfaction	Souci	Vanité
Ruse	Scandale	Témérité	Volonté.
Sagesse			

So also in general all substantives which do not imply willingness or unwillingness, fitness or unfitness.

IX. The following substantives, used with *avoir* without an article, require *de* before an infinitive :

Affaire	Dessein	Occasion	Soin
Besoin	Droit	Permission	Sujet
Congé	Envie	Raison	Tort.
Coutume	Lieu		

SELECTIONS
FROM THE
CLASSIC LITERATURE
OF
FRANCE;
WITH EXPLANATORY NOTES,
AND A
VOCABULARY.

BY
DAVID FOSDICK, JR.

ANDOVER:
PUBLISHED BY GOULD, NEWMAN & SAXTON.
NEW YORK:
CORNER OF FULTON AND NASSAU STS.
1840.

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO

LIBRARY

OF THE

PHYSICAL SCIENCES

AND

ENGINEERING

DEPARTMENT OF

PHYSICS

CHICAGO, ILL.

U.S.A.

1950

1951

1952

1953

1954

1955

1956

1957

1958

1959

1960

1961

1962

1963

SELECTIONS

FROM

FRENCH LITERATURE.

PART I. PROSE.

Amour de la patrie.

UN Romain, nommé Rutilius, ayant été banni injustement, un de ses amis, pour le¹ consoler, lui² dit qu'il s'élèverait bientôt dans Rome une guerre civile, à la faveur de laquelle il pourrait³ être rappelé: "Que t'ai-je donc fait," lui répondit⁴ Rutilius, "pour me souhaiter un retour plus triste encore que mon exil."

Obscurité du style.

Le philosophe Favorin dit à un jeune orateur, qui affectait une grande obscurité dans son style et se servait⁵ de termes anciens et inusités: ⁶ "Si vous ne voulez pas être entendu, qui vous empêche de vous taire."⁷

Avarice.

L'abbé Regnier,⁸ secrétaire de l'Académie Française, y faisait un jour dans son chapeau la collecte d'une pistole que chaque membre devait⁹ fournir pour une dépense commune. Cet abbé, croyant que le président Rose,¹⁰ homme fort avare, n'avait pas mis dans le chapeau, le lui¹¹ présenta une seconde fois. Le président protesta qu'il avait donné. "Je le crois," dit¹² l'abbé Regnier, "mais je ne l'ai point¹³ vu." "Et moi,"¹⁴

¹ § § 401, 460. — ² § § 402, 460. — ³ App. M. — ⁴ § 286. — ⁵ recip. verb. — ⁶ § 348. — ⁷ recip. verb. — ⁸ § 221. — ⁹ § 660, and App. P. IV. — ¹⁰ § 221. — ¹¹ § 464. — ¹² § 286. — ¹³ App. O. II. § V. — ¹⁴ § 400.

ajouta¹ M. de Fontenelle, qui était à côté, "je l'ai vu, mais je ne le crois pas."

Sincérité.

Le grand Alexandre dit, un jour, à l'un de ses ministres qui l'avait long-temps² servi : "Je ne suis point satisfait de vous ; car je suis homme, et je sais que, comme tel, je suis sujet à l'erreur et à l'oubli, et cependant vous ne m'avertissez jamais de mes défauts. Si vous ne vous apercevez³ pas plus que moi de⁴ mes fautes, c'est ignorance ; si vous vous en apercevez et que vous me le cachiez,⁵ c'est trahison."

Fermeté d'esprit.

Le célèbre Fabert, se disposant à⁶ faire le siège d'une ville, montrait les dehors de cette place avec un doigt, pour indiquer l'endroit par où il faudrait⁷ l'attaquer. Un coup de mousquet lui⁸ emporta ce doigt. Il parut n'y⁹ pas faire¹⁰ attention : "Messieurs," continua-t-il, sans la moindre émotion, "je vous disais donc qu'il serait bon de diriger vos batteries sur ce point ;" et il indiquait d'un autre doigt la même partie de la place.

Amour Filial.

Une dame Romaine fut condamnée¹¹ à mort, et livrée au bourreau pour être étranglée dans la prison. Cet homme, touché¹² de ses larmes, ne put¹³ se résoudre à lui arracher la vie, et l'abandonna dans le cachot, persuadé qu'elle y mourrait bientôt de faim. Il laissait¹⁴ entrer librement la fille de cette infortunée, en¹⁵ s'assurant néanmoins qu'elle n'apportait point de vivres. Cependant il¹⁶ s'écoulait du temps. Le bourreau, surpris que la prisonnière¹⁷ existât encore, se mit à observer sa fille avec plus d'attention. Il ne tarda point à reconnaître, avec autant ¹⁸d'attendrissement que d'admiration,

¹ § 286. — ² § 679. — ³ recip. verb. — ⁴ App. P. II. — ⁵ § 597. — ⁶ App. P. I. — ⁷ § 655. — ⁸ §§ 402, 460. — ⁹ § 477. — ¹⁰ § 238. — ¹¹ § 571. — ¹² § 570. — ¹³ App. O. § XIII. — ¹⁴ App. P. IV. — ¹⁵ § 567. — ¹⁶ *il*, there. — ¹⁷ § 591. — ¹⁸ § 252.

que cette généreuse fille allaitait sa mère pour lui prolonger sa vie. Dans son enthousiasme, il alla tout raconter au magistrat. On¹ courut aussitôt en² foule à la prison; on en³ emporta la mère et la fille en triomphe; et le peuple ⁴Romain, juste⁵ rémunérateur de la vertu, fit⁶ grâce à l'une, et assigna à l'autre une pension considérable⁷ sur le trésor public.⁸

Modestie de Platon.

Platon, voulant⁹ voir les jeux Olympiques, se rendit¹⁰ à l'Olympie, où il logea avec des¹¹ personnes qui ne le connaissaient pas. Il leur¹² plut par ses manières et par son entretien, sans se découvrir¹³ à eux. Après la célébration des jeux, ils vinrent le visiter à Athènes, où il les reçut avec ces façons aimables¹⁴ qui distinguent les vrais¹⁵ sages. Alors ses hôtes lui dirent: "Faites-nous¹⁶ voir, s'il vous plaît, ce disciple de Socrate, qui porte le même nom que vous (car il leur avait dit qu'il se nommait Platon), et dont¹⁷ la renommée fait partout tant de¹⁸ bruit. Menez-nous¹⁹ à son école, et présentez-nous à lui, afin que²⁰ nous retirions quelque fruit de sa conversation." "C'est²¹ moi-même," leur répondit Platon, avec un sourire modeste. Ces étrangers emportèrent de lui une bien plus grande idée, que si, dès le premier moment, il s'était annoncé pour ce qu'il était, avec²² emphase et prétention. Si vous voulez vous faire aimer, et si vous désirez que l'on vous rende²³ justice, laissez oublier aux autres que vous êtes homme de²⁴ mérite et de réputation. Ils ne seront jamais plus portés à vous estimer et à vous vanter, que lorsque vous leur en²⁵ abandonnerez entièrement le soin.

Exagération.

Mademoiselle du Plessis nous honore souvent²⁶ de sa présence. Elle disait hier à table qu'en Basse-Bretagne on faisait une chère admirable, et qu'aux noces de sa belle-sœur on

¹ § 386. — ² § 237. — ³ § 477. — ⁴ § 340. — ⁵ § 221. — ⁶ § 238. — ⁷ § 343. — ⁸ § 344. — ⁹ App. P. IV. — ¹⁰ recip. verb. — ¹¹ § 246. — ¹² § 412. — ¹³ § 563. — ¹⁴ § 343. — ¹⁵ § 347. — ¹⁶ App. P. IV. — ¹⁷ § 425. — ¹⁸ § 252. — ¹⁹ § 462. — ²⁰ App. N. — ²¹ § 645. — ²² § 237. — ²³ § 591. — ²⁴ § 253. — ²⁵ § 466. — ²⁶ § 678.

avait mangé pour un jour douze cents pièces de rôti. Nous demeurâmes tous¹ comme des gens de² pierre. Je pris courage et lui dis : "Mademoiselle, pensez-y bien ; n'est-ce point *douze* pièces de rôti que vous voulez dire ? On se trompe quelquefois." "Non, madame, c'est *douze cents* pièces, ou *onze cents*. Je ne veux pas vous assurer si c'est onze ou douze, de peur de mentir ; mais enfin je sais bien que c'est l'un ou l'autre." Elle le répéta vingt fois, et n'en voulut jamais rabattre un seul poulet. Nous trouvâmes qu'il fallait qu'ils fussent³ pour le moins trois cents piqueurs pour piquer menu, et que le lieu fût⁴ un grand pré, où ⁵l'on eût fait dresser des tentes, et que, s'ils n'eussent été que cinquante, il fallait qu'ils eussent commencé un mois auparavant. Ce propos de table était bon ; vous en auriez été contente. N'avez-vous point quelque exagéréeuse comme celle-là ? (MME. DE SÉVIGNÉ.)

Boileau et un Jésuite.

'A propos de Corbinelli, il m'écrivit l'autre jour un fort joli billet. Il me rendait compte d'une conversation et d'un dîner chez M. de Lamoignon. Les acteurs étaient les maîtres du logis, M. de Troyes, M. de Toulon, le père Bourdaloue, son compagnon, Despréaux, et Corbinelli. On parla des ouvrages des anciens et des modernes. Despréaux s'ouïnt les anciens, à la réserve d'un seul moderne, qui surpassait, à son goût, et les vieux et les nouveaux. Le compagnon du Bourdaloue, qui faisait l'entendu⁶ et qui s'était attaché à Despréaux et à Corbinelli, lui demanda quel⁷ était donc ce livre si distingué dans son esprit. Despréaux ne voulut pas lui dire. Corbinelli se joint au Jésuite, et conjure Despréaux de nommer ce livre, afin de le lire toute la nuit. Despréaux lui répondit en riant : "Ah ! monsieur, vous l'avez lu plus d'une fois, j'en suis assuré." Le Jésuite reprend avec un air dédaigneux, et presse Despréaux de nommer cet auteur si merveilleux. Despréaux lui dit : "Mon père, ne me pressez⁸ point." Le père continue. Enfin, Despréaux le prend par le bras, et, le serrant bien fort, lui dit : "Mon père, vous le voulez ; hé bien, morbleu ! c'est Pascal."—"Pascal," dit le père, tout rouge, tout étonné, "Pas-

¹ § 325. — ² § 253. — ³ § 593. — ⁴ § 593. — ⁵ § 191. — ⁶ *faisait l'entendu*, pretended to be very knowing. — ⁷ § 432. — ⁸ App. O. II. § V.

cal est beau autant que le faux peut l'être.—“Le faux,” reprit Despréaux, “le faux ! sachez qu’il est aussi vrai qu’il est inimitable. On vient de le traduire en trois langues.” Le père répond : “Il n’en est pas plus vrai.” Despréaux s’échauffe, et, crie comme un fou : Quoi ! mon père, direz-vous qu’un des vôtres² n’ait pas fait imprimer dans un de ses livres qu’un *Chrétien n’est pas obligé*³ *d’aimer Dieu ?* Osez-vous dire que cela est faux ?”—“Monsieur,” dit le père en fureur, il faut distinguer.”—“Distinguer,” dit Despréaux, “distinguer ! morbleu ! distinguer, distinguer si nous sommes obligés d’aimer Dieu ;” et, prenant Corbinelli par le bras, il s’enfuit au bout de la chambre. Puis, revenant et courant comme un forcené, il ne voulut jamais se rapprocher du père, et s’en alla⁴ rejoindre la compagnie qui était demeurée⁵ dans la salle où l’on mange. Ici finit l’histoire : le rideau tombe. (Id.)

La cupidité doublement punie.

Un riche particulier, voyant son fils prêt à s’oublier au jeu, le laissa faire. Le jeune homme perdit une somme assez considérable. “Je la paierai,” lui dit son père, “parceque l’honneur⁶ m’est plus cher que l’argent. Cependant expliquons-nous.⁷ Vous aimez le jeu, mon fils, et moi⁸ les pauvres. Je leur ai moins donné depuis que je songe à vous pourvoir. Je n’y songe plus : un joueur ne doit point se marier. Jouez tant qu’il vous plaira ; mais à cette condition : Je déclare qu’à chaque perte nouvelle les pauvres recevront de ma part autant d’argent que j’en aurai compté pour acquitter de semblables dettes. Commençons des aujourd’hui.” La somme fut sur-le-champ portée à l’hôpital ; et le jeune homme, doublement puni de sa cupidité, fut guéri, par cette seule leçon, d’un penchant qui allait entraîner sa ruine. (BERQUIN.)

L’Homme.

Je vois l’homme pourvu de tout ce qui peut servir à son bonheur. D’une conformation supérieure à celle de tous les

¹ § 479.—² § 363.—³ App. P. III.—⁴ See *Aller*, App. M.—⁵ § 578.
—⁶ § 401.—⁷ *expliquons-nous*, let us understand each other.—
⁸ § 400.

animaux, il dompte avec son génie le petit nombre de ceux dont¹ les forces surpassent les siennes. S'il n'a pas reçu en partage² la rapidité du cerf ni du cheval, il forge les traits qui devançant l'un dans sa course, et il monte sur le dos de l'autre pour le diriger. Privé de l'aile de l'oiseau, il³ en donne à l'arbre immobile qui végète dans les forêts, et s'en fait porter jusqu'aux bornes du monde. Sa vue, moins perçante que celle de l'insecte, n'est pas aussi bornée à l'espace étroit⁴ où il se meut⁵; ses regards peuvent⁶ embrasser un immense horizon, et contempler les grandes merveilles de la nature. Comme l'aigle, il ne fixe pas le soleil; mais il invente des instrumens qui semblent le rapprocher de cet astre, pour mesurer sa distance, et observer sa position, au milieu d'une foule innombrable d'étoiles obscurcies par sa splendeur. Tous ses autres sens lui procurent aussi des jouissances continuelles, et veillent également à ses plaisirs et à sa sûreté. Un noble sentiment de son génie lui fait⁷ tenter chaque jour, avec succès, de nouvelles découvertes. Il désarme le tonnerre, ou lui marque la place qu'il doit frapper. Il combat les élémens l'un par l'autre, oppose la douce chaleur du feu au souffle glacé de l'air, et défend la terre de la fureur des eaux. Tantôt il descend dans les plus ténébreuses profondeurs de son séjour, pour en rapporter de⁸ riches métaux qu'il épure, et dont il forme, par un mélange ingénieux, des substances nouvelles. Tantôt il gravit les roches informes suspendues sur sa tête, les précipite dans les vallées, et les relève en édifices somptueux, ou en pyramides hardies qui vont⁹ cacher leurs sommets dans les nues. La société qu'il forme avec ses semblables, pour la satisfaction réciproque de leurs besoins, le fait jouir, en récompense de son travail, des travaux de cent millions de bras empressés à lui procurer les douceurs de la vie. Il trouve à chaque pas sous ses mains les productions de tout l'univers. Les sciences élèvent son âme et agrandissent son esprit; les beaux-arts adoucissent ses peines et le délassent de ses labeurs. La mémoire et la réflexion lui forment une expérience de celle¹⁰ de tous les siècles qui se sont écoulés. Avec le doux sentiment de son existence personnelle, son cœur jouit¹¹ encore, dans les autres, par la compassion et la bienfaisance, par les liaisons du sang et de l'amitié. Sa félicité ne dépend que de lui seul, au milieu de tout ce qui l'entoure, puisqu'on la trouve dans l'exercice modéré de ses forces, et

¹ § 425. — ² *en partage*, as a portion. — ³ *en*, it. — ⁴ § 339. — ⁵ *se mouvoir*. — ⁶ App. M. — ⁷ App. P. 1V. — ⁸ § 247. — ⁹ App. P. V. — ¹⁰ i. e. the experience. — ¹¹ neut. verb.

dans l'usage constant de sa raison. S'il la trouve quelquefois en cherchant à s'élancer trop loin de lui-même, il n'en doit accuser que sa folie. (Id.)

Le Riche et le Pauvre.

Giton a le teint frais, le visage plein, et les joues pendantes, l'œil fixe et assuré, les épaules larges, l'estomac haut, la démarche ferme et délibérée : il parle avec¹ confiance, il fait² répéter celui qui l'entretient, et il ne goute³ que médiocrement tout ce qu'il lui dit : il déploie un ample mouchoir, il se mouche avec grand bruit ; il crache fort loin, et il éternue fort haut ; il dort ⁴le jour, il dort la nuit, et profondément ; il ronfle en campagne. Il occupe à table et à la promenade plus de place qu'un autre ; il tient le milieu en se promenant avec ses égaux ; il s'arrête, et l'on s'arrête ; il continue de marcher, et l'on marche : tous se règlent sur lui ; il interrompt, il redresse ceux qui ont la parole ; on ne l'interrompt pas, on l'écoute aussi long-temps qu'il veut parler ; on croit les nouvelles qu'il débite. S'il s'assied, vous le voyez s'enfoncer dans un fauteuil, croiser les jambes l'une sur l'autre, froncer le sourcil,⁵ abaisser son chapeau sur ses yeux pour ne voir personne, ou le relever ensuite, et découvrir son front par fierté et par audace. Il est enjoué, grand rieur, impatient, présomptueux, colère, libertin, politique, mystérieux sur les affaires du temps : il se croit des talens et de l'esprit. Il est riche.

Phédon a les yeux creux, le teint échauffé, le corps sec et le visage maigre : il dort peu, et d'un sommeil fort léger : il est abstrait, rêveur, et il a, avec de l'esprit, l'air d'un stupide : il oublie de dire ce qu'il sait ou de parler d'événemens qui lui sont connus ; et, s'il le fait quelquefois, il s'en tire mal ; il croit peser à ceux à qui il parle : il conte brièvement, mais froidement ; il ne se fait pas écouter, il ne fait point rire ; il applaudit, il sourit à ce que les autres lui disent, il est de leur avis ; il court, il vole, pour leur rendre petits services : il est complaisant, flatteur, empressé, il est mystérieux sur ses affaires, quelquefois menteur ; il est superstitieux, scrupuleux, timide ; il marche doucement et légèrement, il semble⁶ craindre de fouler la terre ; il marche les yeux baissés, et il n'ose⁷ les lever

¹ § 237. — ² App. P. IV. — ³ App. O. § XVI. b. — ⁴ § 704. — ⁵ § 144. — ⁶ App. P. V. — ⁷ App. O. II. § XIII.

sur ceux qui passent. Il n'est jamais du nombre de ceux qui forment un cercle pour discourir ; il se met derrière celui qui parle, recueille furtivement ce qui se dit, et se retire si on le regarde. Il n'occupe point de lieu, il ne tient point de place ; il va les épaules serrées, le chapeau abaissé sur ses yeux pour n'être point vu ; il se replie, et se renferme dans son manteau ; il n'y a point de rues ni de galeries si embarrassées et si remplies de monde, où il ne trouve¹ moyen de passer sans effort, et de se couler sans être aperçu. Si on le prie de s'asseoir, il se met à peine sur le bord d'un siège ; il parle bas dans la conversation, et il articule mal : libre néanmoins sur les affaires publiques, chagrin contre le siècle, médiocrement prévenu des ministres et du ministère, il n'ouvre² la bouche que pour répondre : il tousse, il se mouche sous son chapeau, il crache presque sur soi, et il attend qu'il soit seul pour éternuer, ou, si cela lui arrive, c'est à l'insu de la compagnie ; il n'en coûte³ à personne ni salut, ni compliment. Il est pauvre.

(LA BRUYÈRE.)

Respect à la vieillesse.

Les Egyptiens avaient pour les vieillards le respect le plus profond. La jeunesse se levait devant eux, et leur cédait partout la place d'honneur. Pendant les fêtes qu'on nommait Panathénées, et qui se célébraient à Athènes, un vieillard était venu⁴ chercher une place dans l'endroit où se tenaient les Athéniens. Les jeunes gens se moquèrent de lui, et le renvoyèrent avec⁵ dédain. Il se présenta ensuite du côté des Lacédémoniens. Des qu'il fut à leur portée, ils se levèrent tous, par⁶ respect pour son âge. Les Athéniens applaudirent cette action avec⁷ enthousiasme. "Helas ?" s'écria un Lacédémonien, "ce peuple connaît ce qui est honnête, sans⁸ avoir le courage de le pratiquer." Pour le vieillard, attendri, il s'écria : "Les Grecs connaissent les règles de la bienséance ; les Lacédémoniens les pratiquent." Effectivement, la vieillesse, dévouée ailleurs au mépris, élevait un Spartiate au faite de l'honneur. Les autres citoyens, et surtout les jeunes gens, avaient pour lui les égards qu'ils devaient, un jour, exiger pour eux-mêmes. La loi les obligeait de lui céder le pas⁹ à chaque ren-

¹ § 238. — ² App. O. II. § XVI. b. — ³ App. O. II. § XVII. — ⁴ App. P. V. — ⁵ § 237. — ⁶ § 237. — ⁷ § 237. — ⁸ § 563. — ⁹ *ceder le pas*, to yield precedence.

contre, de se lever quand il paraissait, de se taire quand il parlait. On l'écoutait avec déférence dans les assemblées de la nation et dans les salles du gymnase. Ainsi les citoyens de Lacédémone, qui avaient servi leur patrie, loin de lui devenir étrangers à la fin de leur carrière, étaient respectés, les uns comme les dépositaires de l'expérience, les autres comme ces monumens dont on se fait une religion de conserver les débris.

(BARTHELEMY.)

Jérusalem.

Entre la vallée du Jourdain et les plaines de l'Idumée s'étend une chaîne de¹ montagnes qui commence aux champs fertiles de la Galilée, et va se perdre dans les sables de l'Yémen. Au centre de ces montagnes se trouve un bassin aride, fermé de toutes parts par des sommets jaunes et rocailleux. Ces sommets ne s'entr'ouvrent² qu'au levant, pour laisser voir le gouffre de la mer Morte et les montagnes lointaines de l'Arabie. Au milieu de ce paysage de³ pierres, sur un terrain inégal et penchant, dans l'enceinte d'une tour jadis ébranlée sous les coups de⁴ bélier, et fortifiée par des tours qui tombent, on aperçoit de⁵ vastes débris. Des cyprès épars, des buissons d'aloès et de nopals, quelques masures Arabes, pareilles à des sépulcres blanchis, recouvrent cet amas de ruines. C'est la triste Jérusalem. Au premier aspect de cette région désolée, un grand ennui saisit le cœur; mais lorsque, passant de solitude en solitude, l'espace s'étend sans bornes devant vous, peu à peu l'ennui se dissipe, le voyageur éprouve une terreur secrète qui, loin d'abaisser l'âme, donne du courage et élève le génie. Des aspects extraordinaires décèlent de toutes parts une terre travaillée par des miracles. Le soleil brûlant, l'aigle impétueux, l'humble hysope, le cèdre superbe, le figuier stérile, toute la poésie et tous les tableaux de l'Ecriture sont là. Chaque nom renferme un mystère, chaque grotte déclare l'avenir, chaque sommet retentit des accens d'un prophète. Dieu même a parlé sur ces bords. Les torrens desséchés,⁶ les rochers fendus, les tombeaux entr'ouverts, attestent les prodiges; le désert paraît encore muet de terreur, et l'on dirait qu'il n'a⁷ osé rompre le silence depuis que l'Eternel a parlé.

CHATEAUBRIAND.

¹ § 249. — ² App. I. O. II. § XVI. b. — ³ § 253. — ⁴ § 253. — ⁵ § 247. — ⁶ 342. — ⁷ App. O. II. § XIII.

Constantinople.

Constantinople, et surtout la côte d'Asie, étaient noyées dans le brouillard. Les cyprès et les minarets que j'apercevais à travers¹ cette vapeur présentaient l'aspect d'une forêt dépouillée. Comme nous approchions de la pointe du sérail, le vent du Nord se leva et balaya, en moins de² quelques minutes, la brume répandue sur ce tableau. Je me trouvai tout-à-coup au milieu des palais du Commandeur des Croyans. Devant moi le canal de la Mer Noire serpentait entre des collines riantes, ainsi qu'un fleuve superbe. J'avais à droit la terre d'Asie et la ville de Scutari. La terre d'Europe était à ma gauche. Elle formait, en se creusant, une large baie pleine de grands navires à l'ancre, et traversée par d'innombrables petits bateaux. Cette baie, renfermée entre deux coteaux, présentait en regard et en amphithéâtre Constantinople et Galata. L'immensité de ces trois villes étagées, Galata, Constantinople, et Scutari; les cyprès, les minarets, les mâts des vaisseaux qui s'élevaient et se confondaient de toutes parts; la verdure des arbres; les couleurs des maisons blanches et rouges; la mer qui étendait sous ces objets sa nappe bleue;³ et le ciel qui déroulait au dessus un autre champ d'azur: voilà ce que j'admiraais. On n'exagère point, quand on dit que Constantinople offre le plus beau point de vue de l'univers.—Nous abordâmes à Galata. Je remarquai sur-le-champ le mouvement des quais, et la foule des porteurs, des marchands, et des mariniers. Ceux-ci annonçaient par la couleur diverse de leurs visages, par la différence de leurs langages, de leurs habits, de leurs chapeaux, de leurs bonnets, de leurs turbans, qu'ils étaient⁴ venus de toutes les parties de l'Europe et de l'Asie habiter cette frontière de deux mondes. L'absence presque totale des femmes, le manque de voitures à roues, et les meutes de chiens sans maîtres, furent les trois caractères distinctifs⁵ qui me frappèrent d'abord dans l'intérieur de cette ville extraordinaire. Comme on ne marche guère qu'en babouches, qu'on n'entend point de bruits de carrosses et de charrettes, qu'il n'y a point de cloches, ni presque point de métiers à marteau, le silence est continuel. Vous voyez autour de vous une foule muette, qui semble vouloir passer sans être aperçue, et qui a toujours l'air de se dérober aux regards du maître. Vous arrivez sans cesse d'un bazar à un cimetière,

¹ § 698. — ² *en moins de*, in less than. — ³ § 338. — ⁴ App. L. — ⁵ § 344.

comme si les Turcs n'étaient là que pour acheter, vendre, et mourir. Ces cimetières sans murs et placés au milieu des rues sont des bois magnifiques de cyprès. Les colombes font leurs nids dans ces cyprès, et partagent la paix de morts. On découvre çà et là quelques monumens antiques qui n'ont de rapport, ni avec les hommes modernes, ni avec les monumens nouveaux dont ils sont environnés. On dirait qu'ils ont été transportés dans cette ville orientale par l'effet du talisman. Aucun signe de joie, aucune apparence de bonheur ne se montre à vos yeux : ce qu'on voit n'est pas un peuple, mais un troupeau qu'un Iman conduit, et qu'un Janissaire égorge. Il n'y a d'autre plaisir que la débauche, d'autre peine que la mort. Au milieu des prisons et des bagnes s'élève un sérail, capitol de la servitude ; c'est là qu'un gardien sacré conserve les germes de la peste et les lois primitives de la tyrannie. De pâles adorateurs rôdent sans cesse autour du temple, et viennent apporter leurs têtes à l'idole. Rien ne peut les soustraire au sacrifice ; ils sont entraînés par un pouvoir fatal. Les yeux du despote attirent les esclaves, comme les regards du serpent fascinent les oiseaux dont il fait sa proie. (Id.)

V e n i s e .

On s'embarque sur la Brenta pour arriver à Venise, et des deux¹ côtés du canal on voit les palais des Vénétiens, grands et un peu délabrés, comme la magnificence Italienne.² Ils sont ornés d'une manière bizarre et qui ne rappelle en rien le goût antique. L'architecture Vénétienne se ressent³ du commerce avec l'Orient. C'est un mélange du goût Mauresque et Gothique qui attire la curiosité sans⁴ plaire l'imagination. Le peuplier, cet arbre régulier⁵ comme l'architecture, borde le canal presque partout. Le ciel est d'un bleu vif,⁶ qui contraste avec le vert éclatant de la campagne. Ce vert est entretenu par l'abondance excessive⁷ des eaux. Le ciel et la terre sont ainsi de deux couleurs si fortement tranchées, que cette nature elle-même a l'air d'être arrangée avec une sorte d'apprêt ; et l'on n'y trouve point le vague mystérieux qui fait aimer le midi de ⁸l'Italie. L'aspect de Venise est plus étonnant qu'agréable. On croit d'abord voir une ville submergée, et la⁹ réflexion est

¹ § 345. — ² § 340. — ³ *se ressent*, bears marks. — ⁴ § 237. — ⁵ § 339. — ⁶ § 344. — ⁷ § 344. — ⁸ § 225. — ⁹ § 232.

nécessaire pour admirer le génie des mortels qui ont conquis cette demeure sur les eaux. Naples¹ est bâtie en amphithéâtre au bord de la mer, mais Venise étant sur un terrain tout-à-fait plat, les clochers ressemblent aux mâts d'un vaisseau qui resterait immobile au milieu des ondes. Un sentiment de tristesse s'empare de l'imagination en entrant dans ²Venise. On prend congé³ de la végétation : on ne voit pas même une mouche en ce séjour ; tous les animaux en sont bannis ; et l'homme seul est là pour lutter contre la mer.

Le silence est profond dans cette ville, dont les rues sont des canaux, et le bruit des rames est l'unique interruption à ce silence. Ce n'est pas la campagne, puisqu'on n'y voit pas un arbre ; ce n'est pas la ville, puisqu'on n'y entend pas le moindre mouvement ; ce n'est pas même un vaisseau, puisqu'on n'avance pas : c'est une demeure dont l'orage fait une prison, car il y a⁴ des momens où l'on ne peut sortir ni de la ville ni de chez soi.⁵ On trouve des hommes du peuple à Venise qui n'ont pas vu la place Saint-Marc, et pour qui la vue d'un cheval ou d'un arbre serait une véritable merveille. Ces gondoles noires, qui glissent sur les canaux, ressemblent à⁶ des cercueils ou à des berceaux, à la dernière et à la première demeure de l'homme. Le soir on ne voit passer que le reflet des lanternes qui éclairent les gondoles ; car de nuit leur couleur noire empêche de les distinguer. On dirait que ce sont des ombres qui glissent sur l'eau, guidées par une petite étoile. Dans ce séjour tout est mystère, le gouvernement, les coutumes, et l'amour. Sans doute il y a beaucoup de jouissances pour le cœur et la raison, quand on parvient à pénétrer dans tous ces secrets ; mais les étrangers doivent trouver l'impression du premier moment singulièrement triste. (MME. DE STAEL.)

Alexandrie.

Parmi les lieux propres ⁷à causer la surprise et l'admiration, il en⁸ est peu qui réunissent autant de moyens qu'Alexandrie en Egypte. Le nom de cette ville, qui rappelle le génie d'un homme si étonnant ; le nom du pays, qui tient à tant de faits et d'idées ; l'aspect du lieu, qui présente un tableau si pittoresque ;

¹ App. G. — ² § 225. — ³ § 238. — ⁴ from *y avoir*. — ⁵ *chez soi*, home. — ⁶ App. P. I. — ⁷ App. P. VI. — ⁸ § 509.

ces palmiers, qui s'élèvent en parasol ; ces maisons à terrasse, qui semblent dépourvues de toit ; ces flèches grêles des minarets, qui portent une balustrade dans les airs ; tout avertit le voyageur qu'il est dans un autre monde. Descend-il à terre, une foule d'objets¹ inconnus l'assaille par tous ses sens ; c'est une langue dont les sons barbares et l'accent âcre et guttural effraient son oreille ; ce sont des habillemens d'une forme bizarre, des figures d'un caractère étrange. Au lieu de nos visages nus, de nos têtes enflées de cheveux, de nos coiffures triangulaires, et de nos habits courts et serrés, il regarde avec surprise ces visages brûlés, armés de barbe et de moustaches ; cet amas d'étoffe roulée en plis sur une tête rase ; ce long vêtement, qui, tombant du cou aux talons, voile le corps plutôt qu'il ne l'habille ; et ces pipes de six pieds ; et ces longs chapelets dont toutes les mains sont garnies ; et ces hideux chameaux qui portent l'eau dans des sacs de cuir ; et ces ânes sellés et bridés, qui transportent légèrement leur cavalier en pantouffles ; et ce marché mal fourni de dattes et de petits pains ronds et plats ; et cette foule immonde de chiens errans dans les rues ; et ces espèces de fantômes ambulans qui, sous une draperie d'une seule piece, ne montrent d'humain que des yeux de² femme. Dans ce tumulte, tout entier à ses sens, son esprit est nul pour la réflexion ; ce n'est³ qu'après être arrivé au gîte si désiré quand on vient de la mer, que, devenu plus calme, il considère avec réflexion ces rues étroits et sans pavé, ces maisons basses et dont les jours rares sont masqués de treillages, ce peuple maigre et noirâtre, qui marche nu-pieds, et n'a pour tout vêtement qu'une chemise bleue, ceinte d'un cuir ou d'un mouchoir rouge. Déjà l'air général de misère qu'il voit sur les hommes, et le mystère qui enveloppe les maisons, lui font soupçonner la rapacité de la tyrannie et la défiance de l'esclavage. Mais un spectacle qui bientôt attire toute son attention, ce sont⁴ les vastes ruines qu'il aperçoit du côté de la terre. Dans nos contrées, les ruines sont un objet de curiosité : à peine trouve-t-on, aux lieux écartés, quelque vieux château dont le délabrement annonce plutôt la désertion du maître que la misère du lieu. Dans Alexandrie, au contraire, à peine sort-on de la ville neuve dans le continent, que⁵ l'on est frappé de l'aspect d'un vaste terrain tout couvert de ruines. Pendant deux heures de marche, on suit une double ligne de⁶ murs et de tours, qui formaient l'enceinte de l'ancienne Alexandrie.

¹ § 249.— ² § 253,— ³ App. O. II. § XVI. b.— ⁴ § 627.— ⁵ § 191.
— ⁶ § 259.

La terre est couverte des débris de leurs sommets ; des pans entières sont écroulés, les voûtes enfoncées ; les créneaux dégradés, et les pierres rongées et défigurées par le salpêtre. On parcourt un vaste intérieur sillonné de fouilles, percé de puits, distribué par des murs à demi enfouis, semé de quelques colonnes anciennes, de tombeaux modernes, de palmiers, de nopals, et où l'on ne trouve de vivant que des chacals, des éperviers, et des hiboux. Les habitans, accoutumés à ce spectacle, n'en reçoivent aucune impression ; mais l'étranger, en qui les souvenirs qu'il rappelle s'exaltent par l'effet de la nouveauté, éprouve une émotion qui souvent passe jusqu'aux larmes, et qui donne lieu à des réflexions dont la tristesse attache autant le cœur que leur majesté élève l'âme. (VOLNEY.)

Chillon.

Chillon, l'ancienne prison d'état des ducs de Savoie, aujourd'hui l'arsenal du canton de Vaux, fut bâti en 1250. La captivité de Bonnivard l'a tellement rempli de son souvenir, qu'on a oublié jusqu'au nom d'un prisonnier qui s'en échappa² en 1798, d'une manière presque miraculeuse. Ce malheureux parvint à faire un trou dans le mur, à l'aide d'un clou arraché à la semelle de ses souliers ; mais, sorti de son cachot,³ il se trouva dans un plus grand, et voilà tout. Il lui fallut alors, à la force du poignet, briser une barre de fer qui fermait une meurtrière de trois ou quatre pouces de large ; la trace de ses souliers restée sur le talus de cette meurtrière atteste que les efforts qu'il fut obligé de faire dépassaient presque la puissance humaine. Ses pieds, à l'aide desquels il se roidissait, ont creusé la pierre à la profondeur d'un pouce. Cette meurtrière est la troisième à gauche en entrant dans le grand cachot.

Nous avons parlé⁴ de Bonnivard et de Berthelier. Le premier avait dit un jour que, pour l'affranchissement de son pays, il donnerait sa liberté ; le second répondit qu'il donnerait sa vie. Ce double engagement fut entendu, et lorsque les bourreaux vinrent en réclamer l'accomplissement, ils les trouvèrent prêts tous deux à l'accomplir. Berthelier marcha à l'échafaud. Bonnivard, transporté à Chillon, y trouva une captivité affreuse. Lié par le milieu du corps à une chaîne, dont l'autre bout allait

¹ § 221. — ² § 612. — ³ § 78. — ⁴ § 618.

rejoindre un anneau de fer scellé dans un pilier, il resta ainsi six ans, n'ayant de liberté que la longueur de cette chaîne, ne pouvant se coucher que là où elle lui permettait de s'étendre, tournant toujours comme une bête fauve alentour de son pilier, creusant le pavé avec sa marche forcément régulière, rongé par cette pensée, que sa captivité ne servait peut-être en rien à l'affranchissement de son pays, et que Genève et lui étaient voués à des fers éternels. Comment, dans cette longue nuit, que nul jour ne venait interrompre, dont le silence n'était¹ troublé que par le bruit des flots du lac battant les murs du cachot, comment la pensée n'a-t-elle pas tué la matière, ou la matière la pensée? Comment, un matin, le geôlier ne trouva-t-il² pas son prisonnier mort ou fou, quand une seule idée éternelle devait lui briser le cœur et lui dessécher le cerveau? Et pendant ce temps, pendant six ans, pendant cette éternité, pas un cri, pas une plainte, dirent ses geôliers, excepté sans doute quand le ciel déchaînait l'orage, quand la tempête soulevait les flots, quand la pluie et le vent fouettaient les murs. Car alors sa voix se perdait dans la grande voix de la nature: car alors, vous seul, ô mon Dieu! vous pouviez distinguer ses cris et ses sanglots; et ses geôliers, qui n'avaient pas joui de son désespoir, le retrouvaient le lendemain calme et résigné, car la tempête alors s'était calmée dans son cœur comme dans la nature. Oh! sans cela, sans cela, ne se serait-il pas brisé la tête à son pilier? ne se serait-il pas étranglé avec sa chaîne? aurait-il pas attendu le jour où l'on entra en tumulte dans sa prison, et où cent voix lui dirent à la fois:

—Bonnivard, tu es libre!

—Et Genève?

—Libre aussi!—

Depuis lors, la prison du martyr est devenue un temple, et son pilier un autel. Tout ce qui a un cœur noble et amoureux de la liberté se détourne de sa route, et vient prier là où il a souffert. On se fait conduire droit à la colonne où il a été si long-temps enchaîné; on cherche, sur sa surface granitique, où chacun veut inscrire un nom, les caractères qu'il y a gravés; on se courbe vers la dalle creusée pour y retrouver la trace de ses pas; on se cramponne à l'anneau auquel il était attaché, pour éprouver s'il est solidement scellé encore avec son ciment de huit siècles. Toute autre idée se perd dans cette idée: c'est

¹ App. O. II. § XVI. b. — ² § 287, note.

ici qu'il est resté enchaîné six ans . . . six ans . . . c'est-à-dire la neuvième partie de la vie d'un homme.

Un soir, c'était en 1816, par une de ces belles nuits qu'on croirait que Dieu a faites pour la Suisse seule, une barque s'avança silencieusement, laissant derrière elle un sillage brillant par les rayons brisés de la lune ; elle cinglait vers les murs blanchâtres du château de Chillon, et toucha au rivage sans secousse, sans bruit, comme un cygne qui aborde ; il en descendit un homme, au teint pâle, aux yeux perçans, au front découvert et hautain ; il était enveloppé d'un grand manteau noir qui cachait ses pieds, et cependant on s'apercevait qu'il boitait légèrement. Il demanda à voir le cachot de Bonnivard ; il y resta seul et long-temps, et lorsqu'on rentra après lui dans le souterrain, on trouva, sur le pilier même auquel avait été enchaîné le martyr, un nouveau nom : BYRON.

(A. DUMAS.)

B u f f o n .

L' historien de la nature est noble, fécond, majestueux comme elle, mais pas toujours aussi varié. Comme elle, il s'élève sans effort et sans secousse ; comme elle, il descend dans les plus petits détails, sans¹ être moins attachant ni moins beau. Son style se plie à tous les objets, et en prend la couleur : sublime, quand il déploie à nos regards l'immensité des êtres et les richesses de la création, quand il peint les révolutions du globe, les bienfaits ou les rigueurs de la nature ; orné quand il décrit, profond quand il analyse, intéressant lorsqu'il nous raconte l'histoire de ces animaux devenus nos amis et nos bienfaiteurs. Juste envers ceux qui l'ont précédé dans le même genre d'écrire, il loue Pline le naturaliste et Aristote, et il est plus éloquent que ces deux grands hommes. En un mot, son ouvrage est un des beaux² monumens de ce siècle, élevé pour les âges suivans, et auquel l'antiquité n'a rien à opposer.

(LA HARPE.)

M a r i u s .

Marius était né dans un village proche d'Arpinum, de parens pauvres, et qui gagnaient leur vie du travail de leurs mains.

Il avait été élevé dans les travaux rustiques, et ses mœurs étaient aussi féroces que son visage était affreux. C'était un homme d'une grande taille, d'une force de corps extraordinaire ; courageux et soldat avant que d'avoir porté les armes. Il entra de bonne heure¹ dans les armées, il s'y distingua par des actions d'une rare valeur, et surtout par une pratique exacte de la discipline militaire. Il cherchait dans toutes les occasions des périls dignes de son courage, et les plus longues marches et toutes les fatigues de la guerre ne coûtaient rien à un homme élevé durement. On remarque toujours dans sa conduite un extrême éloignement des voluptés : et depuis son élévation il ne parut sensible qu'à l'ambition et à la vengeance ; passions qui coûtèrent tant de sang à la république. Il passe par tous les degrés de la milice ; et ces différens grades furent toujours la récompense d'autant d'actions où il s'était signalé. Quand il demanda au peuple la charge de tribun dans une légion, la plupart de ses concitoyens ne connaissaient pas son visage : mais son nom n'était ignoré de personne ; et, à la faveur d'une réputation si bien établie, il emporta cet emploi sur plusieurs patriciens qu'il avait pour compétiteurs. Metellus, si bon juge de la valeur, le poussa depuis aux premières charges de l'armée, et il parvint par sa protection jusqu'à la dignité de tribun du peuple. Ce fut dans cette place qu'il commença à découvrir son ambition et la haine violente qu'il portait au parti de la noblesse. Il déclamaient incessamment contre le luxe des sénateurs ; et, quoiqu'il ne fût pas éloquent, il ne cessait de représenter au peuple, avec une voix forte et tonnante, combien il lui devait être honteux de n'oser confier le commandement des armées et les principales dignités de l'état qu'à des nobles ; que ces hommes avarés et ambitieux se les² étaient comme appropriées ; qu'à la faveur de leur crédit ils se les remettaient de main en main ; et que pendant qu'ils en étaient revêtus ils y exerçaient impunément toute sorte de³ brigandages.

(VERTOT.)

Sylla.

Lucius Cornelius Sylla, ⁴patricien, et d'une des plus illustres familles de Rome, était bien fait, de bonne mine, l'air noble, les manières aisées, pleines de franchise en apparence, et qui

¹ de bonne heure, early. — ² les, i. e. the dignities. — ³ § 250. — ⁴ § 220.

semblaient laisser voir à découvert¹ le fond de son cœur ; naturellement insinuant, persuasif, éloquent, il aimait les plaisirs, et encore plus la gloire. Son devoir marchait devant tout ; il savait se livrer et s'arracher aux voluptés avec la même facilité. Il voulait plaire à tout le monde : modeste dans ses discours s'il était question de parler de lui-même ; prodigue de louanges pour les autres, et encore plus d'argent. Il en prêtait avec plaisir à ceux qui avaient recours à lui, et prévenait ceux qui en avaient besoin et qui n'osaient lui en emprunter. Il ne le redemandait jamais, et il semblait qu'il voulût acheter l'armée entière. Familier surtout avec les simples soldats, devenant soldat lui-même, il en prenait les manières grossières, buvait avec eux, les raillait, souffrait avec plaisir d'en² être raillé ; mais hors de la table,³ sérieux, actif, diligent. C'était un Protée à qui ces différens personnages ne coûtaient rien, et ses vertus et ses défauts étaient également couverts par une profonde dissimulation qui le rendait impénétrable jusques dans ses plaisirs les plus secrets, aux compagnons mêmes de ses débauches.

(Id.)

César.

Caius Julius César était né de l'illustre famille des Jules, qui, comme toutes les grandes maisons, avait sa chimère, en se vantant de tire son origine d'Anchise et de Vénus. C'était l'homme de son temps le mieux fait, adroit à toutes sortes d'exercices, infatigable au travail, plein de valeur, le courage élevé, vaste dans ses desseins, magnifique sans sa dépense, et libéral jusqu'à la profusion. La nature, qui semblait l'avoir fait⁴ naître pour commander au reste des hommes, lui avait donné un air d'empire et dignité dans ses manières : mais cet air de grandeur était tempéré par la douceur et la facilité de ses mœurs. Son éloquence insinuante et invincible était encore plus attachée aux charmes de sa personne qu'à la force de ses raisons. Ceux qui étaient assez durs pour résister à⁵ l'impression que faisaient tant d'aimables qualités, n'échappaient point à ses bienfaits, et il commença par⁶ assujettir les cœurs, comme le fondement le plus solide de la domination à laquelle il aspirait.

Né⁷ simple citoyen d'une république, il forma, dans une con-

¹ à découvert, uncovered. — ² en, by them. — ³ hors de la table, away from the table. — ⁴ App. P. IV. — ⁵ App. P. I. — ⁶ § 563. — ⁷ § 220.

dition privée, le projet ¹d'assujettir sa patrie. La grandeur et les périls d'une pareille entreprise ne l'épouvantèrent point. Il ne trouva rien au-dessus de son ambition, que l'étendue immense de ses vues. Les exemples récents de Marius et de Sylla lui firent comprendre qu'il n'était pas impossible de s'élever à la souveraine puissance ; mais, sage jusque dans ses desirs immodérés, il distribua en différens temps l'exécution de ses desseins. Son esprit, toujours juste, malgré son étendue, n'alla que par degrés au projet de la domination ; et, quelque éclatantes ²qu'aient été depuis ses victoires, elles ne doivent passer pour de grandes actions que parcequ'elles furent toujours la suite et l'effet de grands desseins. (ID.)

Fénélon écrivain.

On croirait que Fénélon a produit³ le Télémaque d'un seul jet ; l'homme de lettres le plus exercé dans l'art d'écrire ne pourrait distinguer les momens où Fénélon a quitté et repris la plume, tant ses transitions sont naturelles, soit qu'il entraîne doucement par la pente de ses idées, soit qu'il fasse franchir avec lui l'espace que l'imagination agrandit ou resserre à son gré. Jamais on n'aperçoit aucun effort ; maître de sa pensée, il la voit sans nuages ; il ne l'exprime pas, il la peint ; il sent, il pense, et le mot suit avec la grâce, la noblesse, ou l'onction qui lui convient. Toujours coulant, toujours lié, toujours nombreux, toujours périodique, il connaît l'utilité de ces liaisons grammaticales que nous laissons perdre, qui enrichissaient l'idiome du Grec, et sans lesquelles il n'y aura⁴ jamais de style. On ne le voit pas recommencer à penser de ligne en ligne ; traîner péniblement des phrases, tantôt précises, tantôt diffuses, où l'esprit peint son embarras à chaque instant, et ne se relève⁵ que pour retomber : son élocution pleine et harmonieuse, enrichie des métaphores les mieux suivies, des allégories les plus sublimes, des images les plus pittoresques, ne présente au lecteur que clarté, facilité, élégance, et rapidité. Grand, parcequ'il est singulier, il ne se sert de la parole que pour exprimer ses idées, et n'étale jamais ce luxe d'esprit qui, dans les lettres comme dans les états, n'annonce que l'indigence. Modèle accompli de la poésie descriptive, il multiplie ces comparaisons vastes qui supposent un génie observateur, et il flatte sans cesse

¹ § 563.—² § 594.—³ § 618.—⁴ from *y avoir*.—⁵ App. O. II. § XVI. b.

Poreille par les charmes de l'harmonie imitative : en un mot, Fénelon donne à la prose la couleur, la mélodie, l'accent, l'âme de la poésie ; et son style, vrai, enchanteur, inimitable, trop abondant peut-être, ressemble à sa vertu. (MAURY.)

Montesquieu.

Montesquieu fut encore plus¹ historien que philosophe. Son imagination vive se plaisait surtout au spectacle des événemens et des hommes. Ce ne fut point la nature humaine, universelle et abstraite, qui fut l'objet de sa contemplation ; il chercha les liens et les conséquences des faits historiques. De-là résulta une étude des lois politiques et civiles, sous un rapport nouveau. En les comparant aux circonstances au milieu desquelles elles ont pris naissance, il essaya de découvrir leur vrai sens. Sa politique n'a rien de dogmatique ni d'absolu ; elle est critique et narrative. Il explique la législation selon les temps, les lieux, les races, les événemens. Il est loin pourtant de mettre en oubli les règles générales de la justice et le sentiment moral ; rien en lui ne ressemble à l'indifférence de la fatalité. Plus vivement qu'aucun historien moderne, Montesquieu sait s'affliger sur les malheurs ou la honte de l'humanité, s'indigner contre l'oppression et l'iniquité. Toutefois, il ne se propose jamais pour but une réforme fondamentale. Hardi dans son examen, il est résigné dans ses conclusions ; c'est l'esprit du jurisconsulte porté à un haut degré d'élévation et de lumière, et cependant restant dans sa sphère. De lui date cette école du droit, qui se nomme historique, et qui, née en France, fait depuis quelques années l'honneur de l'Allemagne. (DE BARANTE.)

La Bruyère.

Pour La Bruyère, il me semble que je le vois : silencieux au milieu du monde ; recevant de tout des impressions vives qu'il renfermait en lui-même ; doux à vivre, parce que rien ne l'offensait personnellement ; regardant passer devant lui les vices et les ridicules, attentivement et avec intérêt, sans être tenté de les interrompre, comme on voit sur un théâtre des

¹ § 220.

acteurs jouer leurs rôles ; peu sensible à la critique, moins encore à la louange ; placé au milieu d'une société où il se trouvait inférieur de rang et de fortune, et la jugeant sans un seul mouvement de jalousie, sans aigreur comme sans complaisance, avec la conscience calme de sa supériorité ; ennemi de cette dévotion qui s'applaudit d'avoir donné à ses défauts une écorce de sécheresse et d'orgueil ; pourtant, plein d'une profonde et réelle vénération pour la religion, et voyant au-dessous de lui les petites attaques de l'incrédulité frivole ou de la philosophie. Enfin, il se peut¹ qu'on ignore les événemens de la vie de La Bruyère ; mais on converse avec lui dès qu'on ouvre son livre.

Aucun écrivain, peut-être, n'a laissé plus la trace de son caractère dans son langage ; ne cherchant point à donner une marche suivie à son livre, il a pu ne se pas assujettir aux règles de composition qui auraient modifié ses impressions. En n'enchaînant point ses pensées, en les montrant isolées, il leur a laissé leur caractère primitif : la sensation qu'il a reçue, il la trace telle qu'il en a été frappé ; on assiste à l'effet que produisaient sur lui les objets ; ses expressions sont vivantes ; il semble qu'elles frappent les yeux plutôt que l'esprit. Cette variété de couleurs, cette manière d'offrir toujours l'image au lieu de la description, et l'impression au lieu du jugement ; ces pensées qui vont jusqu'au vif, qui atteignent juste le point caractéristique et qui prennent pied dans l'esprit du lecteur, voilà ce qui fait vivre en société avec La Bruyère et le fait "connaître jusque dans l'âme." (Id.)

M a h o m e t .

Aux extrémités de l'Asie, et sur les confins de l'Afrique, existait une peuple qui, par sa position et son courage, avait échappé aux conquêtes des Perses, d'Alexandre, et des Romains. De ses nombreuses tribus, les unes devaient leur subsistance à l'agriculture, les autres avaient conservé la vie pastorale : toutes se livraient au commerce, et quelques unes au brigandage. Réunie par une même origine, par une même langage, par quelques habitudes religieuses, elles formaient une grande nation, dont cependant aucun lien politique n'unissait les portions diverses. Tout-à-coup s'éleva au milieu d'elles un homme doué d'un ardent enthousiasme et d'une politique profonde, né

¹ *il se peut, it may be.*

avec les talens d'un poëte et ceux d'un guerrier. Il conçoit le hardi projet de réunir en un seul corps les tribus Arabes, et il a le courage de l'exécuter. Pour donner un chef à une nation jusqu'alors indomptée, il commence par élever sur les débris de l'ancien culte une religion plus épurée. Législateur, prophète, pontife, juge, général d'armée, tous les moyens de subjuguier les hommes sont entre ses mains, et il sait les employer avec habilité et avec grandeur.

Il débite un ramas de fables, qu'il dit avoir reçues du ciel ; mais il gagne des batailles. La prière et les plaisirs de l'amour partagent ses momens. Après avoir joui¹ vingt ans d'un pouvoir sans bornes, dont il n'existe point d'autre exemple, il déclare que, s'il a commis une injustice, il est prêt à la réparer. Tout se tait : une seule femme ose réclamer une petite somme de monnaie. Il meurt ; et l'enthousiasme qu'il a communiqué à son peuple va changer la face des trois parties du monde.

(CONDORCET.)

Les Grecs et les Italiens.

L'Italie, où la littérature Grecque venait d'être² transportée par les soins de Boccace et de la république Florentine, était le pays de l'Europe le plus propre à faire revivre l'ancienne Grèce. La nature elle-même s'est plu à doter ces deux magnifiques contrées de dons à-peu-près semblables. Elle a multiplié, dans l'une et dans l'autre, les sites pittoresques ; elle y a entassé des rochers majestueux, creusé des vallons rians, et ménagé des cascades rafraîchissantes ; elle a orné, comme pour un jour de fête, leurs campagnes de la plus riche végétation ; et tandis qu'elle a enrichi à l'envie l'Italie et la Grèce par les prodiges de sa puissance, elle a aussi donné aux hommes qui les habitent des qualités semblables, si du moins l'on peut reconnaître le caractère primitif d'un peuple, lorsqu'il a déjà été altéré par les gouvernemens divers. Les qualités communes aux peuples de l'Italie et de la Grèce, les qualités permanentes, dont le germe s'est maintenu sous tous les gouvernemens, et se retrouve encore, sont une imagination vive et brillante, une sensibilité rapidement excitée et rapidement étouffée : enfin, le goût inné de tous les arts, avec des organes propres à apprécier ce qui est beau dans tous les genres et à le reproduire. Dans les fêtes du peuple des campagnes, on démèlerait aujourd'hui des hommes en tout semblables à ceux dont les applaudissemens

¹ App. P. II. — ² *venait d'être*, had just been.

animèrent le génie de Phidias, de Michel-Ange, ou de Raphaël. Ils ornent leurs chapeaux de fleurs odoriférantes ; leur manteau est drapé d'une manière pittoresque, comme celui des statues antiques ; leur langage est figuré et plein de feu ; leurs traits expriment toutes les passions, et en effet ils sont susceptibles de l'amour le plus impétueux, de la colère la plus bouillante. Aucune fête ne leur paraît complète si les facultés morales de l'homme n'y ont eu quelque part, si l'église où ils réunissent n'est ornée avec goût et d'une manière pittoresque, si une musique harmonieuse n'élève leur âme vers les cieux. Leurs divertissemens portent le même caractère : lorsque, sur leur salaire, ils ont dérobé à leurs besoins une pénible épargne, ils ne la consacrent point à se procurer des boissons énivrantes ou des plaisirs crapuleux ; mais ils la portent, comme un tribut, aux théâtres, aux poètes improvisateurs, aux conteurs d'histoires qui éveillent leur imagination, et qui nourrissent leur esprit. L'Italie est aujourd'hui le seul pays où le bouvier et le vigneron, le laboureur et le berger, remplissent avec leurs femmes et leurs enfans les salles de spectacle ; c'est le seul où ils puissent comprendre des tragédies qui leur représentent les héros des temps passés, et des fables poétiques dont le souvenir ne leur est point absolument étranger. (SISMONDI.)

Les peuples de la Bétique.

Ils ont horreur de notre politesse ; et il faut avouer que la leur est grande dans leur aimable simplicité. Ils vivent tous ensemble sans partager les terres ; chaque famille est gouvernée par son chef, qui en est le véritable roi. Le père de famille est en droit de punir chacun de ses enfans, ou petits-enfans qui fait une mauvaise action : mais avant que de le punir il prend l'avis du reste de la famille. Ces punitions n'arrivent presque jamais ; car l'innocence des mœurs, la bonne foi, l'obéissance, et l'horreur du vice habitent dans cette heureuse terre. Il semble qu'Astrée, qu'on dit retirée dans le ciel, est encore ici-bas cachée parmi ces hommes. Il ne faut point de juges parmi eux ; car leur propre conscience les juge. Tous les biens sont communs ; les fruits des arbres, les légumes de la terre, le lait des troupeaux, sont des richesses si abondantes, que des peuples si sobres et si modérés n'ont pas besoin de les partager. Chaque famille, errante dans ce beau pays, trans-

porte ses tentes d'un lieu en un autre, quand elle a consumé les fruits et épuisé les pâturages de l'endroit où elle s'était mise. Ainsi ils n'ont point d'intérêts à soutenir les uns contre les autres, et ils s'aiment tous d'un amour fraternel que rien ne trouble. C'est le retranchement des vaines richesses et des plaisirs trompeurs qui leur conserve cette paix, cette union, et cette liberté. Ils sont tous libres, tous égaux.

On ne voit parmi eux aucune distinction, que celle qui vient de l'expérience des sages vieillards, ou de la sagesse extraordinaire de quelques jeunes hommes qui égalent les vieillards consommés en vertu. La fraude, la violence, la parjure, les procès, les guerres, ne font jamais entendre leur voix cruelle et empestée dans ce pays chéri des dieux. Jamais le sang humain n'a rougi cette terre ; à peine y voit-on couler celui des agneaux. Quand on parle à ces peuples des batailles sanglantes, des rapides conquêtes, des renversemens d'états qu'on voit dans les autres nations, ils ne peuvent¹ assez s'étonner. Quoi ! disent-ils, les hommes² ne sont-ils pas assez mortels, sans se donner encore les uns aux autres une mort précipitée ? la vie est si courte ! et il semble qu'elle leur paraisse trop longue ! sont-ils sur la terre pour se déchirer les uns les autres, et pour se rendre mutuellement malheureux ?

(FÉNÉLON.)

Un Combat de Taureaux.

Au milieu du champ est un vaste cirque environné de nombreux gradins ; c'est là que l'auguste reine, habile dans cet art si doux, de gagner les cœurs de son peuple en s'occupant de ses plaisirs, invite souvent ses guerriers au spectacle le plus chéri des Espagnols. Là, les jeunes chefs, sans cuirasse, vêtus d'un simple habit de soie, armés seulement d'une lance, viennent, sur de rapides coursiers, attaquer et vaincre des taureaux sauvages. Des soldats à pied, plus légers encore, les cheveux enveloppés dans des réseaux, tiennent d'une main un voile de pourpre, de l'autre des lances aiguës. L'alcade proclame la loi de ne secourir aucun combattant ; de ne leur laisser d'autres armes que la lance pour immoler, le voile de pourpre pour se défendre. Les rois, entourés de leur cour, président à ces jeux sanglans ; et l'armée entière, occupant les immenses amphithéâtres, témoigne par des cris de joie, par des

¹ App. O. II. § XIII. — ² § 287, note.

transports de plaisir et d'ivresse, quel est son amour effréné pour ces antiques combats.

Le signal se donne, la barrière s'ouvre, le taureau s'élance au milieu du cirque ; mais, au bruit de mille fanfares, aux cris, à la vue des spectateurs, il s'arrête, inquiet et troublé ; ses naseaux fument ; ses regards brûlans errent sur les amphithéâtres ; il semble également en proie à la surprise, à la fureur. Tout-à-coup il se précipite sur un cavalier qui le blesse, et fuit rapidement à l'autre bout. Le taureau s'irrite, le poursuit de près, frappe à coups redoublés la terre, et fond sur le voile éclatant que lui présente un combattant à pied. L'adroit Espagnol, dans le même instant, évite à la fois sa rencontre, suspend à ses cornes le voile léger, et lui darde une flèche aiguë, qui de nouveau fait couler son sang. Percé bientôt de toutes les lances, blessé de ces traits pénétrants dont le fer courbé reste dans la plaie, l'animal bondit dans l'arène, pousse d'horribles mugissemens, s'agite en parcourant le cirque, secoue les flèches nombreuses enfoncées dans son large cou, fait voler ensemble les cailloux broyés, les lambeaux de pourpre sanglans, les flots d'écume rougie, et tombe enfin épuisé d'efforts, de colère, et de douleur.

Ce fut dans un de ces combats que le téméraire Cortez pensa terminer une vie destinée à de si grands exploits. Brûlant de se signaler aux yeux de la belle Mendoze, qui depuis longtemps possède son cœur, Cortez, sur un Andaloux, blessait et fuyait un taureau furieux. Malgré le péril dont il est menacé, le jeune amant regarde toujours la beauté qui toujours l'occupe, lorsqu'il voit tomber dans l'arène la fleur d'oranger qui paraît son sein. Cortez se précipite à terre, court, se baisse, et le taureau vole ; il va frapper l'imprudent Cortez. Un cri de Mendoze l'avertit. Cortez, sans quitter la fleur, dirige d'un œil sûr sa lance à l'épaule de l'animal, qu'il jette expirant sur le sable.

(FLORIAN.)

De la Nature.

La nature est le système des lois établies par le Créateur pour l'existence des choses et pour la succession des êtres. La nature n'est point¹ une chose, car cette chose serait tout : la nature n'est point un être, car cet être serait Dieu ; mais on peut la considérer comme une puissance vive, immense, qui

¹ App. O. II. § V.

embrasse tout, qui anime tout, et qui, subordonnée à celle du Premier Être, n'a commencé d'agir que par son ordre, et n'agit encore que par son concours ou son consentement. Cette puissance est de la puissance divine la partie qui se manifeste ; c'est en même temps la cause et l'effet, le mode et la substance, le dessein et l'ouvrage : bien différente de l'art humain dont les productions ne sont que des ouvrages morts, la nature est elle-même une ouvrage perpétuellement vivant, un ouvrier sans cesse actif, qui sait tout employer, qui, travaillant d'après soi-même, toujours sur le même fonds, bien loin de l'épuiser, le rend inépuisable : le temps, l'espace, et la matière sont ses moyens, l'univers son objet, le mouvement et la vie son but.

Les effets de cette puissance sont les phénomènes du monde ; les ressorts qu'elle emploie sont des forces vives, que l'espace et le temps ne peuvent que mesurer et limiter sans jamais les détruire ; des forces qui se balancent, qui se confondent, qui s'opposent sans pouvoir s'anéantir ; les unes pénètrent et transportent les corps, les autres les échauffent et les animent ; l'attraction et l'impulsion sont les deux principaux instrumens de l'action de cette puissance sur les corps bruts ; la chaleur et les molécules organiques vivantes sont les principes actifs qu'elle met en œuvre pour la formation et le développement des êtres organisés.

Avec de tels moyens que ne peut la nature ? Elle pourrait tout si elle pouvait anéantir et créer ; mais Dieu s'est réservé ces deux extrêmes de pouvoir : anéantir et créer sont les attributs de la Toute-puissance ; altérer, changer, détruire, développer, renouveler, produire, sont les seuls droits qu'il a voulu céder. Ministre de ses ordres irrévocables, dépositaire de ces immuables décrets, la nature ne s'écartera jamais des lois qui lui ont été prescrites ; elle n'altère rien aux plans qui lui ont été tracés, et dans tous ses ouvrages elle présente le sceau de l'Eternel : cette empreinte divine, prototype inaltérable des existences, est le modèle sur lequel elle opère ; modèle dont tous les traits sont exprimés en caractères ineffaçables, et prononcés pour jamais ; modèle toujours neuf, que le nombre des moules ou des copies, quelque infini qu'il soit, ne fait que renouveler. (BUFFON.)

De la Piété et de l'Hypocrisie.

TENDRE Piété ! vertu sublime ! vous méritez tous nos respects, vous élevez l'homme au-dessus de son être, vous l'ap-

prochez du Créateur, vous en faites sur la terre un habitant des cieux. Divine Modestie ! vous méritez tout notre amour ; vous faites seule la gloire du sage, vous faites aussi la décence du saint état des ministres de l'autel ; vous n'êtes point un sentiment acquis par le commerce des hommes, vous êtes un don du ciel, une grâce qu'il accorde en secret à quelques âmes privilégiées pour rendre la vertu plus aimable. Vous rendriez même, s'il était possible, le vice moins choquant ; mais jamais vous n'avez habité dans un cœur corrompu ; la honte y a pris votre place ; elle prend aussi vos traits lorsqu'elle veut sortir de ces replis obscurs où le crime l'a fait naître ; elle couvre de votre voile sa confusion, sa bassesse ; sous ce lâche déguisement elle ose donc paraître ; mais elle soutient mal la lumière du jour, elle a l'œil trouble et le regard louche, elle marche à pas obliques dans des routes souterraines où le soupçon la suit ; et lorsqu'elle croit échapper à tous les yeux, un rayon de la vérité luit ; il perce le nuage ; l'illusion se dissipe, le prestige s'évanouit, le scandale seul reste, et l'on voit à nu toutes les difformités du vice grimaçant la vertu.

Mais détournons les yeux, n'achevons pas le portrait hideux de la noire hypocrisie ; ne disons pas que, quand elle a perdu le masque de la honte, elle arbore le panache de l'orgueil, et qu'alors elle s'appelle impudence. Ces monstres odieux sont indignes de faire ici contraste dans le tableau des vertus ; ils souilleraient nos pinceaux ; que la modestie, la piété, la modération, la sagesse, soient mes seuls objets et mes seuls modèles.

(Id.)

L' Art d' Ecrire.

Celui qui peint la pensée a dû penser long-temps pour l'exprimer dans toute son énergie. Or, la parole est une peinture, et le style n'est que la parole écrite. Quel est le secret du style ? c'est de reproduire au-dehors, avec un art fidèle, tout ce qu'on a conçu dans le secret de la méditation au-dedans de soi-même. L'écrivain porte en son esprit un modèle intérieur dont il veut représenter l'image. Des expressions diverses tour-à-tour se présentent ; une analyse rapide en décompose les nuances fortes ou délicates, élevées ou profondes. Que de vues perçantes et variées pour comparer et pour choisir ! Ces expressions elles-mêmes amènent d'autres idées ; car elles en sont à la fois l'effet et la cause. Si la conception est pauvre et

languissante, le style qui en est l'image aura nécessairement le même caractère. Alors une voix secrète semble dire à l'écrivain : Médite davantage, pénètre plus avant dans ta pensée ; c'est de sa substance même, pour ainsi dire, qu'il faut tirer sa forme et sa ressemblance. L'expression et la pensée ont donc une commune origine, qui se décèle dans la conformité de leurs traits : des rapports intimes et mystérieux les attachent l'une à l'autre, comme l'âme au corps et le principe à ses conséquences.

J'en atteste non seulement les poètes et les orateurs, mais ces hommes qui sont l'honneur des sciences, et qui dans un langage digne d'elles nous racontent les révolutions de la terre et du ciel, et ceux qui embellissent d'une sage élégance les recherches de l'érudition ou les théories des beaux-arts ; je les atteste tous sans crainte : ils vous diront mieux que moi combien ce travail est utile et fécond ; ils vous diront qu'en perfectionnant le goût on perfectionne aussi l'intelligence. Oui, le choix d'un seul mot qui doit donner plus de force ou de grâce au discours occupe souvent l'esprit tout entier, et l'esprit en augmente de souplesse et d'énergie. Quoi ! s'écriera l'ignorance, un mot vaut-il tant d'efforts ! Mais ce mot nécessaire avait fui long-temps ; mais quand il est saisi dans un moment favorable, il achève, il développe, il éclaire, il embellit la pensée. C'est par lui qu'elle est vivante. Que dis-je ? il la perpétue pour jamais, il va la rendre universelle. Otez ce mot, changez-le seulement de place, et ce que vous admirez n'existe plus.

(FONTANES.)

De la Grâce.

Dans les personnes, dans les ouvrages, grâce signifie, non seulement ce qui plaît, mais ce qui plaît avec attrait. C'est pourquoi les anciens avaient imaginé que la déesse de la beauté ne devait jamais paraître sans les Grâces. La beauté ne déplaît jamais, mais elle peut être dépourvue de ce charme secret qui invite à la regarder, qui remplit l'âme d'un sentiment doux. Les grâces dans la figure, dans le maintien, dans l'action, dans les discours, dépendent de ce mérite qui attire. Une belle personne n'aura point de grâces dans le visage, si la bouche est fermée sans sourire, si les yeux sont sans douceur. Le sérieux n'est jamais gracieux : il n'attire point ; il approche trop du sévère, qui rebute.

Un homme bien fait, dont le maintien est mal assuré ou gêné, la démarche précipitée ou pesante, les gestes lourds, n'a point de grâce, parcequ'il n'a rien de doux, de liant, dans son extérieur. La voix d'un orateur qui manquera d'inflexion et de douceur sera sans grâce. Il en est de même dans tous les arts. La proportion, la beauté, peuvent n'être point gracieuses. On ne peut dire que les pyramides d'Egypte aient des grâces. On ne pourrait le dire du colosse de Rhodes comme de la Vénus de Gnide. Tout ce qui est uniquement dans le genre fort et vigoureux a un mérite qui n'est pas celui des grâces. Ce serait mal connaître Michel Ange et le Caravage, que de leur attribuer les grâces de l'Albane. Le sixième livre de l'Enéide est sublime : le quatrième a plus de grâces. Quelques odes galantes d'Horace respirent les grâces, comme quelques unes de ses épîtres enseignent la raison.

Il semble qu'en général le petit, le joli en tout genre, soit plus susceptible de grâces que le grand. On louerait mal une oraison funèbre, une tragédie, un sermon, si on ne leur donnait que l'épithète gracieux.

Ce n'est pas qu'il y ait un seul genre d'ouvrage qui puisse être bon en étant opposé aux grâces ; car leur opposé est la rudesse, le sauvage, la sécheresse. L'Hercule Farnèse ne devait point avoir les grâces du Belvédère et de l'Antinoüs ; mais il n'est ni rude ni agreste. L'incendie de Troie, dans Virgile, n'est point décrit avec les grâces d'une élégie de Tibulle ; il plaît par des beautés fortes. Un ouvrage peut donc être sans grâces, sans que cet ouvrage ait le moindre désagrément. Le terrible, l'horrible, la description, la peinture d'un monstre, exigent qu'on s'éloigne de tout ce qui est gracieux, mais non pas qu'on affecte uniquement l'opposé. Car si un artiste, en quelque genre que ce soit, n'exprime que des choses affreuses, s'il ne les adoucit point par des contrastes agréables, il rebutera. La grâce, en peinture, en sculpture, consiste dans la mollesse des contours, dans une expression douce ; et la peinture a par-dessus la sculpture la grâce de l'union des parties, celle des figures qui s'animent l'une par l'autre, et qui se prêtent des agrémens par leurs attributs et par leurs regards. Les grâces de la diction, soit en éloquence, soit en poésie, dépendent du choix des mots, de l'harmonie des phrases, et encore plus de la délicatesse des idées et des descriptions riantes. L'abus des grâces est l'afféterie, comme l'abus du sublime est l'ampoulé. Toute perfection est près d'un défaut.

(VOLTAIRE.)

L'Éloquence.

L'éloquence, qui domine quelquefois si puissamment les états, est soumise à l'influence des gouvernemens ; et l'on pourrait, en suivant ses vicissitudes, retrouver toute l'histoire morale et politique des peuples. Sous le despotisme, il n'y a pas de place pour l'éloquence, non plus que pour la gloire. Les révolutions deviennent son théâtre et son écueil : elle y brille pour mourir frappée par le glaive ; et les têtes des orateurs sont attachées à la tribune sanglante. Elle s'affaiblit et s'énervé dans la paix des monarchies heureuses, qui redoutent l'agitation, de peur du changement. Les républiques mêmes, que l'on croit le domaine de l'éloquence, ne sont pas toujours faites pour elle. L'éloquence ne s'élèvera pas dans ces démocraties économes et modestes, où la liberté n'est pas un effort d'héroïsme, une conquête de l'enthousiasme, mais un avantage du sol, et, pour ainsi dire, un présent de la pauvreté : la Suisse n'a jamais eu d'orateurs. L'éloquence ne s'élèvera pas dans ces républiques factieuses où les citoyens aiment encore plus la vengeance que la liberté, où la force décide incessamment, et signale ses victoires successives par l'exil et la mort : Florence n'a jamais eu d'orateurs. L'éloquence ne montrera pas son génie dans ces républiques industrielles et commerçantes, où la liberté même n'est estimée que comme un instrument de richesses, où le patriotisme n'est qu'un calcul d'intérêt, où les plus grands sacrifices sont des spéculations plutôt que des vertus : on n'a jamais vanté les orateurs de Carthage ; on ne connaît pas les orateurs de la Hollande . . . L'éloquence n'osera pas naître dans ces aristocraties ombrageuses où l'activité du despotisme est rendue plus terrible par le nombre de ceux qui l'exercent, où des républicains tyranniques redoutent d'autant plus la liberté qu'ils lui doivent leur puissance et règnent en son nom : à Venise on ne parlait pas.

L'éloquence a tout à la fois besoin de la violence des passions et de l'autorité toute-puissante des lois. Mais cet état est une espèce de prodige difficile et peu durable. Ainsi, dans Athènes, dans Rome, l'éloquence n'eut que de courts intervalles de gloire, au moment même où la liberté allait périr par la guerre civile et par la conquête. Etrange fatalité des institutions et du génie de l'homme ! Quand l'éloquence s'élève au milieu des institutions faites pour elle, trop souvent elle assiste à leur ruine, et meurt sur leurs débris : elle meurt avec Démosthène, Antoine, et Cicéron. Quand l'éloquence élève une

tête hardie, au milieu des institutions qui la repoussent, elle est plus forte pour détruire qu'elle ne l'avait été pour sauver, mais elle meurt encore sur les ruines qu'elle a faites. Ainsi Rienzi, qui dans la Rome pontificale prétendait trouver la Rome des Scipions; Rienzi, dont l'antiquité eût fait un grand homme, mais qui, laissé seul à lui-même entre les débris du Colisée et les inscriptions effacées des tombeaux entr'ouverts, redemandait la tribune des Gracches, et permettait de créer des Romains; Rienzi, avec son audace et son génie, ne semblait qu'un séditieux, et mourait oublié.

(VILLEMAIN.)

La Religion des Romains.

Ce ne fut ni la crainte ni la piété qui établit la religion chez les Romains, mais la nécessité où sont toutes les sociétés d'en avoir une. Les premiers rois ne furent pas moins attentifs à régler le culte et les cérémonies, qu'à donner des lois et bâtir des murailles.

Je trouve cette différence entre les législateurs Romains et ceux des autres peuples—que les premiers firent la religion pour l'état, et les autres l'état pour la religion. Romulus, Tatius, et Numa asservirent les dieux à la politique : le culte et les cérémonies qu'ils instituèrent furent trouvés si sages, que, lorsque les rois furent chassés, le joug de la religion fut le seul dont ce peuple, dans sa fureur pour la liberté, n'osa s'affranchir.

Quand les législateurs Romains établirent la religion, ils ne pensèrent point à la réformation des mœurs, ni à donner des principes de morale ; ils ne voulurent point gêner des gens qu'ils ne connaissent pas encore. Ils n'eurent donc d'abord qu'une vue générale, qui était d'inspirer, à un peuple qui ne craignait rien, la crainte des dieux, et de se servir de cette crainte pour le conduire à leur fantaisie.

Les successeurs de Numa n'osèrent point faire ce que ce prince n'avait point fait : le peuple, qui avait beaucoup perdu de sa férocité et de sa rudesse, était devenu capable d'une plus grande discipline. Il eût été facile d'ajouter aux cérémonies de la religion des principes et des règles de morale dont elle manquait ; mais les législateurs des Romains étaient trop clairvoyants pour ne point connaître combien une pareille réformation eût été dangereuse. C'eût été convenir que la religion était défectueuse ; c'était lui donner des âges, et affaiblir son autorité en voulant l'établir. La sagesse des Romains leur fit pren-

dre un meilleur parti en établissant de nouvelles lois. Les institutions humaines peuvent bien changer, mais les divines doivent être immuables comme les dieux.

(MONTESQUIEU.)

V a n i t é .

J'étais l'autre jour dans une société où je me divertis assez bien. Il y avait¹ là des femmes de tous les âges ; une de quatre-vingts ans,² une de soixante, une de quarante qui avait une niece de vingt à vingt-deux. Un certain instinct me fit approcher de cette dernière, et elle me dit à l'oreille : " Que dites vous de ma tante, qui, à son âge, veut avoir des amans, et fait encore la jolie ? " " Elle a tort,³ lui dis-je ; c'est un dessein qui ne convient qu'à vous. " Un moment après, je me trouvai auprès de sa tante, qui me dit : " Que dites-vous de cette femme qui a pour le moins soixante ans, qui a passé aujourd'hui plus d'une heure à sa toilette ? " " C'est du temps perdu, lui dis-je ; et il faut avoir vos charmes pour devoir y songer. " J'allai à cette malheureuse femme de soixante ans, et la plaignais dans mon ame, lorsqu'elle me dit à l'oreille : " Y a-t-il rien de si ridicule ? Voyez cette femme qui a quatre-vingts ans, et qui met des rubans couleur-de-feu : elle veut faire la jeune, et elle y réussit ; car cela approche de l'enfance. " Ah, bon Dieu ! dis-je en moi-même, ne sentirons-nous jamais que le ridicule des autres ? C'est peut-être un bonheur, disais-je ensuite, que nous trouvions de la consolation dans les faiblesses d'autrui. Cependant j'étais en train de me divertir, et je dis : Nous avons assez monté ; descendons à présent, et commençons par la vieille qui est au sommet. " Madame, vous vous ressemblez si fort, cette dame à qui je viens de parler et vous, qu'il semble que vous soyez deux sœurs ; je vous crois, à-peu-près, de même âge. " " Vraiment, Monsieur, me dit-elle, lorsque l'une mourra, l'autre devra avoir grand'peur :⁴ je ne crois pas qu'il y ait d'elle à moi deux jours de différence. " Quand je tins cette femme décrépite, j'allai à celle de soixante ans. " Il faut, madame, que vous décidiez un pari que j'ai fait : j'ai gagé que cette dame et vous, lui montrant la femme de quarante ans, étiez de même âge. " " Ma foi, dit-elle, je ne crois pas qu'il y ait six mois de différence. " Bon, m'y voilà ;⁵ continuons. Je descendis encore, et j'allai à la femme de quarante ans. " Madame, faites-moi la grace de me dire si

¹ *il y avait*, there were. — ² App. J. § 111. — ³ *a tort*, is wrong. — ⁴ § 202. — ⁵ *m'y voilà*, so far so good.

c'est pour rire que vous appelez¹ cette demoiselle, qui est à l'autre table, votre niece ? Vous êtes aussi jeune qu'elle ; elle a même quelque chose dans le visage de passé, que vous n'avez certainement pas ; et ces couleurs vives qui paraissent sur votre teint." . . "Attendez, me dit-elle : je suis sa tante ; mais sa mère avait pour le moins vingt-cinq ans plus que moi : nous n'étions pas de même lit ; j'ai ouï dire à feu ma sœur que sa fille et moi naquîmes la même année." "Je le disais bien, madame ; et je n'avais pas tort d'être étonné."

Mon cher Usbek, les femmes qui se sentent finir d'avance, par la perte de leurs agrémens, voudraient reculer vers la jeunesse. Eh ! comment ne chercheraient-elles pas à tromper les autres ? elles font tous leurs efforts pour se tromper elles-mêmes, et se dérober à la plus affligeante de toutes les idées.

(Id.—*Lettres Persanes*.)

Extrême Variété de la Nature.

La première chose qui s'offre à l'homme quand il se regarde, c'est son corps, c'est-à-dire une certaine portion de matière qui lui est propre. Mais, pour comprendre ce qu'elle est, il faut qu'il la compare avec tout ce qui est au-dessus de lui, et tout ce qui est au-dessous, afin de reconnaître ses justes bornes.

Qu'il ne s'arrête donc pas à regarder simplement les objets qui l'environnent ; qu'il contemple la nature entière dans sa haute et pleine majesté ; qu'il considère cette éclatante lumière, mise comme une lampe éternelle pour éclairer l'univers ; que la terre lui paraisse comme un point, au prix du vaste tour que cet astre décrit, et qu'il s'étonne de ce que ce vaste tour lui-même n'est qu'un point très délicat, à l'égard de celui que les astres qui roulent dans le firmament embrassent. Mais si notre vue s'arrête là, que l'imagination passe outre, elle se lassera plutôt de concevoir, que la nature de fournoir. Tout ce que nous voyons du monde n'est qu'un trait imperceptible dans l'ample sein de la nature : nulle idée n'approche de l'étendue de ses espaces. Nous avons beau² enfler nos conceptions, nous n'enfantons que des atomes au prix de la réalité des choses. C'est une sphère infinie, dont le centre est partout, la circonférence nulle part. Enfin, c'est un des plus grands caractères sensibles de la toute-puissance de Dieu, que notre imagination se perde dans cette pensée.

¹ § 543. — ² nous avons beau, it is of no use for us.

Mais pour présenter à l'homme un autre prodige aussi étonnant, qu'il recherche dans ce qu'il connaît les choses les plus délicates ; qu'un ciron par exemple, lui offre dans la petitesse de son corps des parties incomparablement plus petites, des jambes avec des jointures, des veines, des humeurs dans ce sang, des vapeurs dans ces gouttes ; que, divisant encore ces dernières choses, il épuise ses forces et ses conceptions, et que le dernier objet où il peut arriver soit maintenant celui de notre discours ; il pensera peut-être que c'est là l'extrême petitesse de la nature. Je veux lui peindre non seulement l'univers visible, mais encore tout ce qu'il est capable de concevoir de l'immensité de la nature dans l'enceinte de cet atome imperceptible... Qu'il se perde dans ces merveilles, aussi étonnantes par leur petitesse que les autres par leur étendue. Car qui n'admira que notre corps, qui tantôt n'était pas perceptible dans l'univers imperceptible lui-même dans le sein du tout, soit maintenant un colosse, un monde, ou plutôt un tout à l'égard de la dernière petitesse où l'on ne peut arriver ? (PASCAL.)

La Paresse.

La paresse est de toutes nos passions celle qui nous est le¹ plus inconnue à nous-mêmes. Nulle autre n'est plus ardente et plus maligne, quoique les dommages qu'elle cause soient très cachés. Si nous considérons attentivement son influence, nous verrons qu'en toute occasion elle se rend maîtresse de nos sentimens, de nos intérêts, et de nos plaisirs : c'est le rémora qui arrête les plus grands vaisseaux, c'est une bonace plus dangereuse aux plus importantes affaires que les écueils et les tempêtes. Le repos de la paresse est un charme secret de l'ame, qui suspend nos plus ardentes poursuites et nos plus fermes résolutions. (ROCHEFOUCAULT.)

Mépris de la Mort.

Après avoir parlé de la fausseté de tant de vertus apparentes, il est raisonnable de dire quelque chose de la fausseté du mé-

¹ § 244.

pris de la mort : j'entends parler de ce mépris de la mort que les payens se vantent de tirer de leurs propres forces sans l'espérance d'une meilleure vie. Il y a de la différence entre souffrir la mort constamment, et la mépriser. Le premier est assez ordinaire ; mais je crois que l'autre n'est jamais sincère. On a écrit néanmoins tout ce qui peut le plus persuader que la mort n'est point un mal ; et les hommes les plus faibles aussi bien que les héros, ont donné mille exemples célèbres pour établir cette opinion. Cependant je doute que personne de bon sens l'ait jamais cru ; et la peine que l'on prend pour le persuader aux autres et à soi-même fait assez voir que cette entreprise n'est pas aisée. On peut avoir divers sujets de dégoûts dans la vie ; mais on n'a jamais raison de mépriser la mort. Ceux même qui se la donnent volontairement ne la comptent pas pour si peu de chose, et ils s'en étonnent et la rejettent comme les autres lorsqu'elle vient à eux par une autre voie que celle qu'ils ont choisie. L'inégalité que l'on remarque dans le courage d'un nombre infini de vaillans hommes vient de ce que la mort se découvre différemment à leur imagination, et y paraît plus présente en un temps qu'en un autre. Ainsi il arrive qu'après avoir méprisé ce qu'ils ne connaissaient pas, ils craignent enfin ce qu'ils connaissent. Il faut éviter de l'envisager avec toutes ses circonstances, si on ne veut pas croire qu'elle soit le plus grand de tous les maux. Les plus habiles et les plus braves sont ceux qui prennent de plus honnêtes prétextes pour s'empêcher de la considérer ; mais tout homme qui la sait voir telle qu'elle est, trouve que c'est une chose épouvantable. La nécessité de mourir faisait toute la constance des philosophes. Ils croyaient qu'il fallait aller de bonne grace où l'on ne saurait s'empêcher d'aller ; et ne pouvant éterniser leur vie, il n'y avait rien qu'ils ne fissent pour éterniser leur réputation, et sauver du naufrage ce qui en peut être garanti. Contentons-nous, pour faire bonne mine¹, de ne nous pas dire à nous-mêmes tout ce que nous en pensons, et espérons plus de notre tempérament que de ces faibles raisonnemens qui nous font croire que nous pouvons approcher de la mort avec indifférence. La gloire de mourir avec fermeté, l'espérance d'être regretté, le désir de laisser une belle réputation, l'assurance d'être affranchi des misères de la vie, et de ne dépendre plus des caprices de la fortune, sont des remèdes qu'on ne doit pas rejeter ; mais on ne doit pas croire aussi qu'ils soient infaillibles.

¹ *faire bonne mine*, to appear well.

Ils font, pour nous assurer, ce qu'une simple haie fait souvent à la guerre pour assurer ceux qui doivent approcher d'un lieu d'où l'on tire. Quand on en est éloigné, on s'imagine qu'elle peut mettre à couvert¹; mais quand on en est proche on trouve que c'est un faible secours. C'est nous flatter, de croire que la mort nous paraisse de près ce que nous en avons jugé de loin, et que nos sentimens, qui ne sont que faiblesse, soient d'une trempe assez forte pour ne point souffrir d'atteinte par la plus rude de toutes les épreuves. C'est aussi mal connaître les effets de l'amour-propre, que de penser qu'il puisse nous aider à compter pour rien ce qui le doit nécessairement détruire; et la raison, dans laquelle on croit trouver tant de ressources, est trop faible en cette rencontre pour nous persuader ce que nous voulons. C'est elle au contraire qui nous trahit le plus souvent, et qui, au lieu de nous inspirer le mépris de la mort, sert à nous découvrir ce qu'elle a d'affreux et de terrible. Tout ce qu'elle peut faire pour nous est de nous conseiller d'en détourner les yeux pour les arrêter sur d'autres objets. Caton et Brutus en choisirent d'illustres. Un laquais se contenta, il y a quelque temps, de danser sur l'échafaud où il allait être roué. Ainsi, bien que les motifs soient différens, ils produisent les mêmes effets; de sorte qu'il est vrai que, quelque disproportion qu'il y ait entre les grands hommes et les gens du commun,² on a vu mille fois les uns et les autres recevoir la mort d'un même visage; mais c'a³ toujours été avec cette différence, que, dans le mépris que les grands hommes font paraître pour la mort, c'est l'amour de la gloire qui leur en ôte la vue; et dans les gens du commun, ce n'est qu'un effet de leur peu de lumieres, qui les empêche de connaître la grandeur de leur mal et leur laisse la liberté de penser à autre chose. (Id.)

La Mort.

La mort, mon fils, est un bien pour tous les hommes; elle est la nuit de ce jour inquiet qu'on appelle la vie. C'est dans le sommeil de la mort que reposent pour jamais les maladies, les douleurs, les chagrins, les craintes, qui agitent sans cesse les malheureux vivans. Examinez les hommes qui paraissent les plus heureux: vous verrez qu'ils ont achété leur prétendu

¹ à couvert, under cover. — ² gens du commun, common people. — ³ c'a, it has.

bonheur bien chèrement ; la considération publique, par des maux domestiques ; la fortune, par la perte de la santé ; le plaisir si rare d'être aimé, par des sacrifices continuels : et souvent, à la fin d'une vie sacrifiée aux intérêts d'autrui, ils ne voient autour d'eux que des amis faux et des parens ingrats. Mais Virginie a été heureuse jusqu'au dernier moment. Elle l'a été avec nous par les biens de la nature ; loin de nous, par ceux de la vertu : et même, dans le moment terrible où nous l'avons vue périr, elle était encore heureuse ; car, soit qu'elle jetât les yeux sur une colonie entière, à qui elle causait une désolation universelle, ou sur vous, qui couriez avec tant d'intrépidité à son secours, elle a vu combien elle nous était chère à tous. Elle s'est fortifiée contre l'avenir par le souvenir de l'innocence de sa vie, et elle a reçu alors le prix que le ciel réserve à la vertu, un courage supérieur au danger. Elle a présenté à la mort un visage serein.

Mon fils, Dieu donne à la vertu tous les évènements de la vie à supporter, pour faire voir qu'elle seule peut en faire usage, et y trouver du bonheur et de la gloire. Quand il lui réserve une réputation illustre, il l'élève sur un grand théâtre, et la met aux prises¹ avec la mort ; alors son courage sert d'exemple, et le souvenir de ses malheurs reçoit à jamais un tribut de larmes de la postérité. Voilà le monument immortel qui lui est réservé sur une terre où tout passe, et où la mémoire même de la plupart des rois est bientôt ensevelie dans un éternel oubli.

Mais Virginie existe encore. Mon fils, voyez que tout change sur la terre, et que rien ne s'y perd. Aucun art humain ne pourrait anéantir la plus petite particule de matière ; et ce qui fut raisonnable, sensible, aimant, vertueux, religieux, aurait péri, lorsque les élémens dont il était revêtu sont indestructibles ? Ah ! si Virginie a été heureuse avec nous, elle l'est maintenant bien davantage. Il y a un Dieu, mon fils : toute la nature l'annonce ; je n'ai pas besoin de vous le prouver. Il n'y a que la méchanceté des hommes qui leur fasse nier une justice qu'ils craignent. Son sentiment est dans votre cœur, ainsi que ses ouvrages sont sous vos yeux. Croyez-vous donc qu'il laisse Virginie sans récompense ? Croyez-vous que cette même puissance, qui avait revêtu cette ame si noble d'une forme si belle, où vous sentiez un art divin, n'aurait pu la tirer des flots ? que celui qui a arrangé le bonheur actuel des hom-

¹ *aux prises*, in conflict.

mes par des lois que vous ne connaissez pas, ne puisse en préparer un autre à Virginie par des lois qui vous sont également inconnues ? Quand nous étions dans le néant, si nous eussions été capables de penser, aurions-nous pu nous former une idée de notre existence ? Et maintenant que nous sommes dans cette existence ténébreuse et fugitive, pouvons-nous prévoir ce qu'il y a au-delà de la mort, par où nous en devons sortir ? Dieu a-t-il besoin, comme l'homme, du petit globe de notre terre pour servir de théâtre à son intelligence et à sa bonté ? et n'a-t-il pu propager la vie humaine que dans les champs de la mort ? Il n'y a pas dans l'océan une seule goutte d'eau qui ne soit pleine d'êtres vivans qui ressortissent à nous ; et il n'existerait rien pour nous parmi tant d'astres qui roulent sur nos têtes ! Quoi ! il n'y aurait d'intelligence suprême et de bonté divine précisément que là où nous sommes ; et, dans ces globes rayonnans et innombrables, dans ces champs infinis de lumière qui les environnent, que ni les orages ni les nuits n'obscurcissent jamais, il n'y aurait qu'un espace vain et un néant éternel ! Si nous, qui ne nous sommes rien donné, osions assigner des bornes à la puissance de laquelle nous avons tout reçu, nous pourrions croire que nous sommes ici sur les limites de son empire, où la vie se débat avec la mort, et l'innocence avec la tyrannie.

(ST. PIERRE.)

Fragilité humaine.

Qu'est-ce que ma substance, ô grand Dieu ? J'entre dans la vie pour en sortir bientôt : je viens me montrer comme les autres ; après il faudra disparaître. Tout nous appelle à la mort. La nature, comme si elle était presque envieuse du bien qu'elle nous a fait, nous déclare souvent et nous fait signifier qu'elle ne peut pas nous laisser long-temps ce peu de matière qu'elle nous prête. . . . Les enfans qui naissent, à mesure qu'ils croissent et qu'ils s'avancent, semblent nous pousser de l'épaule ; et nous dire : Retirez-vous, c'est maintenant notre tour. Ainsi, comme nous en voyons passer d'autres devant nous, d'autres nous verront passer, qui doivent à leurs successeurs le même spectacle. O Dieu ! encore une fois, qu'est-ce que de nous ?¹ Si je jette la vue devant moi, quel espace infini où je ne suis

¹ *qu'est-ce que de nous ?* what are we ?

pas ! si je la retourne en arrière, quelle suite effroyable où je ne suis plus ! et que j'occupe peu de place dans cet abîme immense du temps ! Je ne suis rien ; un si petit intervalle n'est pas capable de me distinguer du néant. On ne m'a envoyé que pour faire nombre ; encore n'avait-on que faire de moi, et la pièce n'en aurait pas été moins jouée, quand je serais demeuré derrière le théâtre. . . . Il n'y a qu'un moment qui nous sépare du néant. Maintenant nous en tenons un ; maintenant il périt, et avec lui nous péririons tous, si, promptement et sans perdre de temps, nous n'en saisissons un autre semblable, jusqu'à ce qu'enfin il en viendra un auquel nous ne pourrions arriver, quelque effort que nous fassions pour nous y étendre ; et alors nous tomberons tout-à-coup manque de soutien. O fragile appui de notre être ! ô fondement ruineux de notre substance !

(BOSSUET.)

Rapidité de la vie.

Hélas ! que sont les hommes sur la terre ? . . . Une fatale révolution, une rapidité que rien n'arrête, entraîne tout dans les abîmes de l'éternité. Les siècles, les générations, les empires, tout va se perdre dans ce gouffre : tout y entre et rien n'en sort. Nos ancêtres nous en ont frayé le chemin, et nous allons le frayer dans un moment à ceux qui viennent après nous. Ainsi les âges se renouvellent : ainsi la figure du monde change sans cesse : ainsi les morts et les vivans se succèdent et se remplacent continuellement. Rien ne demeure, tout s'use, tout s'éteint. Dieu seul est toujours le même, et ses années ne finissent point. Le torrent des âges et des siècles coule devant ses yeux : et il voit de faibles mortels, dans le temps même qu'ils sont entraînés par le cours fatal, l'insulter en passant, profiter de ce seul moment pour déshonorer son nom, et tomber au sortir de là entre les mains éternelles de sa justice.

(MASSILLON.)

Immortalité de l'âme.

Si tout doit finir avec nous, si l'homme ne doit rien attendre après cette vie, et que ce soit ici notre patrie, notre origine, et la seule félicité que nous pouvons nous promettre, pourquoi n'y sommes-nous pas heureux ? Si nous ne naissons que pour

les plaisirs des sens, pourquoi ne peuvent-ils nous satisfaire, et laissent-ils toujours un fond d'ennui et de tristesse dans notre cœur ? Si l'homme n'est rien au-dessus de la bête, que ne coule-t-il ses jours comme elle, sans soucis, sans inquiétude, sans dégoûts, sans tristesse, dans la félicité des sens et de la chair ? Si l'homme n'a point d'autre bonheur à espérer qu'un bonheur temporel, pourquoi ne le trouve-t-il nulle part sur la terre ? D'où vient que les richesses l'inquiètent, que les honneurs le fatiguent, que les plaisirs le lassent, que les sciences le confondent et irritent sa curiosité, loin de la satisfaire ; que la réputation le gêne et l'embarrasse ; que tout cela ensemble ne peut remplir l'immensité de son cœur et lui laisse encore quelque chose à désirer ? Tous les autres êtres, contents de leur destination, paraissent heureux à leur manière, dans la situation où l'Auteur de la nature les a placés. Les astres, tranquilles dans le firmament, ne quittent pas leur séjour pour aller éclairer une autre terre ; la terre, réglée dans ses mouvemens, ne s'élance pas en haut pour aller reprendre leur place : les animaux rampent dans les campagnes sans envier la destinée de l'homme qui habite les villes et les palais somptueux ; les oiseaux se réjouissent dans les airs, sans penser s'il y a des créatures plus heureuses qu'eux sur la terre. Tout est heureux ; pour ainsi dire, tout est à sa place dans la nature : l'homme seul est inquiet et mécontent ; l'homme seul est en proie à ses désirs, se laisse déchirer par des craintes, trouve son supplice dans ses espérances, devient triste et malheureux au milieu de ses plaisirs ; l'homme seul ne rencontre rien ici-bas où son cœur puisse se fixer.

D'où vient cela ? O hommes ! ne serait-ce point parceque vous êtes ici-bas déplacés, que vous êtes faits pour le ciel ; que votre cœur est plus grand que le monde, que la terre n'est pas votre patrie, et que tout ce qui n'est pas Dieu n'est rien pour vous ?

(Id.)

L'Évangile.

La majesté des Écritures m'étonne ; la sainteté de l'Évangile parle à mon cœur. Voyez les livres des philosophes avec toute leur pompe, qu'ils sont petits près de celui-là ! Se peut-il¹ qu'un livre à la fois si sublime et si simple soit l'ouvrage des

¹ *Se peut il ? can it be ?*

hommes ? Se peut-il que celui dont il fait l'histoire ne soit qu'un homme lui-même ? Est-ce là le ton d'un enthousiaste ou d'un ambitieux sectaire ? Quelle douceur ! quelle pureté dans ses mœurs ! quelle grâce touchante dans ses instructions ! quelle élévation dans ses maximes ! quelle profonde sagesse dans ses discours ! quelle présence d'esprit, quelle finesse et quelle justesse dans ses réponses ! quel empire sur ses passions ! Où est l'homme, où est le sage, qui sait agir, souffrir, et mourir sans faiblesse et sans ostentation ? Quand Platon peint son juste imaginaire couvert de tout l'opprobre du crime, et digne de tous les prix de la vertu, il peint trait pour trait Jésus-Christ ; la ressemblance est si frappante, que tous les pères l'ont sentie, et qu'il n'est pas possible de s'y tromper. Quels préjugés, quel aveuglement ne faut-il point avoir pour oser comparer le fils de Sophronisque au fils de Marie ! Quelle distance de l'un à l'autre ! Socrate, mourant sans douleur, sans ignominie, soutint aisément jusqu'au bout son personnage, et si cette facile mort n'eût honoré sa vie, on douterait si Socrate, avec tout son esprit, fut autre chose qu'un sophiste. Il inventa, dit-on, la morale : d'autres avant lui l'avaient mise en pratique ; il ne fit que dire ce qu'ils avaient fait, il ne fit que mettre en leçons leurs exemples. Aristide avait été juste avant que Socrate eût dit ce que c'était que justice ;¹ Léonidas était mort pour son pays avant que Socrate eût fait un devoir d'aimer la patrie ; Sparte était sobre avant que Socrate eût loué la sobriété ; avant qu'il eût loué la vertu, la Grèce abondait en hommes vertueux. Mais où Jésus avait-il pris chez les siens² cette morale élevée et pure dont lui seul a donné les leçons et l'exemple ? Du sein du plus furieux fanatisme la plus haute sagesse se fit entendre, et la simplicité des plus héroïques vertus honora le plus vil de tous les peuples. La mort de Socrate, philosophant tranquillement avec ses amis, est la plus douce qu'on puisse désirer ; celle de Jésus, expirant dans les tourmens, injurié, raillé, maudit de tout un peuple, est la plus horrible qu'on puisse craindre. Socrate, prenant la coupe empoisonnée, bénit celui qui la lui présente et qui pleure ; Jésus, au milieu d'un affreux supplice, prie pour ses bourreaux acharnés. Oui, si la vie et la mort de Socrate sont d'un sage, la vie et la mort de Jésus sont d'un Dieu.

(J.-J. ROUSSEAU.)

¹ *ce que c'était que justice*, what justice was. — ² *les siens*, his countrymen.

the year 1700, and in 1701, the year of the
rebellion, the king of France, Louis XIV.
sent a fleet of 12 ships of the line, and
a number of frigates, to the West Indies,
to attack the English colonies. The
fleet was commanded by the Comte de
Bourville, and consisted of 12 ships of the
line, 4 frigates, and a number of smaller
vessels. The fleet sailed from France in
the month of June, and arrived in the
West Indies in the month of August.
The English fleet, commanded by the
Admiral Sir John Boscawen, consisted
of 12 ships of the line, and a number of
frigates. The two fleets met in the
month of September, and a battle was
fought. The English fleet was defeated,
and the French fleet returned to France
with a large number of prizes. The
English fleet was then sent to the
Caribbean Sea, to attack the French
colonies. The English fleet was defeated
again, and the French fleet returned to
France with a large number of prizes.
The English fleet was then sent to the
Mediterranean Sea, to attack the French
fleet. The English fleet was defeated
again, and the French fleet returned to
France with a large number of prizes.
The English fleet was then sent to the
Atlantic Ocean, to attack the French
fleet. The English fleet was defeated
again, and the French fleet returned to
France with a large number of prizes.
The English fleet was then sent to the
Mediterranean Sea, to attack the French
fleet. The English fleet was defeated
again, and the French fleet returned to
France with a large number of prizes.
The English fleet was then sent to the
Atlantic Ocean, to attack the French
fleet. The English fleet was defeated
again, and the French fleet returned to
France with a large number of prizes.

SELECTIONS
FROM
FRENCH LITERATURE.

PART II. POETRY.

La Tête et la Queue du Serpent.

Le Serpent a deux parties,
Du genre humain ennemies,
Tête et queue ; et toutes deux
Ont acquis un nom fameux
Auprès des Parques cruelles,
Si bien qu'autrefois, entr'elles,
Il survint¹ des grands débats
Pour le pas.
La tête avait toujours marché devant la queue.
La queue au Ciel se plaignit,
Et lui dit :
" Je fais mainte et mainte lieue,
Comme il plaît à celle-ci ;
Croit-elle que toujours j'en veuille user ainsi ?
Je suis son humble servante.
On m'a faite, Dieu merci,²
Sa sœur, et non sa suivante.
Toutes deux de même sang,
Traitez-nous de même sorte.
Aussi bien qu'elle je porte
Un poison prompt et puissant.
Enfin, voilà ma requête :
C'est à vous de commander
Qu'on me laisse précéder,
A mon tour, ma sœur la tête.

¹ *Il survint*, there arose. — ² *Dieu merci*, thanks to God.

Je la conduirai si bien
 Qu'on ne se plaindra de rien."
 Le Ciel eut pour ses vœux une bonté cruelle.
 Souvent sa complaisance a de méchans effets.
 Il devrait être sourd aux aveugles souhaits.
 Il ne le fut pas lors ; et la guide nouvelle,
 Qui ne voyait au grand jour
 Pas plus clair que dans un four,
 Donnait tantôt contre un marbre,
 Contre un passant, contre un arbre :
 Droit aux ombres du Styx elle mena sa sœur.
 Malheureux les 'Etats tombés dans son erreur.
 (LA FONTAINE.)

Le Chauve-souris et les deux Belettes.

Une Chauve-souris donna, tête baissée,¹
 Dans un nid de Belette, et sitôt qu'elle y fut,
 L'autre, envers les Souris de longtemps courroucée,
 Pour la dévorer accourut.
 "Quoi, vous osez," dit-elle, "à mes yeux vous produire.
 Après que votre race a tâché de me nuire ?
 N'êtes-vous pas Souris ? Parlez sans fiction.
 Oui, vous l'êtes, ou bien je ne suis pas Belette."
 "Pardonnez-moi," dit la pauvrete,
 "Ce n'est pas ma profession.
 Moi Souris ! Des méchans vous ont dit ces nouvelles :
 Grâce à l'Auteur de l'univers,
 Je suis Oiseau : voyez mes ailes :
 Vive la gent qui fend les airs."
 Sa raison plut et sembla bonne.
 Elle fait si bien qu'on lui donne
 Liberté de se retirer.
 Deux jours après, notre étourdie
 Aveuglément se va fourrer
 Ches une autre Belette aux Oiseaux ennemie.
 La voilà derechef en danger de sa vie.
 La Dame du logis, avec son long museau,
 S'en² allait la croquer en qualité d'Oiseau ;

¹ tête baissée, headlong. — ² s'en allait, was going. See App. M. *Aller*.

Quand elle protesta qu'on lui faisait outrage.
 "Moi pour telle passer ! Vous n'y regardez pas.
 Qui fait l'Oiseau ? C'est le plumage.
 Je suis Souris : vivent les Rats :
 Jupiter confonde les Chats !" *—*
 Par cette adroite repartie
 Elle sauva deux fois sa vie.

(Id.)

L'Yvrogne et sa Femme.

Chacun a son défaut, où toujours il revient :
 Honte ni peur n'y remédie.
 Sur ce propos d'un conte il me souvient.¹
 Je ne dis rien que je n'appuie
 De quelque exemple. Un suppôt de Bacchus
 Altérait sa santé, son esprit, et sa bourse.
 Telles gens n'ont pas fait la moitié de leur course,
 Qu'ils sont au bout de leurs écus.
 Un jour que celui-ci, plein du jus de la treille,
 Avait laissé ses sens au fond d'une bouteille,
 Sa femme l'enferma dans un certain tombeau.
 Là, les vapeurs du vin nouveau
 Cuvèrent à loisir. A son réveil il treuve²
 L'attirail de la mort alentour de son corps,
 Un luminaire, un drap des morts.
 "Oh !" dit-il, "qu'est ceci ? Ma femme est-elle veuve ?—
 Là-dessus, son épouse, en habit d'Alecton,
 Masquée, et de sa voix contrefaisant le ton,
 Vient au prétendu mort, approche de sa bière,
 Lui présente un chaudéau propre pour Lucifer.
 L'époux alors ne doute en aucune manière
 Qu'il ne soit citoyen d'Enfer.
 "Quelle personne es-tu ?" dit-il à ce fantôme.
 "La célerière du royaume
 De Satan," reprit-elle ; "et je porte à manger
 A ceux qu'enclôt la tombe noire."
 Le mari repart sans songer :
 "Tu ne leur portes point à boire ?"

(Id.)

¹ *il me souvient*, I remember. — ² *treuve*, poet. for *trouve*.

Le Tigre et le Renard.

“Te voilà de retour, ami Renard. Dis-moi :

As tu bien accompli les ordres de ton roi ?

As tu bien écouté ce que dans mon empire

Chacun de mes sujets peut dire ?

Puis-je être assuré de leur foi ?

Quels sont les sentimens que ma personne inspire ?

Parle : est-ce de l'amour ? serait-ce de l'effroi ?” —

“Inspirer de l'effroi ? de l'effroi, vous ! non, sire :

On vous chérit, on vous admire,

Vos bienfaits, vos vertus ont gagné tous les cœurs ;

On vous nomme des rois le plus grand, le plus juste.

Voyez, dit-on, voyez, comme ce tigre auguste

Sur nous aime à verser chaque jour ses faveurs !

Dans son cœur la justice éclaire

La bienfaisance et la bonté :

A son tour la bonté modère

L'exacte et rigide équité.

Et puis avec transport : Comblez nos vœux, ô Parque !

Et prolongez son terme aux dépens de nos jours.

Je ne finirais pas, s'il fallait, grand monarque,

Vous rapporter ici tous les tendres discours,

Discours non pas d'un seul, mais de la multitude,

Discours des animaux par troupe rassembles.” . .

“Et ceux de qui les fils par ma griffe étranglés ?” . . .

“Ceux-la, je l'oubliais, chantent leur gratitude,

Et connaissent le prix de cette insigne honneur.

Pour nous, disent-ils, quelle bonheur

D'avoir fourni de la pâture.” . .

“Ton rapport, cher ami, ne sent point l'imposture :

Il me contente : j'aime à voir

Que mes sujets font leur devoir.

J'approuve que la voix publique

En toute liberté sur mon compte s'explique.

Mais tous ces animaux qui causent deux à deux,

Leur discours est-il aussi tendre ?”

“Sans doute, roi puissant, ils font pour vous des vœux :

Mais ils sont si respectueux,

Ils se parlent si bas, qu'on ne peut les entendre.”

(Le MONNIER.)

Le Fleuve.

Un grand fleuve parcourt le monde :
 Tantôt lent, il serpente entre des prés fleuris,
 Les embellit et les féconde ;
 Tantôt rapide, il s'enfle, il se courrouce, il gronde,
 Roulant, précipitant au milieu des débris
 Son eau turbulente et profonde.
 A travers les cités, les guérets, les déserts,
 Il va, distribuant, à mesure inégale,
 Aux avides humains dont ses bords sont couverts,
 Les trésors de son urne avare et libérale.
 Ainsi, tandis que l'un, dans son repos,
 Bénit la main de la nature,
 Qui dans son héritage a fait passer leurs flots,
 Ou les lui donne pour ceinture,
 L'autre maudit le sol dont les flancs déchirés
 Reproduisent sans cesse et le roc et la pierre,
 Indestructible digue, éternelle barrière,
 Assise entre le fleuve et ses champs altérés.
 Mais le plaisant de cette histoire,
 C'est de voir certain compagnon
 Plongé dans l'eau jusqu'au menton ;
 Plus il a bu, plus il veut boire.
 Infatigable, et dans son bain
 Cent fois moins heureux et moins sage
 Qu'un homme qui tout près, sans désirs, sans dédain,
 Regardant l'eau couler, n'en prend pour son usage
 Que ce qu'il peut tenir dans le creux de sa main.
 Homme rare, sur ma parole !
 Avec moi vous en conviendrez,
 Mes bons amis, quand vous saurez
 Que notre fleuve est le Pactole.

(ARNAULT.)

Les Deux Voyageurs.

Le compère Thomas et son ami Lubin
 Allaient à pied tous deux à la ville prochaine.
 Thomas trouve sur son chemin
 Une bourse de Louis pleine :

Il l'empoche aussitôt. Lubin, d'un air content,
 Lui dit : " Pour nous la bonne aubaine !"
 " Non," répond Thomas froidement ;
 " Pour nous n'est pas bien dit : Pour moi c'est différent."
 Lubin ne souffle plus : mais, en quittant la plaine,
 Ils trouvent des voleurs cachés au bois voisin,
 Thomas, tremblant, et non sans cause,
 Dit : " Nous sommes perdus."—" Non," lui répond Lubin
 Nous n'est pas le vrai mot, mais toi c'est autre chose.
 Cela dit, il s'échappe à travers les taillis.
 Immobile de peur, Thomas est bientôt pris ;
 Il tire la bourse et la donne.
 Qui ne songe qu'à soi quand sa fortune est bonne,
 Dans le malheur n'a point d'amis.

(ANON.)

Manière de Lire les Vers.

Arrête, sot lecteur, dont la triste manie
 Détruit de nos accords la savante harmonie ;
Arrête, par pitié ! Quel funeste travers,
 En dépit d'Apollon, te fait lire des vers ?
 Ah ! si ta voix ingrate ou languit ou détonne,
 Ou traîne avec lenteur son fausset monotone ;
 Si du feu du génie en nos vers allumé
 N'étincelle jamais ton œil inanimé ;
 Si ta lecture enfin, dolente psalmodie,
 Ne dit rien, ne peut rien, à mon âme engourdie,
 Cesse, ou laisse-moi fuir. Ton regard abattu
 Du regard de Méduse a la triste vertu.
 L'auditeur, qu'ont glacé tes sons et ta présence,
 Croit subir le supplice inventé par Mézence :
 C'est un vivant qu'on lie au cadavre d'un mort.
 Attentif à ta voix, Phébus même s'endort ;
 Sa défaillante main laisse tomber sa lyre.
 C'est peu d'aimer les vers : il les faut savoir lire.
 Il faut avoir appris cet art mélodieux
 De parler dignement le langage des dieux ;
 Cet art qui, par les tons des phrases cadencées,
 Donne de l'harmonie et du nombre aux pensées ;

Cet art de déclamer dont le charme vainqueur
Assujettit l'oreille et subjugué le cœur.

(FRANÇAIS DE NEUFCHATEAU.)

L'Enseignement Mutuel.

Oh ! si le sort aveugle, à tous mes vœux propice,
M'eût permis d'être heureux au gré de mon caprice,
Horace, ton ruisseau, ton champ, ton petit bois,
Ne m'auraient point suffi pour être égal aux rois.
J'aurais encore voulu, près de mon toit agreste,
Ouvrir au fils du pauvre une école modeste ;
Et parmi ses enfans, tous soumis à ma loi,
J'aurais rêvé des jours qui ne sont plus pour moi.
Enfans, rassurez-vous : mon front n'est point sévère :
Je veux surtout qu'on m'aime, et peu qu'on me révère.
Je n'aurais pas été ce magister jaloux,
Pédant, gonflé de morgue, et bouffi de courroux,
Qui semble, en ses sermons toujours tristes et graves,
Le vieux de la montagne instruisant ses esclaves.
La peur préside seul à ses vaines leçons ;
Il gronde sur un mot, punit sur des soupçons,
Et souvent, à mentir vous contraignant d'avance,
Détruit votre candeur et non votre ignorance.
Loin de moi ce vieux fou, despote triomphant,
Qui ne se souvient plus qu'il fut jadis enfant,
Et, foulant sous son joug la jeunesse asservie,
Flétrit d'un souffle impur les roses de la vie !
Enfans, vous en riez : mais vos pleurs chaque soir
Par leur trace récente atteste son pouvoir.
Pour moi, j'aurais voulu, troupe aimable et joyeuse,
Vous faire un doux plaisir d'une étude ennuyeuse !
J'aurais, d'un nouvel art empruntant le secours,
Su¹ rendre vos travaux moins tristes et plus courts :
Je vous aurais laissé le soin de vous instruire,
Et ma classé eût offert l'image d'un empire.
Roi, j'aurais dispensé les rangs et les emplois.
J'aurais dit à chacun : Cherche à fixer mon choix ;
Parmi tes compagnons hâte-toi de paraître ;
Sois d'abord leur vainqueur, du deviendras leur maître.

¹ *Su*, from *savoir*. And see App. P. IV.

Alors j'aurais pu voir tous ces jeunes rivaux
 Disputer sous mes yeux de zèle et de travaux.
 Fier d'un titre conquis, tantôt le plus habile
 Guide des moins savans la phalange docile ;
 Et tantôt l'ignorant, par un juste retour,
 Grâce à lui, prend sa place, et l'instruit à son tour.
 (ANON.)

La Rose.

Salut, reine des fleurs ! salut, vermeille rose !
 A' peine le matin a vu la fleur éclore,
 Que les jeunes zéphyr, d'un doux zèle emportés,
 Racontent ta naissance aux bosquets enchantés ;
 Et le printemps ravi, que ton éclat décore,
 Te remet la couronne et le sceptre de Flore.
 Oh ! tu mérites bien la douce royauté
 Que la main du printemps décerne à ta beauté !
 N'es-tu pas de l'amour le riant interprète,
 L'ornement de la vierge, et l'amour du poète ?
 O fleur ! tu fais briller d'un éclat enflammé
 Le sein vermeil et frais du printemps parfumé.
 Mais, hélas ! combien peu vont durer ses couleurs !
 L'aube en vain lui versa le tribut de ses pleurs :
 Deux soleils, en passant, ont hâté sa vieillesse.
 Ce matin, riche encore de grâce et de jeunesse,
 Elle était du jardin l'espérance et l'amour ;
 Mais la rose a vieilli dans l'espace d'un jour.
 De cette tête, en vain par les grâces ornée,
 Le soir¹ j'ai vu tomber la couronne fanée ;
 Et les zéphyr, ingrats, sur les gazons fleuris,
 De la rose à mes pieds ont roulé les débris.
 (CHÉNEDOLLÉ.)

La Violette.

Aimable fille du printemps,
 Timide amante des bocages,
 Ton doux parfum flatte mes sens,
 Et tu sembles fuir nos hommages.

¹ *Le soir*, at evening.

Semblable au bienfaiteur discret
Dont la main secourt l'indigence,
Tu nous présentes le bienfait
Et tu crains la reconnaissance.

Sans faste, sans admirateur,
Tu vis¹ à l'oubli condamnée,
Et l'œil cherche encore ta fleur,
Quand l'odorat l'a devinée.

Pourquoi tes modestes couleurs
Au jour n'osent-elles paraître ?
Auprès de la reine des fleurs
Tu crains de t'éclipser peut-être ?

Rassure-toi ; près de Vénus
Les Grâces nous plaisent encore :
On aime l'éclat de Phébus
Et les doux rayons de l'Aurore.

N'attends pas les succès brillans
Qu'obtient la rose purpurine ;
Tu n'es pas la fleur des amans,
Mais aussi tu n'as pas d'épine.

Partage au moins avec ta sœur
Son triomphe et notre suffrage :
L'Amour l'adopte pour sa fleur ;
De l'Amitié sois l'apanage :

Viens prendre place en nos jardins ;
Quitte ce séjour solitaire :
Je te promets tous les matins
Une onde pure et salulaire.—

Que dis-je ! non, dans ces bosquets
Reste, violette chérie :
Heureux qui répand des bienfaits,
Et comme toi cache sa vie !

(CONSTANT DUBOS.)

¹ *vis*, from *virre*.

Le Coin du Feu.

Le foyer des plaisirs est la source féconde ;
 Il fixe doucement notre humeur vagabonde.
 Au retour du printemps, de nos toits échappés,
 Nous portons en tous lieux nos esprits dissipés.
 Le printemps nous disperse, et l'hiver nous rallie.
 Auprès de nos foyers, notre âme recueillie
 Goûte ce doux commerce à tous les cœurs si cher !
 Oui, l'instinct social est enfant de l'hiver.

Suis-je seul, je me plais encore au coin du feu.
 De nourrir mon brasier mes mains se font un jeu :
 J'agace mes tisons ; mon adroit artifice
 Reconstruit de mon feu l'élégant édifice :
 J'éloigne, je rapproche, et du hêtre brûlant
 Je corrige le feu trop rapide ou trop lent.
 Chaque fois que j'ai pris mes pincettes fidèles
 Partent en pétillant des milliers d'étincelles ;
 J'aime à voir s'envoler leurs légers bataillons.
 Que m'importe du Nord les fougueux tourbillons ?
 La neige, les frimas, qu'un froid piquant resserre,
 En vain sifflent dans l'air, en vain battent la terre.
 Quel plaisir, entouré d'un double paravent,
 D'écouter la tempête, et d'insulter au vent !
 Qu'il est doux, à l'abri¹ du toit qui me protège,
 De voir à gros flocons s'amonceler la neige !
 Leur vue à mon foyer prête un nouvel appas :
 L'homme se plaît à voir les maux qu'il ne sent pas.
 Mon cœur devient-il triste, et ma tête pesante ?
 Hé bien, pour ranimer ma gaîte languissante,
 La fève de Mocha, la feuille de Canton,
 Vont verser leur nectar dans l'émail du Japon.
 Dans l'airain échauffé déjà l'onde frissonne ;
 Bientôt le thé doré jaunit l'eau qui bouillonne,
 Ou des grains du Levant je goûte le parfum.
 Point d'ennuyeux causeur, de témoin importun :
 Lui seul, de ma maison exacte sentinelle,
 Mon chien, ami constant et compagnon fidèle,
 Prend à mes pieds sa part de la douce chaleur.

(DELILLE.)

¹ à l'abri, under the shelter.

Existence de Dieu.

Les cieux instruisent la terre
A révérer leur Auteur :
Tout ce que leur globe enserre
Célèbre un Dieu créateur.
O quel sublime cantique
¹Que ce concert magnifique
De tous les célestes corps !
Quelle grandeur infinie !
Quelle divine harmonie
Résulte de leurs accords !

De sa puissance immortelle
Tout parle, tout nous instruit.
Le jour au jour la révèle,
La nuit l'annonce à la nuit.
Ce grand et superbe ouvrage
N'est point pour l'homme un langage
Obscur et mystérieux.
Son adorable structure
Est la voix de la nature
Qui se fait entendre aux yeux.

Dans une éclatante voûte
Il a placé de ses mains
Ce soleil qui, dans sa route,
Eclaire tous les humains.
Environné de lumière,
Cet astre ouvre sa carrière
Comme un époux glorieux,
Qui, dès l'aube matinale,
De sa couche nuptiale
Sort brillant et radieux.

L'univers, à sa présence,
Semble sortir du néant :
Il prend sa course, il s'avance
Comme un superbe géant.
Bientôt sa marche féconde
Embrasse le tour du monde

¹ § 708.

Dans le cercle qu'il décrit ;
 Et, par sa chaleur puissante,
 La nature languissante
 Se ranime et se nourrit.

O que tes œuvres sont belles,
 Grand Dieu ! quels sont tes bienfaits !
 Que ceux qui te sont fidèles
 Sous ton joug trouvent d'attraits !
 Ta crainte inspire la joie,
 Elle assure notre voie,
 Elle nous rend triomphans,
 Elle éclaire la jeunesse,
 Et fait briller la sagesse
 Dans les plus faibles enfans.

(J. B. ROUSSEAU.)

La Mauvaise Honte.

Des superbes mortels le plus affreux lien,
 N'en doutons point, Arnauld, c'est la honte du bien.
 Des plus nobles vertus cette adroite ennemie
 Peint l'honneur à nos yeux des traits de l'infamie,
 Asservit nos esprits sous un joug rigoureux,
 Et nous rend l'un de l'autre les esclaves malheureux.
 Par elle la vertu devient lâche et timide.
 Vois-tu ce libertin en public intrépide,
 Qui prêche contre un Dieu que dans son âme il croit ?
 Il irait embrasser la vérité qu'il voit ;
 Mais de ses faux amis il craint la raillerie,
 Et ne brave ainsi Dieu que par poltronnerie.

C'est là de tous nos maux le fatal fondement,
 Des jugemens d'autrui nous tremblons follement ;
 Et chacun l'un de l'autre adorant les caprices,
 Nous cherchons hors de nous nos vertus et nos vices.
 Misérables jouets de notre vanité,
 Faisons au moins l'aveu de notre infirmité.
 'A quoi bon, quand la fièvre en nos artères brûle,
 Faire de notre mal un secret ridicule ?
 Le feu sort de vos yeux petillans et troublés,
 Votre poulx inégal marche à pas redoublés ;

Quelle fausse pudeur à feindre vous oblige ?—
 Qu'avez-vous ?—Je n'ai rien.—Mais. . . —Je n'ai rien, vous
 dis-je,—

Répondra ce malade à se taire obstiné.
 Mais cependant voilà tout son corps gangrené,
 Et la fièvre, demain se rendant la plus forte,
 Un bénitier aux pieds va l'étendre à la porte.
 Prevenons sagement un si juste malheur.
 Le jour fatal est proche et vient comme un voleur.
 Avant qu'à nos erreurs le ciel nous abandonne,
 Profitions de l'instant que de grâce il nous donne.
 Hâtons-nous ; le temps fuit, et nous traîne avec soi :
 Le moment où je parle est déjà loin de moi.

Mais quoi ! toujours la honte en esclaves¹ nous lie !

Oui, c'est toi qui nous perd, ridicule folie :
 C'est toi qui fis tomber le premier malheureux,
 Le jour que, d'un faux bien sottement amoureux,
 Et n'osant soupçonner sa femme d'imposture,
 Au démon, par pudeur, il vendit la nature.
 Hélas ! avant ce jour qui perdit ses neveux,
 Tous les plaisirs couraient au-devant de ses vœux.
 La faim aux animaux ne faisaient point la guerre :
 Le blé, pour se donner sans peine ouvrant la terre,
 N'attendait point qu'un bœuf, pressé de l'aiguillon,
 Traçât à pas tardifs un pénible sillon :
 La vigne offrait partout des grappes toujours pleines,
 Et des ruisseaux de lait serpentaient dans les plaines.
 Mais dès ce jour Adam, déchu de son état,
 D'un tribut de douleurs paya son attentat.
 Il fallut qu'au travail son corps rendu docile
 Forcât la terre avare à devenir fertile.
 Le chardon importun hérissa les guérets ;
 Le serpent venimeux rampa dans les forêts ;
 La canicule en feux désola les campagnes ;
 L'aiglon en fureur gronda sur les montagnes.
 Alors, pour se couvrir durant l'âpre saison,
 Il fallut aux brebis dérober leur toison.
 La peste en même temps, la guerre, et la famine,
 Des malheureux humains jurèrent la ruine.

Mais aucun de ces maux n'égala² les rigueurs
 Que la mauvaise honte exerça dans les cœurs.

¹ *en esclaves*, as slaves. — ² App. O. II. § XI.

De ce nid à l'instant sortirent tous les vices.
 L'avare, des premiers en proie¹ à ses caprices,
 Dans un infâme gain mettant l'honnêteté,
 Pour tout honte alors compta la pauvreté :
 L'honneur et la vertu n'osèrent plus paroître ;
 La piété chercha les deserts et le cloître.
 Depuis on n'a point vu de cœur si détaché,
 Qui par quelque lien ne tint à ce péché.
 Triste et funeste effet du premier de nos crimes !
 Moi-même, Arnauld, ici, qui te prêche en ces rimes,
 Plus qu'aucun des mortels par la honte abattu,
 En vain j'arme contre elle une faible vertu.
 Ainsi, toujours douteux, chancelant, et volage,
 A peine du limon où le vice m'engage
 J'arrache un pied timide et sors en m'agitant,
 Que l'autre m'y reporte et s'embourbe à l'instant.
 Car si, comme aujourd'hui, quelque rayon de zèle
 Allume dans mon cœur une clarté nouvelle,
 Soudain, aux yeux d'autrui s'il faut la confirmer,
 D'un geste, d'un regard, je me sens alarmer ;
 Et, même sur ces vers que je te viens d'écrire,²
 Je tremble en ce moment de ce que l'on va dire.³

(BOILEAU.)

La Mort.

Quand, de la vie essayant le voyage,
 L'enfant sourit à son naissant destin,
 La Mort est là : comme un léger nuage,
 Elle apparaît à l'horizon lointain.
 Sans redouter cette ombre fugitive,
 Qu'aperçoit seule une mère craintive,
 Il rit, bercé d'ignorance et d'espoir :
 Son beau matin ne prévoit point de soir.
 La Mort est là, quand des jours de l'enfance
 Aux mains du temps le sable est écoulé :
 Avec effroi la vive adolescence
 Distingue alors son fantôme voilé :
 Au sein des jeux, aux heures de l'étude,
 Une soudaine et vague inquiétude

¹ *en proie*, becoming a prey. — ² *viens d'écrire*, have just written. —
³ *va dire*, are going to say.

Vers cet objet ramène son regard ;
Le voile obscur se soulève plus tard.
Il est une heure où l'aveugle jeunesse
D'un vain espoir laisse échapper l'ivresse,
Heure funeste, où les premiers malheurs
Font à nos yeux verser les premiers pleurs,
Où tout entier le monde se révèle !
La Mort est là ; mais la Mort paraît belle !
C'est un jeune ange au maintien triste et doux ;
D'un léger deuil le voile l'environne,
De pâles fleurs son beau front se couronne.
C'est un ami qui s'approche de nous ;
D'aucun effroi sa marche n'est suivie ;
Ses chastes mains du flambeau de la vie
Couvrent le sol, pressent l'éclat mortel.
Mais d'un regard il endort la souffrance,
Mais tous ses traits rayonnent d'espérance,
Mais il sourit et nous montre le ciel !
Du jour bientôt le midi nous éclaire,
Et, dégagé des vapeurs du matin,
L'ange grandit ; son front devient sévère,
Et, dépouillant ce nuage incertain,
Plus il avance et plus on le redoute :
Tous les trésors amassés sur la route,
Sa vaste main s'ouvre pour les ravir,
Et c'est alors que la Mort fait pâlir.
Mais elle approche et s'agrandit sans cesse ;
L'âme entrevoit le terme du chemin ;
Déjà s'enfuit sous l'ombre qui s'abaisse
L'éclat mourant d'un soir sans lendemain.
Du poids des ans s'accroît notre faiblesse :
La Mort est là ! Courbés par la vieillesse,
Quand nous touchons à ses pieds redoutés,
Son front immense est caché dans la nue ;
Mais si le spectre échappe à notre vue,
Nous le sentons debout à nos côtés !
Quoi ! je mourrai ! quoi ! le temps à sa suite
Amènera l'irrévocable jour,
Le jour muet et sombre, où sans retour
S'arrêtera ce cœur qui bat si vite !
Oui, quand les biens que garde l'avenir
Me chercheront, j'aurai quitté la terre,

Comme au vallon une fleur solitaire
 Se fane et meurt, laissant pour souvenir
 Quelques parfums et des feuilles légères,
 Faibles jouets des brises bocagères !
 Vous, de la lyre amis harmonieux !
 Oh ! recueillez avec un soin pieux
 Ces chants épars où j'ai laissé mon âme.
 Ils vivront peu ; mais peut-être une femme,
 A' leur douceur séduite par degré,
 Suivra de l'œil la page fugitive. . . .
 Puis tout-à-coup s'arrêtera pensive,
 En répétant tout bas : Quoi ! je mourrai !
 (MME. AMABLE-TASTU.)

La Modération.

Tout vouloir est d'un fou, l'excès est son partage ;
 La modération est le trésor du sage :
 Il sait régler ses goûts, ses travaux, ses plaisirs,
 Mettre un but à sa course, un terme à ses désirs.
 Nul ne peut avoir tout. L'amour de la science
 A guidé ta jeunesse au sortir de l'enfance ;
 La nature est ton livre, et tu prétends y voir
 Moins ce qu'on a pensé que ce qu'il faut savoir.
 La raison te conduit, avance à sa lumière.
 Marche encore quelques pas, mais borne ta carrière :
 Là commence un abîme ; il le faut respecter.

Reaumur, dont la main si savante et si sûre
 A percé tant de fois la nuit de la nature,
 M'apprendra-t-il jamais par quels subtils ressorts
 L'éternel Artisan fait végéter les corps ?
 Pourquoi l'aspic affreux, le tigre, la panthère,
 N'ont jamais adouci leur cruel caractère,
 Et que reconnaissant la main qui le nourrit,
 Le chien meurt en léchant le maître qu'il chérit ?
 D'où vient qu'avec cent pieds, qui semblent inutiles,
 Cet insecte tremblant traîne ses pas débiles ?
 Pourquoi ce ver changeant se bâtit un tombeau,
 S'enterre, et resuscite avec un corps nouveau ;
 Et, le front couronné, tout brillant d'étincelles,
 S'élance dans les airs en déployant ses ailes ?

Le sage du Faï parmi ses plants divers,
 Végétaux rassemblés des bouts de l'univers,
 Me dira-t-il pourquoi la tendre sensitive
 Se fêtrit sous nos mains, honteuse et fugitive ?
 Malade, et dans un lit de douleur accablé,
 Par l'éloquent Sylva vous êtes consolé :
 Il sait l'art de guérir autant que l'art de plaire.
 Demandez à Sylva par quel secret mystère
 Ce pain, cet aliment, dans mon corps digéré,
 Se transforme en un lait doucement préparé ?
 Comme toujours filtré dans ses routes certaines,
 En longs ruisseaux de pourpre il court enfler mes veines,
 'A mon corps languissant rend un pouvoir nouveau,
 Fait palpiter mon cœur et penser mon cerveau ?
 Il lève au ciel les yeux, il s'incline, il s'écrie :
 Demandez-le à ce Dieu qui nous donna la vie !
 (VOLTAIRE.)

Les Hirondelles.

Captif au rivage du Maure,
 Un guerrier, courbé sous ses fers,
 Disait : Je vous revois encore,
 Oiseaux, ennemis des hivers.
 Hirondelles, que l'espérance
 Suit jusqu'en ces brûlans climats,
 Sans doute vous quittez la France :
 De mon pays ne me parlez-vous pas ?

Depuis trois ans¹ je vous conjure
 De m'apporter un souvenir
 Du vallon où ma vie obscure
 Se berçait d'un doux avenir.
 Au détour d'une eau qui chemine,
 A flots purs, sous de frais lilas,
 Vous avez vu notre chaumine :
 De ce vallon ne me parlez-vous pas ?

¹ *depuis trois ans*, for three years.

L'une de vous peut-être est née
 Au toit où j'ai reçu le jour ;
 Là, d'une mère infortunée
 Vous avez dû¹ plaindre l'amour.
 Mourante, elle croit à toute heure
 Entendre le bruit de mes pas ;
 Elle écoute, puis elle pleure.
 De son amour ne me parlez-vous pas ?

Ma sœur est-elle mariée ?
 Avez-vous vu de nos garçons
 La foule aux noces conviée,
 La célébrer dans ses chansons ?
 Et ses compagnons du jeune âge
 Qui m'ont suivi dans les combats,
 Ont-ils revu tous le village ?
 De tant d'amis ne me parlez-vous pas ?

Sur leurs corps, l'étranger peut-être
 Du vallon reprend le chemin ;
 Sous mon chaume il commande en maître,
 De ma sœur il trouble l'hymen.
 Pour moi, plus² de mère qui prie,
 Et partout des fers ici-bas.
 Hirondelles, de ma patrie,
 De ses malheurs, ne me parlez-vous pas ?
 (J.-P. DE BERANGER.)

Mort de Jeanne d'Arc.

A qui réserve-t-on ces apprêts meurtriers ?
 Pour qui ces torches qu'on excite ?
 L'airain sacré tremble et s'agite. . . .
 D'où vient ce bruit lugubre ? où courent ces guerriers
 Dont la foule à longs flots roule et se précipite ?

La joie éclate sur leurs traits ;
 Sans doute l'honneur les enflamme ;
 Ils vont pour un assaut former leurs rangs épais :
 Non, ces guerriers sont des Anglais
 Qui vont voir mourir une femme.

¹ *dû*, been obliged. — ² *plus*, no more.

Qu'ils sont nobles dans leur courroux !
Qu'il est beau d'insulter au bras chargé d'entraves !
La voyant sans défense, ils s'écriaient, ces braves :

“ Qu'elle meure ! elle a contre nous
Des esprits infernaux suscité la magie.” . . .

Lâches, que lui reprochez-vous ?
D'un courage inspiré la brûlante énergie,
L'amour du nom Français, le mépris du danger,
Voilà sa magie et ses charmes :

En faut-il d'autre que des armes
Pour combattre, pour vaincre et punir l'étranger ?

Du Christ, avec ardeur, Jeanne baisait l'image ;
Ses longs cheveux épars flottaient au gré des vents :
Au pied de l'échafaud, sans changer de visage,
Elle s'avancait à pas lents.

Tranquille elle y monta. Quand, debout sur le faite,
Elle vit le bûcher qui l'allait dévorer,
Les bourreaux en suspens, la flamme déjà prête,
Sentant son cœur faillir, elle baissa la tête,

Et se prit à pleurer.

Ah ! pleure, fille infortunée !

Ta jeunesse va se flétrir,

Dans sa fleur trop tôt moissonnée !

Adieu, beau ciel, il faut mourir !

Tu ne verras plus tes riantes montagnes,
Le temple, le hameau, les champs de Vaucouleurs ;

Et ta chaumière, et tes compagnes,
Et ton père expirant sous le poids des douleurs.

Après quelques instans d'un horrible silence,
Tout-à-coup le feu brille, il s'irrite, il s'élance. . . .

Le cœur de la guerrière alors s'est ranimé ;

'A travers les vapeurs d'une fumée ardente,

Jeanne, encore menaçante,

Montre aux Anglais son bras à demi consumé.

Pourquoi reculer d'épouvante,

Anglais ? son bras est désarmé ;

La flamme l'environne, et sa voix expirante

Murmure encore : O France, ô mon roi bien-aimé !

Qu'un monument s'élève au lieu de ta naissance !
 O toi, qui des vainqueurs renversa les projets !
 La France y portera son deuil et ses regrets,
 Sa tardive reconnaissance ;
 Elle y viendra gémir sous de jeunes cyprès ;
 Puissent croître avec eux ta gloire et sa puissance !

Que sur l'airain funèbre on grave des combats,
 Des étendards Anglais fuyant devant tes pas,
 Dieu vengeant par tes mains la plus juste des causes !
 Venez, jeunes beautés ; venez, braves soldats ;
 Semez sur son tombeau les lauriers et les roses !

Qu'un jour le voyageur, en parcourant ces bois,
 Cueille un rameau sacré, l'y dépose, et s'écrie :
 'A celle qui sauva le trône et la patrie,
 Et n'obtint qu'un tombeau pour prix de ses exploits !
 (CASIMIR DELAVIGNE.)

Bonaparte.

Sur un écueil battu par la vague plaintive,
 Le nautonier de loin voit blanchir sur la rive
 Un tombeau près du bord par les flots déposé :
 Le temps n'a pas encore bruni l'étroite pierre,
 Et sous le vert tissu de la ronce et du lierre,
 On distingue . . . un sceptre brisé !

.

Il est là ! sous trois pas un enfant le mesure !
 Son ombre ne rend pas même un léger murmure !
 Le pied d'un ennemi foule en paix son cercueil !
 Sur ce front foudroyant le moucheron bourdonne,
 Et son ombre n'entend que le bruit monotone
 D'une vague contre un écueil.

.

Ne crains pas, cependant, ombre encore inquiète,
 Que je vienne outrager ta majesté muette !
 Non ! La lyre aux tombeaux n'a jamais insulté :

La mort fut de tout temps l'asyle de la gloire ;
 Rien ne doit jusqu'ici poursuivre une mémoire,
 Rien ! ... excepté la vérité.

Ta tombe et ton berceau sont couverts d'un nuage ;
 Mais, pareil à l'éclair, tu sortis d'un orage !
 Tu foudroyas le monde avant d'avoir un nom !
 Tel ce Nil, dont Memphis boit les vagues fécondes,
 Avant d'être nommé, fait bouillonner ses ondes
 Aux solitudes de Memnon.

Les dieux étaient tombés, les trônes étaient vides ;
 La victoire te prit sur ses ailes rapides.
 D'un peuple de Brutus la gloire te fit roi !
 Ce siècle, dont l'écume entraînait dans sa course
 Les mœurs, les rois, les dieux ... refoulé vers sa source,
 Recula d'un pas devant toi.

.

Ainsi dans les accès d'un impuissant délire,
 Quand un siècle vieilli de ses mains se déchire,
 En jetant dans les fers un cri de liberté,
 Un héros tout-à-coup de la poudre se lève,
 Le frappe avec son sceptre ... il s'éveille, et le rêve
 Tombe devant la vérité.

Gloire ! honneur ! liberté ! ces mots que l'homme adore,
 Retentissaient pour toi comme l'airain sonore,
 Dont un stupide écho répète au loin le son !
 De cette langue en vain ton oreille frappée
 Ne comprit ici-bas que le cri de l'épée,
 Et le mâle accord du clairon.

.

Jamais, pour éclaircir ta royale tristesse,
 La coupe des festins ne te versa l'ivresse ;
 Tes yeux d'une autre pompe aimaient à s'enivrer.
 Comme un soldat debout qui veille sous les armes,
 Tu vis de la beauté le sourire et les larmes,
 Sans sourire et sans soupirer !

Tu n'aimais que le bruit du fer, le cri d'alarmes !
 L'éclat resplendissant de l'aube sur les armes ;

Et ta main ne flattait que ton léger coursier,
 Quand les flots ondoyants de sa pâle crinière
 Sillonnaient comme un vent la sanglante poussière,
 Et que ses pieds brisaient l'acier !

Tu grandis sans plaisir, tu tombas sans murmure !
 Rien d'humain ne battait sous ton épaisse armure,
 Sans haine et sans amour tu vivais pour penser !
 Comme l'aigle régnant dans un ciel solitaire,
 Tu n'avais qu'un regard pour mesurer la terre,
 Et des serres pour l'embrasser !

.

Etre d'un siècle entier la pensée et la vie !
 'Emousser le poignard, décourager l'envie ;
 'Ebranler, raffermir l'univers incertain ;
 Aux sinistres clartés de la foudre qui gronde,
 Vingt fois contre les dieux jouer le sort du monde,—
 Quel rêve ! . . . et ce fut ton destin !

.

On dit qu'aux derniers jours de sa longue agonie,
 Devant l'éternité, seul avec son génie,
 Son regard vers le ciel parut se soulever !
 Le signe rédempteur toucha son front farouche !
 Et même on entendit commencer sur sa bouche
 Un nom . . . qu'il n'osait achever.

Achève . . . c'est le Dieu qui règne et qui couronne !
 C'est le Dieu qui punit ! c'est le Dieu qui pardonne !
 Pour les héros et nous il a des poids divers.
 Parle-lui sans effroi : lui seul peut te comprendre.
 L'esclave et le tyran ont tous un compte à rendre,
 L'un du sceptre, l'autre des fers.

(ALPH. DE LAMARTINE.)

L'autre Monde.

Levons les yeux vers la colline,
 Où luit l'étoile du matin !
 Saluons la splendeur divine,
 Qui se lève dans le lointain !

Cette clarté pure et féconde
Aux yeux de l'âme éclaire un monde
Où la foi monte sans effort.
D'un saint espoir ton cœur palpite ;
Ami ! pour y voler plus vite,
Prenons les ailes de la mort !

En vain, dans ce désert aride,
Sous nos pas tout s'est effacé !
Viens ! où l'éternité réside
On retrouve jusqu'au passé !
Là sont nos rêves pleines de charmes,
Et nos adieux trempés de larmes,
Nos vœux et nos soupirs perdus !
Là refleuriront nos jeunesses,
Et les objets de nos tristesses
A' nos regrets seront rendus !

Ainsi, quand les vents de l'automne
Ont balayé l'ombre des bois,
L'hirondelle agile abandonne
Le faite du palais des rois !
Suivant le soleil dans sa course,
Elle remonte vers la source
D'où l'astre nous répand les jours,
Et sur ses pas retrouve encore
Un autre ciel, une autre aurore,
Un autre nid pour ses amours !

(ID.)

Extrait de l'Hymne au Christ.

Tu parais ! ton verbe vole !
Comme autrefois la parole
Qu'entendit le noir chaos
De la nuit tira l'aurore,
Des cieux sépara les flots,
Et du nombre fit éclore
L'harmonie et le repos,
Ta parole créatrice

Sépare vertus et vice,
Mensonges et vérité.
Le maître apprend la justice,
L'esclave la liberté,
L'indigent le sacrifice,
Le riche la charité.
Un Dieu créateur et père,
En qui l'innocence espère,
S'abaisse jusqu'aux mortels :
La prière qu'il appelle
S'élève à lui, libre et belle,
Sans jamais souiller son aile
Des holocaustes cruels !
Nos iniquités, nos crimes,
Nos désirs illégitimes,
Voilà les seules victimes
Qu'on immole à ses autels !
L'immortalité se lève
Et brille au delà des temps ;
L'espérance, divin rêve,
De l'exil que l'homme achève
Abrège les courts instans ;
L'amour céleste soulève
Nos fardeaux les plus pesans ;
Le siècle éternel commence ;
Le juste a sa conscience,
Le remords son innocence ;
L'humble foi fait la science
Des sages et des enfans !
Et l'homme, qu'elle console,
Dans cette seule parole
Se repose deux mille ans !

(Id.)

VOCABULARY.

N. B. In this Vocabulary the following abbreviations are employed :
art. for *article*, *s.* for *substantive*, *m.* for *masculine*, *f.* for *feminine*, *n.* for *neuter*, *a.* for *adjective*, *pr.* for *pronoun*, *v.* for *verb*, *v. a.* for *active verb*, *v. n.* for *neuter verb*, *v. r.* for *reflexive verb*, *part.* for *participle*, *adv.* for *adverb*, *prep.* for *preposition*, *i.* for *interjection*, *c.* for *conjunction*, *contr.* for *contraction*, *pl.* for *plural*. Every verb not marked as *a.* or *n.* is both active and neuter.

A.

- | | |
|--|---|
| A', <i>pr.</i> to, at, with, in, into, about, according to, for, by. | Abus, <i>s. m.</i> abuse. |
| Abaisser, <i>v. a.</i> to abase, lower, humble. | Académie, <i>s. f.</i> academy. |
| s'Abaisser, <i>v. r.</i> to fall, sink. | Accabler, <i>v. a.</i> to overwhelm. |
| Abandonner, <i>v. a.</i> to forsake, give over, deliver up. | Accent, <i>s. m.</i> accent, tune, note. |
| Abattu, <i>e. a.</i> afflicted, dejected. | Accès, <i>s. m.</i> access, fits. |
| Abbé, <i>Abbe</i> . | Accompli, <i>a.</i> accomplished. |
| Abbé, <i>s. m.</i> abbot. | Accomplir, <i>v. a.</i> to accomplish, fulfil, perform. |
| Abîme, <i>s. m.</i> abyss. | Accomplissement, <i>s. m.</i> accomplishment, fulfilment. |
| Abondance, <i>s. f.</i> abundance. | Accord, <i>s. m.</i> agreement, concord. |
| Abondant, <i>e. a.</i> abundant. | Accorder, <i>v. a.</i> to grant. |
| Abonder, <i>v. n.</i> to abound. | Accourir, <i>v. n.</i> to run to. |
| Aborder, <i>v. n.</i> to land. | Accoutumé, <i>e. a.</i> accustomed. |
| Abréger, <i>v. a.</i> to abridge. | Accroître, <i>v. n.</i> to augment, increase. |
| Abri, <i>s. m.</i> shelter. | Accuser, <i>v. a.</i> to accuse. |
| Absence, <i>s. f.</i> absence. | Acharner, <i>v. a.</i> to enrage. |
| Absolu, <i>e. a.</i> absolute, peremptory. | Acheter, <i>v. a.</i> to purchase, buy. |
| Absolument, <i>ad.</i> absolutely, quite. | Achever, <i>v. a.</i> to finish, complete, accomplish. |
| Abstrait, <i>e. a.</i> abstracted. | Acier, <i>s. m.</i> steel, sword. |

- Acquérir, *v. a. to acquire, get.*
 Acquitter, *v. a. to clear.*
 Acre, *a. sharp.*
 Acteur, *rice, s. m. actor.*
 Actif, *ve. a. active.*
 Action, *s. f. action.*
 Activité, *s. f. activity, quickness.*
 Actuel, *le. a. actual, present.*
 Adam, *Adam.*
 Adieu, *s. m. adv.—adieu, farewell.*
 Admirable, *a. admirable.*
 Admirateur, *s. m. admirer.*
 Admiration, *s. f. admiration.*
 Admirer, *v. a. to admire, to wonder.*
 Adolescence, *s. f. adolescence, youth.*
 Adopter, *v. a. to adopt.*
 Adorable, *a. adorable.*
 Adorateur, *s. m. worshipper.*
 Adorer, *v. a. to adore, worship.*
 Adoucir, *v. a. to soften.*
 Adroit, *e. a. dextrous, sly.*
 A' droit, *to the right.*
 Affaiblir, *v. a. to weaken.*
 Affaire, *s. f. affair.*
 Affecter, *v. a. to affect.*
 Afféterie, *s. f. affectation.*
 Affligeant, *e. a. afflicting, sad.*
 s'Affliger, *v. r. to grieve.*
 Affranchir, *v. a. to set free, free.*
 Affranchissement, *s. m. delivery, exemption.*
 Affreux, *se. a. dreadful, hideous.*
 Afin que, *c. to the end that.*
 Afin de, *in order to.*
 Afrique, *Africa.*
 Agacer, *v. a. to vex, provoke, excite, stir.*
 Age, *s. m. age.*
 Agile, *a. agile, nimble.*
 Agir, *v. a. to act.*
 Agitation, *s. f. agitation.*
 Agiter, *v. a. to agitate, stir, disturb.*
 Agneau, *s. m. a lamb.*
 Agonie, *s. f. agony.*
 Agrandir, *v. a. to enlarge, raise.*
 Agréable, *a. agreeable.*
 Agréments, *s. pl. charms.*
 Agreste, *a. rustic, clownish.*
 Agriculture, *s. f. agriculture.*
 Ah ! *i. ah ! oh ! alas !*
 Aide, *s. f. aid, help.*
 Aider, *v. a. to help, aid.*
 Aigle, *s. m. eagle.* [spleen.
 Aigreur, *s. f. sourness, spite,*
 Aigu, *e. a. sharp, acute.*
 Aiguillon, *s. m. goad.*
 Aile, *s. f. wing.*
 Ailleurs, *adv. elsewhere.*
 Aimable, *a. amiable, lovely, agreeable.*
 Aimant, *a. loving.*
 Aimer, *v. a. to love, like, be fond of.*
 Ainsi, *adv. so, thus, just so.*
 Ajouter, *v. a. to add.*
 Air, *s. m. air, wind, carriage, manner.*
 Airain, *s. m. brass.*
 Aisé, *e. a. easy.*
 Aisément, *adv. easily.*
 A' la fois, *adv. at once.*
 Alaiter, *v. a. to suckle.*
 Alarme, *s. f. alarm.*
 Alarmer, *v. a. to alarm.*
 Albane, *Albani.*
 Alcade, *alcaid.*
 Alection, *Alecto.*
 Alentour, *adv. round about.*
 Alexandre, *Alexander.*
 Alexandrie, *Alexandria.*
 Alexandrin, *e. a. Alexandrine.*

- Aliment, *s. m. aliment, food.*
 Allaiter, *v. a. to suckle.*
 Allégorie, *s. f. allegory.*
 Allemagne, *Germany.*
 Aller, *v. n. to go, walk.*
 Allumer, *v. a. to light, kindle.*
 Aloës, *s. m. aloes.*
 Alors, *adv. at that time, then.*
 Altérer, *v. a. to disorder, alter.*
 Amant, *lover, s. m. suitor.*
 Amante, *s. f. sweetheart.*
 Amas, *s. m. heap, pile.* [lect.
 Amasser, *v. a. to heap up, col-*
 Ambitieux, *se. a. ambitious.*
 Ambition, *s. f. ambition.*
 Ambulant, *e. a. strolling.*
 Ame, *s. f. soul, spirit.*
 Amener, *v. a. to bring, cause.*
 A` mesure, *in proportion.*
 Ami, *s. m. friend.*
 Amitié, *s. f. friendship.*
 Amonceler, *v. a. to heap up.*
 Amour, *s. m. love. — propre,*
self-love.
 Amoureux, *se. a. in love with.*
 Amphithéâtre, *s. m. amphithea-*
tre.
 Ample, *a. large, wide.*
 Ampoulé, *e. a. high-flown.*
 An, *s. m. year.*
 Analyser, *v. a. to analyse.*
 Ancêtres, *s. m. pl.—ancestors.*
 Anchise, *Anchises.*
 Ancien, *ne. a. old.*
 Ancien, *s. m. elder, senior.*
 Anciens, *s. pl. ancients.*
 Ancre, *s. f. anchor, iron brace.*
 Andalous, *s. m. Andalusian*
(horse.)
 Ane, *s. m. ass.*
 Anéantir, *v. a. to annihilate.*
 Ange, *s. m. angel.*
 Anglais, *Englishman.*
 Animal, *s. m. animal, brute.*
 Animer, *v. a. to animate, enliven.*
 Anneau, *s. m. ring.*
 Année, *s. f. year.*
 Annoncer, *v. a. to make known,*
give out, announce, declare.
 Antinoüs, *Antinoüs.*
 Antique, *a. s. antique, ancient.*
 Antiquité, *s. f. antiquity.*
 Antoine, *Antony.*
 Apanage, *s. m. appanage, ap-*
pendix, portion.
 Apercevoir, *v. a. to perceive.*
 A`-peu-près, *adv. nearly, almost.*
 Apollon, *Apollo.*
 Apparaître, *v. n. to appear.*
 Apparence, *s. f. appearance.*
 Apparent, *e. apparent.*
 Appas, *s. m. charm.*
 Appeler, *v. to call, appeal.*
 s'Appeler, *v. r. to be called.*
 Applaudir, *v. a. to applaud.*
 Applaudissement, *s. m. ap-*
plause.
 Apporter, *v. a. to bring, convey.*
 Appécier, *v. a. to appreciate.*
 Apprendre, *v. a. to learn, inform.*
 Apprêt, *s. m. preparation.*
 Approcher, *v. a. to approach,*
draw near.
 Approprier, *v. a. to appropri-*
ate.
 Approuver, *v. a. to approve, like.*
 Appui, *s. m. support, prop, stay.*
 Appuyer, *v. a. to support.*
 Apre, *a. rough.*
 Après, *pr. adv.—after, next to.*
— que, c. when, after.
 Aquilon, *s. m. north wind.*
 Arabe, *Arabian.*
 Arabie, *Arabia.*
 Arborer, *to hoist, set up.*
 Arbre, *s. m. a tree.*

- Architecture, *s. f. architecture.*
 Ardent, *e. a. ardent, burning.*
 Ardeur, *s. f. ardor.*
 Arène, *s. f. arena.*
 Argent, *s. m. silver, money.*
 Aride, *a. arid, barren.*
 Aristide, *Aristides.*
 Aristocratie, *s. f. aristocracy.*
 Aristote, *Aristotle.*
 Arme, *s. f. arm, weapon.*
 Armée, *s. f. army.*
 Armer, *v. a. to arm.*
 Armure, *s. f. armor.*
 Arnauld, *Arnauld.*
 Arpinum, *Arpinum.*
 Arracher, *v. a. to pull, draw, take, tear.*
 Arranger, *v. a. to set in order.*
 Arrêter, *v. a. to stop, rest.*
 s'Arrêter, *v. r. to stop.*
 Arriver, *v. n. to arrive, come, happen, befall.*
 Arsenal, *s. m. arsenal.*
 Art, *s. m. art.*
 Artère, *s. f. artery.*
 Articuler, *v. a. to articulate.*
 Artifice, *s. m. skill.*
 Artisan, *e. s. m. artificer.*
 Artiste, *s. m. artist.*
 Asie, *Asia.*
 Aspect, *s. m. aspect, look, vision.*
 Aspic, *s. m. asp.*
 Aspirer, *v. n. to aspire.*
 Assaillir, *v. a. to assault, attack.*
 Assaut, *s. m. assault.*
 Assemblée, *s. f. assembly.*
 Asseoir, *v. a. to set, lay.*
 s'Asseoir, *v. r. to sit down.*
 Asservir, *v. a. to subject, enslave.*
 Assez, *adv. enough.*
 Assigner, *v. a. to assign.*
 Assister, *v. a. to assist, help.*
 Assujettir, *v. a. to subdue, overcome.*
 Assurance, *s. f. assurance.*
 Assuré, *e. a. sure, confident.*
 Assurer, *v. a. assure, encourage.*
 Astrée, *Astræa.*
 Asyle, *s. m. asylum, shelter.*
 Athénien, *Athenian.*
 Athènes, *Athens.*
 Atome, *s. m. atom.*
 Attachant, *e. a. engaging.*
 Attacher, *v. a. to tie, fasten, allure, attach.*
 Attaque, *s. f. attack, insult.*
 Attaquer, *v. a. to attack.*
 Atteindre, *v. n. to reach, attain.*
 Atteinte, *s. f. hurt.*
 Attendre, *to wait, expect, listen.*
 Attendrir, *v. a. to soften, affect.*
 Attendrissement, *s. m. commiseration.* [*of law.*]
 Attentat, *s. m. outrage, violation.*
 Attentif, *ve. a. attentive, intent.*
 Attention, *s. f. attention, care.*
 Attentivement, *adv. attentively.*
 Attester, *v. a. to attest, call to witness.*
 Attirail, *s. m. baggage, train, equipage, dress.*
 Attirer, *v. a. to attract, draw.*
 Attraction, *s. f. attraction.*
 Attrait, *s. m. allurement, attraction; —s, pl. charms, beauty.*
 Attribuer, *v. a. to attribute, ascribe.*
 Attribut, *s. m. attribute.*
 Au, *art. m.—to the, in, with, for, according.*
 Avance, *s. f. advance. — D'avance, in advance, too soon.*
 Avancer, *v. a. to advance.*

- s'Avancer, v. r. to move, go forward.* [deep.
Avant, prep. before, forward,
Avantage, s. m. advantage, privilege.
Avare, a. covetous, sordid.
Avare, s. a miser.
Avarice, s. f. covetousness.
Aubaine, s. f. windfall.
Aube, s. f. day-break.
Aucun, e. a. any, no, none, some.
Audace, s. f. boldness.
Au dehors, prep. without.
Au-delà, prep. beyond.
Au-dessus, prep. above.
Au-devant, adv. before.
Au-dessous, adv. beneath.
Auditeur, s. m. auditor.
Avec, prep. with.
Avenir, s. m. future.
Avertir, v. a. to warn, inform.
Aveu, s. m. confession.
Aveugle, a. s. blind.
Aveuglement, s. m. blindness.
Aveuglément, adv. blindly.
Augmenter, v. a. to augment, increase.
Auguste, a. august, royal.
Avide, a. greedy, eager.
Aujourd'hui, adv. to-day, now.
Avis, s. m. advice, opinion.
Avoir, v. a. to have.
Avouer, v. a. to own.
Auparavant, adv. before.
Auprès, prep. near, about, with, by, to.
Auprès, adv. hard by, close by.
Aurore, s. f. Aurora, dawn, morning, the east.
Aussi, c. also, so, too, as.
Aussi-bien, adv. as well. [soon.
Aussi-tôt, adv. immediately, as
Autant, adv. as much, as many.
- Autel, s. m. altar.*
Auteur, s. m. author, maker.
Automne, s. f. autumn.
Autorité, s. f. authority.
Autour, prep. about, round.
Autre, pr. other, another.
Autrefois, adv. formerly, heretofore.
Autrefois, s. f. another time.
Autrui, s. m. others, other people.
Aux, art. pl.—to the.
Azur, s. m. azure.
- B.
- Babouche, s. f. Asiatic slippers.*
Bacchus, Bacchus.
Bagne, s. m. the place where the Turks confine their slaves.
Baie, s. f. bay-gulf.
Bain, s. m. bath, bagnio.
Baiser, s. m. kiss.
Baisser, v. to let down, bow, stoop, lower.
Balancer, v. a. to balance.
Balayer, v. a. to sweep.
Balustrade, s. f. balustrade, rails.
Bannir, v. a. to banish.
Barbare, a. barbarous, rude.
Barbe, s. f. beard.
Barque, s. f. a bark.
Barre, s. f. a bar.
Barrière, s. f. barrier.
Bas, se. a. low.
Bas, adv. low.
Basse-Bretagne, Lower Brittany.
Bassesse, s. f. baseness, base action.
Bassin, s. m. basin.
Bataille, s. f. a battle, fight.

- Bataillon, *s. m. battalion.*
 Bâtir, *v. n. to build.*
 Batterie, *s. f. battery.*
 Battre, *v. a. to beat, strike.*
 Bazar, *s. m. bazar.* [ful.
 Beau, Bel, Belle, *a. fine, beau-*
 Beaucoup, *adv. much, many.*
 Beauté, *s. f. beauty.*
 Beaux-arts, *pl. fine arts.*
 Belette, *s. f. weasel.*
 Belier, *s. m. ram, Aries, batter-*
 ing-ram.
 Belle-sœur, *s. f. sister-in-law.*
 Belvédère, *Belvedere.*
 Bénir, *v. a. to bless.*
 Bénitier, *s. m. holy-water pot.*
 Berceau, *s. m. cradle.*
 Bercer, *v. a. to rock, amuse.*
 (se) Bercer, *v. r. to flatter one's*
 self.
 Berger, *s. m. shepherd.*
 Berthelier, *Berthelier.*
 Besoin, *s. m. want, need.*
 Bête, *s. f. beast, brute.* Bête
 fauve, wild deer.
 Bétique, *Bætica (in Spain).*
 Bien, *s. m. good, wealth, benefit.*
 Bien, *adv. well, many, much,*
 very, else.
 Bien-tôt, *adv. soon, very soon.*
 Bienfaisance, *s. f. beneficence.*
 Bienfait, *s. m. favor, benefit.*
 Bienfaiteur, *s. m. benefactor.*
 Bienséance, *s. f. decency.*
 Bière, *s. f. beer, coffin.*
 Billet, *s. m. note, billet.*
 Bizarre, *a. fantastical, odd.*
 Blanc, *he, a. white.*
 Blanchâtre, *a. whitish.*
 Blanchir, *v. to whiten.*
 Blessé, *v. a. to wound.*
 Bleu, *e, a. s. m.—blue.*
 Bocage, *s. m. a grove, thicket.*
 Bocager, *e, a. rural.*
 Boccace, *Boccacio.*
 Bœuf, *s. m. an ox.*
 Boileau, *Boileau.*
 Boire, *v. a. to drink.*
 Bois, *s. m. wood.*
 Boisson, *s. f. drink.*
 Boiter, *v. n. to go lame, limp.*
 Bon, ne, *a. good, kind, brave,*
 skilful, excellent.
 Bon, *s. m. good.*
 Bonace, *s. f. calm.*
 Bondir, *v. n. to bound.* [ing.
 Bonheur, *s. m. happiness, bless-*
 Bonnard, *Bonnivard.*
 Bonté, *s. f. goodness, kindness.*
 Bord, *s. m. edge, brink, shore.*
 Border, *v. a. to edge, border.*
 Borne, *s. f. a bound, limit.*
 Borner, *v. a. to bound, limit.*
 Bosquet, *s. m. thicket, grove.*
 Bouche, *s. f. the mouth.*
 Bouffir, *v. a. to bloat, puff up.*
 Bouillant, *e. a. hot, hasty.*
 Bouillonner, *v. n. to bubble up,*
 gush out.
 Bourdaloue, *Bourdaloue.*
 Bourdonner, *v. n. to hum, buzz.*
 Bourreau, *s. m. executioner, tor-*
 menter.
 Bourse, *s. f. a purse.*
 Bout, *s. m. end.*
 Bouteille, *s. f. a bottle.*
 Bouvier, *e. s. cowherd, clown.*
 Bras, *s. m. arm.*
 Brasier, *s. m. coal-fire, a great*
 clear fire.
 Brave, *a. s. brave.*
 Braver, *v. a. to brave.*
 Brebis, *s. f. a sheep, ewe.*
 Brenta, *Brenta.*
 Brider, *v. a. to bridle.*
 Brièvement, *adv. briefly.*

Brigandage, *s. m.* robbery.
 Brillant, *e. a.* shining, bright.
 Brillanté, *part. made* brilliant.
 Briller, *v. n.* to shine, sparkle.
 Brise, *s. f.* a breeze.
 Briser, *v. a.* to break, rend.
 Brouillard, *s. m.* mist.
 Broyer, *v. a.* to grind, pound.
 Bruit, *s. m.* a noise, uproar.
 Brûlant, *e. a.* burning, hot, eager.
 Brûlé, *s. m.* burning.
 Brûler, *v.* to burn.
 Brume, *s. f.* a fog.
 Brunir, *v.* to turn brown.
 Brut, *e. a.* rough, brute.
 Brutus, *Brutus*.
 Bûcher, *s. m.* funeral pile.
 Buffon, *Buffon*.
 Buisson, *s. m.* bush, thicket.
 But, *s. m.* a mark, aim, design.
 Byron, *Byron*.

C.

Ça, *adv.* here.
 Cacher, *v. a.* to hide, conceal, cover.
 Cachot, *s. m.* a dungeon.
 Cadavre, *s. m.* corpse, carcase.
 Cadencé, *e. a.* cadenced.
 Caillou, *s. m.* flint-stone.
 Caius Julius, *Caius Julius*.
 Calcul, *s. m.* calculation.
 Calme, *a.* calm, quiet, still.
 Campagne, *s. f.* country, field.
 Canal, *s. m.* canal, channel.
 Candeur, *s. f.* candour, frankness.
 Canicule, *s. f.* dog-star.
 Cantique, *s. m.* a canticle.
 Canton, *s. m.* district.

Canton, *Canton*.
 Capable, *a.* capable.
 Capitole, *s. m.* capitol.
 Caprice, *s. m.* whim, caprice.
 Captif, *ve. a. s.* captive.
 Captivité, *s. f.* captivity.
 Car, *c. for,* because.
 Caractère, *s. m.* character, style.
 Caractéristique, *c. s.* characteristic.
 Caravage, *Caravagio*.
 Carrière, *s. f.* career.
 Carrosse, *s. m.* a coach.
 Carthage, *Carthage*.
 Cascade, *s. f.* cascade.
 Caton, *Cato*.
 Cavalier, *s. m.* gentleman, horse man.
 Cause, *s. f.* cause, reason.
 Causer, *v. n.* to cause, talk.
 Causeur, *se. s.* a babbler.
 Ce, Cet, Cette, *pr.* this, that, it.
 Ceci, *pr.* this, these.
 Céder, *v. a.* to cede, yield, resign.
 Cédre, *s. m.* cedar.
 Ceindre, *v. a.* to gird.
 Cela, *pr.* that, this.
 Célébration, *s. f.* solemnity.
 Célèbre, *a.* famous, eminent.
 Célébrer, *v. a.* to celebrate.
 Céleste, *a.* celestial, heavenly.
 Celle, *pr. f.* she, that.
 Cellerier, *e. s.* caterer.
 Celui, *pr.* he, that, him.
 Celui-ci, Celle-ci, *this*.
 Celui-là, Celle-là, *that*.
 Cent, *a.* hundred. —, *s. m.* a hundred.
 Centre, *s. m.* centre.
 Cependant, *adv.* nevertheless, yet.
 Cercle, *s. m.* a circle.

- Cercueil, *s. m. a coffin.*
 Cérémonie, *s. f. ceremony, rite.*
 Cerf, *s. m. a stag.*
 Certain, *e. a. certain, sure.*
 Certainement, *adv. certainly.*
 Cerveau, *s. m. the brain.*
 Ces, *pr. these, those.*
 César, *Cæsar.*
 Cesse, *s. f. ceasing, intermission.*
 Cesser, *v. to cease, leave off.*
 C'est à dire, *that is to say.*
 Cet, Cette, *pr. this, that.*
 Ceux, Celles, *pr. these, those.*
 Ceux-là, *pr. those.*
 Chacal, *s. m. jackal.*
 Chacun, *e. pr. every one, each.*
 Chagrin, *s. m. grief, vexation.*
 —, *e. morose, sad.*
 Chaîne, *s. f. chain.*
 Chair, *s. f. flesh.*
 Chaleur, *s. f. heat, warmth.*
 Chambre, *s. f. chamber, room.*
 Chameau, *s. m. a camel.*
 Champ, *s. f. a field.*
 Chancelant, *e. a. unsteady.*
 Changeant, *e. a. changeable.*
 Changement, *s. m. change.*
 Changer, *v. a. to change, alter.*
 Chanson, *s. f. a song.*
 Chant, *s. m. singing, tune, canto, song.*
 Chanter, *v. a. to sing.*
 Chaos, *s. m. chaos, confusion.*
 Chapeau, *s. m. a hat.*
 Chapelet, *s. m. chaplet, rosary.*
 Chaque, *pr. each, every.*
 Chardon, *s. m. thistle.*
 Charge, *s. f. employment, place, office.*
 Charger, *v. a. to load.*
 Charité, *s. f. charity, alms.*
 Charme, *s. m. charm.*
 Charrette, *s. f. a cart.*
 Chasser, *v. a. to hunt, drive away.*
 Chaste, *a. chaste, pure, neat.*
 Chat, *s. m. cat.*
 Château, *s. m. a castle, seat.*
 Chaudeau, *s. m. caudle.*
 Chaume, *s. m. stubble, thatch.*
 Chaumière, *s. f. a thatched cottage.*
 Chaumine, *s. m. small cottage.*
 Chauve-souris, *s. f. a bat.*
 Chef, *s. m. head, chief, leader.*
 Chemin, *s. m. way, road.*
 Cheminer, *v. n. to walk, go.*
 Chemise, *s. f. shirt, shift.*
 Cher, *e. a. dear.*
 Chercher, *v. a. to seek.*
 Chère, *s. f. cheer, treat.*
 Chèrement, *adv. dearly.*
 Chérir, *v. a. to cherish, love.*
 Cheval, *s. m. a horse.*
 Cheveu, *s. m. a hair.* [with.
 Chez, *prep. at, or to one's house,*
 Chien, *s. m. a dog.*
 Chillon, *Chillon.* [cy.
 Chimère, *s. f. chimera, idle fan-*
 Choisir, *v. a. to choose.*
 Choix, *s. m. choice.*
 Choquant, *e. a. shocking, offensive.*
 Chose, *s. f. thing.*
 Chrétien, *ne, a. s. Christian.*
 Christ, *s. m. Christ.*
 Ci, *adv. here.*
 Cicéron, *Cicero.*
 Ciel, *s. m. sky, heaven.*
 Ciment, *s. m. cement.*
 Cimetière, *s. f. a church-yard.*
 Cingler, *v. n. to sail before the wind.*
 Cinquante, *a. fifty.*
 Circonférence, *s. f. circumference.*

- Circonstance, *s. f. circumstance.*
 Ciron, *s. f. a handworm, mite.*
 Cirque, *s. m. circus.*
 Cité, *s. f. a city, town.*
 Citoyen, ne, *s. a citizen.*
 Civil, e, *a. civil.*
 Clair, e, *a. clear. —, adv. clearly.*
 Clairon, *s. m. clarion.*
 Clair-voyant, e, *a. clear-sighted.*
 Clarté, *s. f. clearness, light.*
 Classe, *s. f. class.*
 Climat, *s. m. climate, clime.*
 Cloche, *s. f. a bell.*
 Clocher, *s. m. steeple.*
 Cloître, *s. f. a cloister.*
 Clou, *s. m. nail.*
 Cœur, *s. m. the heart.*
 Coiffure, *s. f. a head-dress.*
 Coin, *s. m. corner.*
 Colère, *s. f. anger, wrath. —, a. passionate.*
 Colisée, *s. m. Colisæum.*
 Collecte, *s. f. collect, gathering.*
 Colline, *s. f. a hill.*
 Colombe, *s. f. a dove.*
 Colonie, *s. f. a colony, plantation.*
 Colonne, *s. f. a column, pillar.*
 Colosse, *s. m. colossus.*
 Combat, *s. m. a fight, battle.*
 Combattant, *s. m. a combatant.*
 Combattre, *v. to fight, combat.*
 Combien, *adv. how, how much.*
 Combler, *v. a. heap up, fill, crown.*
 Commandement, *s. m. commandment.*
 Commander, *v. a. to command, order.*
 Commandeur, *s. m. commander.*
 Comme, *c. adv. as, almost, how, as it were.*
 Commencer, *v. to begin.*
 Comment, *adv. how, why.*
 Commerçant, e, *a. trading.*
 Commerce, *s. m. intercourse.*
 Commettre, *v. a. to commit.*
 Commun, e, *a. common, mean, public.*
 Communiquer, *v. a. to communicate.*
 Compagne, *s. f. a female companion.*
 Compagnie, *s. f. company.*
 Compagnon, s. m. *companion, fellow.*
 Comparaison, *s. f. comparison.*
 Comparer, *v. a. to compare, confer.*
 Compassion, *s. f. compassion, pity.*
 Compère, *s. m. a gossip.*
 Compétiteur, *s. m. competitor, rival.*
 Complaisance, *s. f. complaisance, complacency.*
 Coinplaisant, e, *a. s. complaisant.*
 Complet, e, *a. complete, perfect.*
 Compliment, *s. m. compliment, ceremony.*
 Composition, *s. f. composition.*
 Comprendre, *v. a. to comprehend.*
 Compte, *s. m. account.*
 Compter, *v. a. to count, reckon.*
 Conception, *s. f. conception.*
 Concert, *s. m. concert.*
 Concevoir, *v. a. to conceive.*
 Concitoyen, *s. m. fellow citizen.*
 Conclusion, *s. f. conclusion.*
 Concours, *s. m. concurrence.*
 Condamner, *v. a. to condemn.*
 Condition, *s. f. condition.*
 Conduire, *v. a. to conduct.*

- Conduite, *s. f. conduct.*
 Confiance, *s. f. confidence, trust.*
 Confier, *v. a. to entrust.*
 Confins, *s. m. pl.—confines.*
 Confirmer, *v. a. to confirm.*
 Confondre, *v. a. to confound.*
 Conformation, *s. f. conformation.*
 Conformité, *s. f. conformity, likeness.*
 Confusion, *s. f. confusion, disorder.*
 Congé, *s. m. leave.*
 Conjurer, *v. a. to conjure, entreat.*
 Connaitre, *v. a. to know.*
 Conquérir, *v. a. to conquer.*
 Conquête, *s. f. conquest.*
 Consacrer, *v. a. to consecrate, devote.*
 Conscience, *s. f. conscience, consciousness.*
 Conseiller, *v. a. to counsel, advise.*
 Consentement, *s. m. consent.*
 Conséquence, *s. f. consequence.*
 Conserver, *v. a. to preserve, serve, keep in pay.*
 Considérable, *a. considerable.*
 Considérer, *v. a. to consider.*
 Consister, *v. a. to consist, lie.*
 Consolation, *s. f. consolation, comfort.*
 Consoler, *v. a. to comfort.*
 Consommer, *v. a. to consume, mate.*
 Constamment, *adv. with constancy, constantly.* [ness.
 Constance, *s. f. constancy, firmness.*
 Constant, *e. a. constant.*
 Constantinople, *Constantinople.*
 Consumer, *v. a. to consume, waste.*
 Conte, *s. m. story, tale.*
 Contemplation, *s. f. contemplation.*
 Contempler, *v. a. contemplate.*
 Content, *e. a. contented, pleased.*
 Contenter, *v. a. to content, satisfy, please.*
 Conter, *v. a. to relate.*
 Conteur, *se, s. a teller.*
 Continent, *s. m. main land.*
 Continuel, *le, a. continual.*
 Continuellement, *adv. continually.* [on.
 Continuer, *v. a. to continue, go on.*
 Contour, *s. m. contour, outline.*
 Contraindre, *v. a. to constrain.*
 Contraire, *s. m. contrary.*
 Contraste, *s. m. contrast.*
 Contraster, *v. a. to contrast.*
 Contre, *prep. against.*
 Contrée, *s. f. country, region.*
 Contrefaire, *v. a. to counterfeit, ape, feign.*
 Convenir, *v. n. to agree, suit.*
 Conversation, *s. f. conversation.*
 Converser, *v. n. to converse.*
 Convier, *v. a. to invite.*
 Copie, *s. f. a copy.*
 Corbinelli, *Corbinelli.*
 Corne, *s. f. horn.*
 Corps, *s. m. a body.*
 Corriger, *v. a. to correct.*
 Corrompre, *v. a. to corrupt.*
 Cortez, *Cortez.*
 Côte, *s. f. coast.*
 Coté, *s. m. side.*
 Côteau, *s. m. hillock.*
 Cou, *s. m. the neck.*
 Couche, *s. f. a bed.*
 (se) Coucher, *v. r. to lie down.*
 Coulant, *e. a. fluent, flowing.*
 Couler, *v. n. to flow, run.* Se
 Couler, *v. r. to slip along.*

- Couleur, *s. f.* color, suit at play.
 Couleurs, *s. f. pl.* livery.
 Coup, *s. m.* blow, stroke, shot.
 Coupe, *s. f.* cup.
 Cour, *s. f.* court.
 Courage, *s. m.* courage, heart.
 Courageux, *se, a.* courageous.
 Courber, *v. a.* to bend, bow.
 Courir, *v. n.* to run.
 Couronne, *s. f.* a crown.
 Couronner, *v. a.* to crown.
 Courroucer, *v. a.* to irritate.
 Courroux, *s. m.* wrath.
 Cours, *s. m.* course.
 Course, *s. f.* race, course.
 Coursier, *s. m.* courser, steed.
 Court, *e. a.* short, brief.
 Coûter, *v. n.* to cost.
 Coutume, *s. f.* custom.
 Couvert, *e. a.* covered.
 Couvrir, *v. a.* to cover, conceal.
 Cracher, *v. a.* to spit.
 Craindre, *v. a.* to fear, dread.
 Crainte, *s. f.* fear, awe.
 Craintif, *ve. a.* fearful, timorous.
 (se) Cramponner, *v. a.* to cling to anything.
 Crapuleux, *se. a.* intemperate.
 Créateur, *s. m.* Creator. —, *a.* creative.
 Création, *s. f.* creation.
 Créature, *s. f.* creature.
 Crédit, *s. m.* credit, interest.
 Créer, *v. a.* to create.
 Créneau, *s. m.* battlement.
 Creuser, *v. a.* to dig, drive into.
 Creux, *s. m.* hollow. —, *se, a.* hollow.
 Cri, *s. m.* cry.
 Crier, *v. n.* to cry out.
 Crime, *s. m.* crime, sin.
 Crinière, *s. f.* horse's mane.
 Critique, *a.* critical. —, *s. f.* criticism.
 Croire, *v. a.* to believe, think.
 (se) Croire, *v. r.* to suppose one has.
 Croiser, *v. a.* to cross.
 Croître, *v. n.* to grow.
 Croquer, *v. n.* to cranch, devour.
 Croyant, *s. m.* a believer.
 Cruel, *le. a.* cruel, hard.
 Cueillir, *v. a.* to gather.
 Cuir, *s. m.* leather, hide.
 Cuirasse, *s. f.* a cuirass.
 Culte, *s. m.* worship.
 Cupidité, *s. f.* cupidity.
 Curiosité, *s. f.* curiosity.
 Cuver, *v. n.* to work.
 Cygne, *s. m.* swan.
 Cyprès, *s. m.* cypress-tree.

D.

- D'abord, at first.
 Dalle, *s. f.* a flag (flat stone.)
 Dame, *s. f.* lady.
 Danger, *s. m.* danger.
 Dangereux, *se. a.* dangerous.
 Dans, *prep.* in.
 Danser, *v. n.* to dance.
 Darder, *v. a.* to dart, shoot.*
 Dater, *v. a.* to date.
 Datte, *s. f.* date (fruit.)
 Davantage, *adv.* more.
 D'autre, others. [some.
 De, *prep.* of, from, to, with, by,
 Débat, *s. m.* debate, strife.
 Se débattre, *v. r.* to struggle.
 Débauche, *s. f.* debauchery.
 Débile, *a.* feeble.
 Débiter, *v. a.* to utter, issue.
 Debout, *adv.* up, standing.
 Débris, *s. m.* ruins, relics, wreck.
 Déceler, *v. a.* to detect, disclose, betray.

- Décence, *s. f. decency, decorum.*
 Décerner, *v. a. to decree, ordain.*
 Déchainer, *v. a. to unchain.*
 Déchirer, *v. a. to tear.*
 Déchoir, *v. n. to fall.*
 Décider, *v. to decide.*
 Déclamer, *v. to declaim.*
 Déclarer, *v. n. to declare.*
 Décomposer, *v. a. to decompose, resolve.*
 Décorer, *v. a. to decorate, adorn.*
 Décourager, *v. a. to discourage, depress.*
 Découvert, *e. a. uncovered, open.*
 Découverte, *s. f. discovery.*
 Découvrir, *v. a. to uncover, discover, reveal.* Se—, *v. r. to make one's self known.*
 Décrépit, *e. a. decrepit, crazy.*
 Décret, *s. m. decree.*
 Décrire, *v. a. to describe.*
 Dédaigneux, *se. a. disdainful, scornful.*
 Dédain, *s. m. disdain, scorn.*
 Dedans, *adv. prep. in, within,* —, *s. m. the inside.*
 Déesse, *s. f. goddess.*
 Défaillir, *v. n. to fail, swoon.*
 Défaut, *s. m. defect, blemish, fault.*
 Défectueux, *se. a. defective.*
 Défendre, *v. a. to defend.*
 Défense, *s. f. defence.*
 Dérèrence, *s. f. regard.*
 Défiance, *s. f. distrust, suspicion.*
 Défigurer, *v. a. to disfigure.*
 Dégager, *v. n. to disengage.*
 Dégoût, *s. m. disgust.*
 Dégrader, *v. a. to degrade, waste.*
 Degré, *s. m. step, degree.*
 Déguisement, *s. m. disguise.*
 Dehors, *s. m. outside, outworks.*
 Déjà, *adv. already.*
 De-là, *adv. from thence.*
 Délablement, *s. m. ruinous condition.*
 Délabrer, *v. a. to impair, ruin.*
 Délasser, *v. a. to refresh.*
 Délicat, *e. a. delicate, nice.*
 Délicatesse, *s. f. delicacy.*
 Délire, *s. m. delirium.*
 Demain, *s. m. adv.— tomorrow.*
 Demander, *v. a. to demand, ask.*
 Démarche, *s. f. gait.* [ceive.
 Démêler, *v. a. to discover, per-*
 Demeure, *s. f. dwelling, abode.*
 Demeurer, *v. n. to continue, stay,* remain. [half.
 Demi, *e. a. half, demi.* —, *adv.*
 Démocratie, *s. f. democracy.*
 Demoiselle, *s. f. a miss.*
 Démon, *s. m. a demon, devil.*
 Démosthène, *Demosthenes.*
 Dépasser, *v. a. to surpass.*
 Dépendre, *v. n. to depend on.*
 Dépens, *s. m. pl.—expense, cost.*
 Dépense, *s. f. expense.*
 Dépit, *s. m. vexation, despite.*
 Déplacer, *v. a. to displace.*
 Déplaire, *v. n. to displease.*
 Déployer, *v. a. to display.*
 Déposer, *v. n. to deposit.*
 Dépositaire, *s. depository.*
 Dépouiller, *v. a. to strip, cast off.*
 Dépouvoir, *v. a. to leave des-* titute, deprive.
 Depuis, *adv. prep. — since, af-* ter. —long temps, this great while.
 Derechef, *adv. again, anew.*
 Dernier, *e. a. last.* —, *s. m. the last, the utmost.*
 Dérober, *to rob, conceal, de-* prive, take.
 Dérouler, *v. a. to unroll.*
 Dérrière, *prep. behind.*

- Dès, *prep. from.*
 Des, *contr. of De les.*
 Dès que, *c. when, since, as soon as.*
 Désagrément, *s. m. disagreeableness.*
 Désarmer, *v. a. to disarm.*
 Descendre, *v. n. to descend.*
 Descriptif, *ve, a. descriptive.*
 Description, *s. f. description.*
 Désert, *s. m. desert, wilderness.*
 Désertion, *s. f. desertion.*
 Désespoir, *s. m. despair, grief.*
 Deshonoré, *v. a. to disgrace, disparage.*
 Désir, *s. m. desire, wish.*
 Désirer, *v. a. to desire, wish, long for.*
 Désolation, *s. f. desolation, extreme grief.*
 Désoler, *v. a. to afflict, lay waste.*
 Despote, *s. m. a despot, a scourge.*
 Despotisme, *s. m. despotism.*
 Despréaux, *Despreaux.*
 Dessécher, *v. a. to wither, dry up.*
 Dessein, *s. m. design.*
 Dessous, *adv. prep. — under beneath.*
 Dessus, *adv. prep. above, upon.*
 Destin, *s. m. destiny, fate.*
 Destination, *s. f. destination, appointment.*
 Destinée, *s. f. destiny.*
 Destiner, *v. to design.*
 Détacher, *v. a. to detach.*
 Détail, *s. m. particular.*
 Détonner, *v. a. to jar, be out of tune.*
 De Toulon, *De Toulon.*
 Détour, *s. m. winding,*
 Détourner, *v. a. to turn aside.*
 De Troyes, *De Troyes.*
 Détruire, *v. a. to destroy, demolish.*
 Dette, *s. f. debt.*
 Devancer, *v. a. to outstrip.*
 Devant, *adv. prep. before.*
 Développement, *s. m. unfolding.*
 Développer, *v. a. to unfold.*
 Devenir, *v. a. to become.*
 Deuil, *s. m. mourning, sorrow.*
 Deviner, *v. a. to divine, guess.*
 Devoir, *s. m. duty.*
 —, *v. a. to owe, must, ought.*
 Dévorer, *v. a. to devour, consume.*
 Dévotion, *s. f. devotion.*
 Dévouer, *v. a. to devote, dedicate.*
 Deux, *a. two.*
 Diction, *s. f. diction, style.*
 Dieu, *s. m. God.*
 Différemment, *adv. differently.*
 Différence, *s. f. difference.*
 Différent, *e. a. different, unlike, various.*
 Difficile, *a. difficult.*
 Difformité, *s. f. deformity, ugliness.*
 Diffus, *e. a. diffuse.*
 Digérer, *v. a. to digest.*
 Digne, *a. worthy.*
 Dignement, *adv. worthily.*
 Dignité, *s. f. dignity.*
 Digue, *s. f. a dyke, bank, pier.*
 Diligent, *e. a. diligent.*
 Dîné, Dîner, *s. m. dinner.*
 Dire, *v. a. to tell, say, speak.*
 Diriger, *v. a. to direct, rule.*
 Disciple, *s. m. disciple, pupil.*
 Discipline, *s. f. discipline.*
 Discourir, *v. n. to discourse.*
 Discours, *s. m. discourse.*

- Discret, *e. a. discreet, wary.*
 Disparaître, *v. n. to disappear.*
 Dispenser, *v. a. to distribute.*
 Disperser, *v. a. to disperse, scatter.*
 (se) Disposer, *v. r. to get ready.*
 Disproportion, *s. f. disproportion.*
 Disputer, *v. a. dispute, contend.*
 Dissimulation, *s. f. dissimulation.*
 Dissiper, *v. n. to dissipate.*
 Distance, *s. f. distance.*
 Distinctif, *ve. a. distinctive.*
 Distinction, *s. f. distinction.*
 Distinguer, *v. a. to distinguish, note.*
 Distribuer, *v. a. to distribute.*
 Divers, *e. a. diverse.*
 Divertir, *v. a. to divert, recreate.*
 Divertissement, *s. m. diversion.*
 Divin, *e. a. divine.*
 Diviser, *v. a. to divide.*
 Docile, *a. docile.*
 Dogmatique, *a. dogmatical.*
 Doigt, *s. m. a finger.*
 Dolent, *e. doleful, querulous.*
 Domain, *s. m. domain.*
 Domination, *s. f. dominion.*
 Dominer, *v. n. to rule, command.*
 Dommage, *s. m. damage, loss.*
 Dompter, Domter, *v. a. to subdue, tame.*
 Don, *s. m. a gift.*
 Donc, *c. therefore, then.*
 Donner, *v. a. to give, hit, tumble, strike.*
 Dont, *pr. whereof, of whom, of which, with which, whose.*
 Dorer, *v. a. to gild.*
 Dormir, *v. n. to sleep.*
 Dos, *s. m. back.*
 Doter, *v. a. to endow.*
 D'où, *pr. from whence.*
 Double, *a. double.*
 Doublement, *adv. doubly.*
 Doucement, *adv. softly, gently.*
 Douceur, *s. f. sweetness, softness, mildness.* Douceurs, *pl. sweet things.*
 Douer, *v. a. to endow.*
 Douleur, *s. f. pain, grief.*
 Doute, *s. m. doubt, fear.*
 Douter, *v. n. to doubt, question.*
 Douteux, *se, a. doubtful.*
 Doux, *a. m. Douce, a. f. sweet, mild, easy, affable.*
 Douze, *a. twelve.*
 Drap, *s. m. cloth, sheet.*
 Drapé, *part. arranged, worn.*
 Draper, *v. a. to hang.*
 Draperie, *s. f. drapery.*
 Dresser, *v. a. to raise.*
 Droit, *e. a. right. —, s. m. right, law. —, adv. straight, directly.*
 Du, *art. some, of the, from, from the. Du moins, at least.*
 Duc, *s. m. duke.*
 Du Plessis, *Du Plessis.*
 Dur, *e. a. firm.*
 Durement, *adv. hardily.*
 Durable, *a. lasting.*
 Durant, *prep. during.*
 Durer, *v. n. to last.*

E.

- Eau, *s. f. water, rain.*
 Ebranler, *v. a. to shake, stagger.*
 Écarté, *a. remote, retired.*
 s'Écarter, *v. r. to swerve.*
 Echafaud, *s. m. a scaffold.*
 Echapper, *v. a. to escape.*

- Echauffer, *v. a. to heat.*
 s'Echauffer, *v. a. to grow angry.*
 Echo, *s. m. an echo.*
 Eclair, *s. m. lightning. Comme un éclair, in a trice.*
 Eclaircir, *v. a. to brighten.*
 Eclairer, *v. a. to light, enlighten, sparkle.*
 Eclat, *s. m. pomp, lustre, splendour.*
 Eclatant, *e. a. shining, bright.*
 Eclater, *v. n. to glitter.*
 Eclipser, *v. a. to eclipse.*
 s'Eclipser, *v. r. to vanish away, to be eclipsed.*
 Eclorre, *v. a. to come to light.*
 Eclore, *a. bloomed.*
 Ecole, *s. f. a school.*
 Econoine, *a. s. saving, economical.*
 Ecorce, *s. f. bark, shell, outside.*
 Ecouler, *v. a. to run, or flow out.*
 s'Ecouler, *v. r. to slide away.*
 Ecouter, *v. a. to hear, to listen.*
 s'Ecrier, *v. r. to cry out, exclaim.*
 Ecrire, *v. a. to write.*
 Ecriture, *s. m. writing, Scripture.*
 Ecrivain, *s. m. a writer.*
 Ecrouler, *v. n. to shake down, fall down.*
 Ecu, *s. m. crown-piece.*
 Ecueil, *s. m. a rock, sands.*
 Ecume, *s. f. scum, froth, foam.*
 Edifice, *s. m. edifice, fabric.*
 Effacer, *v. a. to efface.*
 Effectivement, *adv. really.*
 Effet, *s. m. effect, fact, deed, execution.*
 Effort, *s. m. effort.*
 Effrayer, *v. a. to frighten, scare.*
 Effréné, *e. a. unruly.*
 Effroi, *s. m. fright, terror.*
 Effroyable, *a. frightful.*
 Egal, *e. a. s. equal, even.*
 Egalement, *adv. equally, alike.*
 Egaler, *v. a. to equal.*
 Egard, *s. m. regard, respect.*
 Eglise, *s. f. a church.*
 Egorger, *v. a. to slaughter.*
 Egypte, *Egypt.*
 Egyptien, *ne, Egyptian.*
 Eh! *i. ah!*
 Elancer, *v. n. to rush, shoot forwards.*
 Elégance, *s. f. elegance.*
 Elégant, *e. a. elegant, fine.*
 Elégie, *s. f. an elegy.*
 Élément, *s. m. element.*
 Elévation, *s. f. elevation, ferment, exaltation.*
 Elever, *v. a. to raise, exalt.*
 s'Elever, *v. r. to rise, arise.*
 Elle, *pr. f. she, her, it. Elles, pl. they, them.*
 Elocution, *s. f. elocution, style.*
 Eloigné, *e. a. removed, distant.*
 Eloignement, *s. m. aversion, estrangement.*
 Eloigner, *v. a. to remove, estrange.*
 Eloquence, *s. f. eloquence.*
 Eloquent, *e. a. eloquent.*
 Email, *s. m. enamel.*
 Embarquer, *v. a. to embark.*
 Embarras, *s. m. embarrassment.*
 Embarrasser, *v. a. to embarrass, encumber.*
 Embellir, *v. a. to embellish, adorn.*
 s'Embourber, *v. a. to be mired, sink.*
 Embrasser, *v. a. to embrace, comprehend, encompass.*
 Emotion, *s. f. emotion.*

- Emousser, *v. a. to blunt, dull.*
 s'Emparer, *v. r. to seize.*
 Empêcher, *v. a. to hinder, prevent.*
 s'Empêcher, *v. r. to forbear.*
 Empester, *v. a. to infect.*
 Emphase, *s. f. emphasis.*
 Empire, *s. m. empire, command, sway.*
 Emploi, *s. m. employment, office.*
 Employeur, *v. a. to use, employ.*
 Empocher, *v. a. to pocket.*
 Empoisonner, *v. a. to poison.*
 Emporter, *v. a. to carry away.*
 Empreinte, *s. f. impression, stamp.*
 Empressé, *e. a. eager, in haste.*
 Emprunter, *v. a. to borrow.*
 En, *prep. in, into.*
 En arrière, *adv. behind.*
 En haut, *adv. above, on high.*
 En, *pr. — of him, of her, of them, of it, on it, from it, for it, at it, to it, it, any, some.*
 Enceinte, *s. f. enclosure, compass. [nect.]*
 Enchaîner, *v. a. to chain, contain.*
 Enchanter, *v. a. to enchant, charm, delight.*
 Enchanteur, *a. enchanting.*
 Enclore, *v. a. to enclose.*
 Encore, *adv. yet, again, even, besides, still, also.*
 Endormir, *v. a. to lull asleep.*
 s'Endormir, *v. r. to fall asleep.*
 Endroit, *s. m. a place, part.*
 Énéide, *s. f. Æneid (poem).*
 Énergie, *s. f. energy, force.*
 Enerver, *v. a. to enervate.*
 Enfance, *s. f. infancy.*
 Enfant, *s. m. child, infant.*
 Enfanter, *v. a. to bring forth.*
 Enfer, *s. m. hell.*
 Enfermer, *v. a. to shut.*
 Enfin, *adv. in fine, at last.*
 Enflammé, *part. fiery.*
 Enflammer, *v. a. to inflame.*
 Enfler, *v. to swell, puff up.*
 Enfoncé, *e. a. sunk.*
 s'Enfoncer, *v. r. to plunge one's-self wholly into, sink.*
 Enfouir, *v. a. to hide in the ground.*
 s'Enfuir, *v. r. run away. —, v. a. to disappear.*
 Engagement, *s. m. engagement.*
 Engager, *v. a. to enlist, engage.*
 Engourdir, *v. a. to benumb, dull.*
 Enivrer, *v. n. to intoxicate.*
 Eujoué, *e. a. cheerful, gay.*
 Ennemi, *e. a. s. enemy, foe.*
 Ennui, *s. m. tediousness, vexation, heaviness.*
 Ennuyeux, *se. a. s. wearisome.*
 Enrichir, *v. r. to enrich.*
 Enseignement, *s. m. instruction.*
 Enseigner, *v. a. to teach.*
 Ensemble, *adv. together.*
 Enserer, *v. a. to shut up, contain.*
 Ensevelir, *v. a. to bury, inter.*
 Ensuite, *adv. afterwards, then.*
 Entasser, *v. a. to heap up.*
 Entendre, *v. a. to understand, mean.*
 Entendu, *e. a. knowing.*
 Enterrer, *v. a. to bury, inter.*
 Enthousiasme, *s. m. enthusiasm.*
 Enthousiaste, *s. m. enthusiast.*
 Entier, *e. a. entire, whole.*
 Entièrement, *adv. — entirely, wholly.*
 Entourer, *v. a. to surround.*

- Entrainer, *v. a. to drag, hurry away, draw after.*
 Entraves, *s. f. pl. — shackles, fetters.*
 Entre, *prep. between, among, in.*
 Entreprise, *s. f. enterprise.*
 Entrer, *v. n. to enter, go in.*
 Entretenir, *v. a. to converse, preserve, maintain.*
 Entretien, *s. m. discourse.*
 Entrevoir, *v. a. have a glimpse of.*
 Entr'ouvert, *part. half open,*
 s'Entr'ouvrir, *v. r. to open, gape.*
 Envelopper, *v. a. to wrap up, surround.*
 Envers, *prep. towards, to.*
 Envi, *s. m. — à l'envi, with emulation.*
 Envie, *s. f. envy.*
 Envier, *v. a. to envy.*
 Envieux, *se. a. s. envious.*
 Environner, *v. a. to environ, surround.*
 Envisager, *v. a. to view, consider.*
 Envoler, *v. n. — s'Envoler, v. r. to fly away.*
 Envoyer, *v. a. to send.*
 Epais, *se. a. thick, dull.*
 Epargne, *s. f. saving.*
 Epars, *e. a. scattered, loose.*
 Epaule, *s. f. shoulder.*
 Epée, *s. f. a sword.*
 Epervier, *s. m. sparrow-hawk.*
 Epine, *s. f. a thorn.*
 Epithète, *s. f. an epithet.*
 Epître, *s. f. an epistle.*
 Epouse, *s. f. a spouse, consort.*
 Epouvantable, *a. dreadful.*
 Epouvante, *s. f. fright, terror.*
 Epouvanter, *v. a. to frighten.*
 Epoux, *s. m. spouse.*
 Epreuve, *s. f. trial, proof.*
 Eprouver, *v. a. to try, experience.*
 Epuiser, *v. a. to exhaust.*
 Epurer, *v. a. to refine.*
 Equité, *s. f. equity, justice.*
 Errant, *e. a. straying, wandering.*
 Errer, *v. n. to wander.*
 Erreur, *s. f. an error, folly.*
 Erudition, *s. f. erudition, learning.*
 Esclavage, *s. m. slavery, bondage.*
 Esclave, *s. a slave.*
 Espace, *s. m. a space, distance.*
 Espagnol, *Spaniard.*
 Espèce, *s. m. species, kind.*
 Espérance, *s. f. hope, trust.*
 Espérer, *v. a. to hope.*
 Espoir, *s. m. hope, trust.*
 Esprit, *s. m. spirit, mind, genius, sense, wit.*
 Essayer, *v. to try, attempt.*
 Estimer, *v. a. to esteem, value.*
 Estomac, *s. m. the stomach.*
 Et, *c. and.*
 Etablir, *v. a. to establish.*
 Etagé, *a. storied.*
 Etaler, *v. a. to make parade of.*
 Etat, *s. m. state.*
 s'Eteindre, *v. r. to go out.*
 Etendard, *s. m. standard, banner.*
 Etendre, *v. a. to extend, stretch.*
 s'Etendre, *v. r. to stretch one's self, reach.*
 Etendue, *s. f. extent, extension.*
 Eternel, *le. a. eternal, endless.*
 Eterniser, *v. a. to eternize.*
 Eternité, *s. f. eternity.*
 Eternuer, *v. n. to sneeze.*
 Etincelle, *s. f. a spark.*
 Etinceler, *v. n. to sparkle.*

- Etoffe, *s. f.* stuff, cloth.
 Etoile, *s. f.* a star.
 Etonnant, *e. a.* wonderful, amazing, strange.
 Etonner, *v. a.* to astonish, surprise. — *s'Etonner, v. r.* to wonder.
 Etouffer, *v. a.* to stifle, suppress.
 Etourdi, *e. a.* hair-brained.
 Etourdi, *e. s.* blunderer.
 Etrange, *a.* strange.
 Etranger, *e. s.* a foreigner, stranger.
 Estrangler, *v. a.* to strangle.
 Etre, *v. n.* to be.—*Etre, s. m. a* being, existence.
 Etroit, *e. a.* narrow.
 Etude, *s. f.* study.
 Evangile, *s. m.* the gospel.
 s'Evanouir, *v. r.* to swoon, vanish.
 Eveiller, *v. a.* to awaken, awake, rouse.
 Evénement, *s. m.* event.
 Eviter, *v. a.* to avoid, shun.
 Europe, *Europe.*
 Eux, *pr. them, they.* — *mêmes, themselves.*
 Exact, *e. a.* exact, accurate.
 Exagération, *s. f.* amplifying, exaggeration.
 Exagérer, *v. a.* to exaggerate.
 Exagéreux, *se, s.* exaggerator.
 Exalter, *v. a.* to exalt.
 Examen, *s. m.* examination.
 Examiner, *v. a.* to examine.
 Excepté, *adv.* except, save.
 Excès, *s. m.* excess.
 Excessif, *ve. a.* excessive.
 Exciter, *v. a.* to excite, kindle.
 Exécuter, *v. a.* to execute.
 Exécution, *s. f.* execution.
 Exemple, *s. m. f.* example, instance.
 Exercer, *v. a.* to exercise, train, practise. [*tice.*]
 Exercice, *s. m.* exercise, practice.
 Exiger, *v. a.* to require, exact.
 Exil, *s. m.* banishment, exile.
 Existence, *s. f.* existence, being.
 Exister, *v. a.* to exist, be.
 Expérience, *s. f.* experience.
 Expirer, *v. n.* to expire, die.
 Expliquer, *v. a.* to explain.
 Exploit, *s. m.* exploit, achievement.
 Expression, *s. f.* expression.
 Exprimer, *v. a.* to express.
 Extérieur, *s. m.* the outside.
 Extrait, *s. m.* extract, abstract.
 Extraordinaire, *a.* extraordinary, uncommon.
 Extrême, *s. m.* extreme.
 Extrémité, *s. f.* extremity, utmost part.

F.

- Fabert, *Fabert.*
 Fable, *s. f.* fable, story.
 Face, *s. f.* face, state.
 Facile, *a.* easy.
 Facilité, *s. f.* facility, easiness.
 Façon, *s. f.* manner.
 Factieux, *se. a.* factious.
 Faculté, *s. f.* faculty, power.
 Faï, *Fai.*
 Faible, *weak.*
 Faiblesse, *s. f.* weakness.
 Faillir, *v. n.* to fail.
 Faim, *s. f.* hunger.
 Faire, *v. n.* to make, do.
 Fait, *s. m.* fact, feat.
 Faïte, *s. m.* top, pinnacle.

- Falloir, *r. imp. to be needful.*
 Fameux, *se. a. famous.*
 Familier, *e. a. familiar, free.*
 Famille, *s. f. family.*
 Famine, *s. f. famine, dearth.*
 Fanatisme, *s. m. fanaticism.*
 Faner, *v. a. to fade.*
 (se) Faner, *v. r. to wither, fade.*
 Fanfare, *s. f. a flourish of a trumpet.*
 Fantaisie, *s. f. fancy, mind.*
 Fantôme, *s. m. phantom.*
 Fardeau, *s. m. burden.*
 Farouche, *a. wild, stern.*
 Fasciner, *v. a. to enchant, fascinate.*
 Faste, *s. m. pageantry, pomp.*
 Fatal, *e. fatal.*
 Fatalité, *s. f. fatality, destiny.*
 Fatigue, *s. f. fatigue.*
 Fatiguer, *v. a. to tire, fatigue.*
 Faveur, *s. f. favor.*
 Favorable, *a. favorable, kind.*
 Favorin, *Favorinus.*
 Fausset, *s. m. falsetto.*
 Fausseté, *s. f. falsehood.*
 Faute, *s. f. fault, error.*
 Fauteuil, *s. m. an elbow chair.*
 Fauve, *a. fallow.*
 Faux, Fausse, *a. false.*
 Fécond, *e. a. fruitful, teeming, fertile.*
 Féconder, *v. a. to fertilize.*
 Feindre, *v. to feign.*
 Félicité, *s. f. felicity, bliss.*
 Femme, *s. f. a woman, wife.*
 Fendre, *v. a. to cleave, crack.*
 Fénélon, *Fenelon.*
 Fer, *s. m. iron, sword.*
 Ferme, *a. firm, steady, resolute.*
 Fermer, *v. a. to shut, close, stop.*
 Fermeté, *s. f. firmness, courage.*
 Féroce, *a. fierce, savage.*
 Férocity, *s. f. ferocity.*
 Fertile, *a. fertile.*
 Fête, *s. f. a feast, festival.*
 Feu, *s. m. fire.*
 Feu, *e. a. late, deceased.*
 Fève, *s. f. bean.*
 Feuille, *s. f. leaf.*
 Fiction, *s. f. fiction, lie.*
 Fidèle, *a. faithful.*
 Fier, *e. a. proud.*
 Fierté, *s. f. pride, haughtiness.*
 Fièvre, *s. f. a fever, ague.*
 Figuier, *s. m. a fig-tree.*
 Figure, *s. f. figure, form, shape.*
 Figuré, *e, a. figurative.*
 Figurer, *v. a. to figure.*
 Filial, *e. a. filial.*
 Fille, *s. f. girl, maid, daughter.*
 Fils, *s. m. son, child, boy.*
 Filtrer, *v. a. to filtrate.*
 Fin, *s. f. end.*
 Finesse, *s. f. delicacy.*
 Finir, *v. a. to finish, end.*
 Firmament, *s. m. the firmament, sky.*
 Fixe, *a. fixed, steady.*
 Fixer, *v. a. to reach.*
 Flambeau, *s. m. a flambeau.*
 Flamme, *s. f. flame.*
 Flanc, *s. m. side.*
 Flatter, *v. a. to flatter, please, caress.*
 Flatteur, *se, a. s. flattering, flatterer.*
 Flèche, *s. f. arrow.*
 Flétrir, *v. to blemish, brand, wither.*
 Fleur, *s. f. a flower, blossom, bloom.*
 Fleuri, *a. flowery.*
 Fleurir, *v. n. to blossom, flourish.*
 Fleuve, *s. m. a large river.*
 Flocon, *s. m. flake.*

- Flore, *Flore*.
 Florence, *Florence*.
 Florentine, *Florentine*.
 Flot, *s. m. a wave, tide, clot*.
 Flotter, *v. n. to float*.
 Foi, *s. f. faith, evidence, fealty*.
 Fois, *s. f. time*.
 Folie, *s. f. folly*.
 Follement, *adv. madly, foolishly*.
 Fond, *s. m. bottom, fund*.
 Fondamental, *e. a. fundamental*.
 Fondement, *s. m. foundation, cause*.
 Fonds, *s. m. soil, stock*.
 Fontange, *s. f. a top-knot*.
 Fontenelle, *Fontenelle*.
 Force, *s. f. strength, force, power, energy*.
 Forcément, *adv. forcibly*.
 Forcené, *e. a. mad, madman*.
 Forcer, *v. a. to force*.
 Foret, *s. f. a forest*.
 Forger, *v. a. to forge, form*.
 Formation, *s. f. formation*.
 Forme, *s. f. form, shape*.
 Former, *v. a. to form*.
 Fort, *e. a. strong, stout, hard*.
 Fort, *adv. very, very much, hard*.
 Fortement, *adv. strongly, stoutly*. [en.
 Fortifier, *v. a. to fortify, strengthen*.
 Fortune, *s. f. fortune*.
 Fou, Fol, *le. a. mad. —, s. m. a fool, madman*.
 Foudre, *s. f. a thunder-bolt*.
 Foudroyant, *e. a. thundering, dreadful*.
 Foudroyer, *v. a. to thunder-strike*.
 Fouetter, *v. a. to lash*.
 Fougueux, *se. a. fiery, unruly, impetuous*.
 Fouille, *s. f. trenches*.
 Foule, *s. f. crowd, throng*.
 Fouler, *v. a. to tread, trample on, oppress*.
 Four, *s. m. oven*.
 Fournir, *v. a. to furnish, supply*.
 (se) Fourrer, *v. r. to intrude one's self*.
 Foyer, *s. m. a hearth*.
 Fragile, *a. frail, brittle*.
 Fragilité, *s. f. fragility, frailty*.
 Frais, Fraiche, *a. cool, fresh*.
 Français, *French*.
 France, *France*.
 Franchir, *v. a. to leap over*.
 Franchise, *s. f. frankness*.
 Frappant, *e. a. striking*.
 Frapper, *v. a. to strike, smite*.
 Fraternel, *le. a. brotherly*.
 Fraude, *s. f. fraud*.
 Frayer, *v. n. to open, show*.
 Frimas, *s. m. rime, hoar frost*.
 Frissonner, *v. n. to shiver, tremble*.
 Frivole, *a. frivolous, vain, trifling*.
 Froid, *s. m. cold, coldness*.
 Froidement, *adv. coldly*.
 Froncer, *v. a. to gather. —le sourcil, to frown*.
 Front, *s. m. forehead*.
 Frontière, *s. f. frontier*.
 Fruit, *s. m. fruit, advantage*.
 Fugitif, *ve. a. s. fugitive*.
 Fuir, *v. a. to flee, run away*.
 Fumée, *s. f. smoke*.
 Fumer, *v. to smoke*.
 Funèbre, *a. funeral*.
 Funeste, *a. fatal, unlucky*.
 Fureur, *s. f. fury, rage*.
 Furieux, *se. a. furious*.
 Furtivement, *adv. by stealth*.

G.

Gager, *v. a. to bet, wager.*
 Gagner, *v. a. to get, gain, win.*
 Gaieté, *s. f. gaiety, mirth.*
 Gain, *s. m. gain.*
 Galant, *e. a. genteel, clever.*
 Galata, *Galata.*
 Galerie, *s. f. gallery, balcony.*
 Galilée, *Galilee.*
 Gangréner, *v. r. to gangrene.*
 Garantir, *v. a. to warrant, protect.*
 Garçon, *s. m. a boy.*
 Garder, *v. a. to keep.*
 Gardien, *ne, s. a guardian.*
 Garnir, *v. a. to furnish, trim, adorn.*
 Gauche, *a. left.*
 Gazon, *s. m. green turf.*
 Géant, *e. s. giant.*
 Gémir, *v. n. to groan.*
 Gêner, *v. a. to clog, constrain, cramp.*
 Général, *s. m. a general, chief.*
 Général, *e. a. general.*
 Génération, *s. f. generation.*
 Généreux, *se. a. generous.*
 Genève, *Geneva.*
 Génie, *s. m. genius.*
 Genre, *s. m. race, kind, style.*
 Gens, *s. f. pl. folks, people.*
 Gent, *s. f. nation, tribe, people.*
 Geolier, *s. m. gaoler.*
 Germe, *s. m. bud, germ.*
 Geste, *s. m. gesture, action.*
 Gîte, *s. m. lodging.*
 Giton, *Giton.*
 Glacer, *v. a. to freeze, chill.*
 Glaive, *s. m. a sword, glaive.*
 Glisser, *v. n. to slip, slide, glide.*
 Globe, *s. m. a globe, the world.*
 Gloire, *s. f. glory.*
 Glorieux, *se. a. glorious.*

Gnide, *Cnidus.*
 Gondole, *s. f. gondola.*
 Gonfler, *v. a. to swell, puff up.*
 Gothique, *a. Gothic.*
 Gouffre, *s. m. abyss, pit, gulf.*
 Goût, *s. m. taste, fancy.*
 Goûter, *v. a. to taste, approve, relish.*
 Goutte, *s. f. drop.*
 Gouvernement, *s. m. government.*
 Gouverner, *v. a. to govern, rule.*
 Gracches, *pl. Gracchi.*
 Grâce, *s. f. Grace, favor, grace, pardon, thanks.*
 Gracieux, *se. a. kind, graceful.*
 Grade, *s. m. degree, grade.*
 Gradin, *s. m. a step.*
 Grain, *s. m. grain, berry.*
 Grammatical, *e. a. grammatical.*
 Grand, *e. a. great, large.*
 Grandeur, *s. f. greatness, honor.*
 Grandir, *s. f. to grow great or tall.*
 Granitique, *a. granite.*
 Grappe, *s. f. bunch, cluster.*
 Gratitude, *s. f. gratitude, gratefulness.*
 Grave, *a. grave, serious.*
 Graver, *v. a. to grave, etch.*
 Gravir, *v. n. to clamber up.*
 Gré, *s. m. accord, will.*
 Grec, Grèque, *a. s. Greek.*
 Grèce, *Greece.*
 Grêle, *a. slim, lank.*
 Griffé, *s. f. a claw, clutch.*
 Grimaçant, *part. grimacing, dissembling.*
 Gronder, *v. to growl, scold.*
 Gros, *se. a. big, large.*
 Grossier, *e. a. coarse, rough, rude.*
 Grotte, *s. f. grotto.*

Guéret, *s. m. fallow ground.*
 Guérir, *v. a. to cure, heal.*
 Guerre, *s. f. war.*
 Guerrier, *e. a. martial.*
 Guerrier, *s. m. soldier.*
 Guide, *s. m. guide, tutor.*
 Guider, *v. a. to guide, conduct.*
 Guttural, *e. a. guttural.*
 Gymnase, *s. m. college, gymnasium.*

H.

Habile, *a. able, clever, skilful.*
 Habileté, *s. f. ability, skill.*
 Habillement, *s. m. attire, clothes.*
 Habiller, *v. a. to dress, clothe.*
 Habit, *s. m. suit of clothes, garb, dress.*
 Habitant, *s. m. inhabitant.*
 Habiter, *v. a. to inhabit, live.*
 Habitude, *s. f. habit.*
 Haie, *s. f. hedge.*
 Haine, *s. f. hatred, grudge.*
 Hameau, *s. m. a hamlet.*
 Hardi, *e. a. bold, impudent.*
 Harmonie, *s. f. harmony.*
 Harmonieux, *se. adv. harmonious, melodious.*
 Hâter, *v. a. to hasten.*
 (se) Hâter, *v. r. to make haste.*
 Haut, *e. a. high.*
 Haut, *adv. high, aloud.*
 Hautain, *e. a. haughty, proud.*
 Hé bien, *well.*
 Hélas ! *int. alas !*
 Hercule Farnèse, *Farnese Hercules.*
 Hérissé, *e. a. bristling, thick-set.*
 Hérisser, *v. a. to bristle upon.*
 Héritage, *s. m. inheritance, estate.*

Héroïque, *a. heroic.*
 Héroïsme, *s. m. heroism.*
 Héros, *s. m. a hero.*
 Hêtre, *s. m. beech-tree.*
 Heure, *s. f. hour, time.*
 Heureux, *se, a. happy.*
 Hibou, *s. m. an owl.*
 Hideux, *se. a. hideous, ghastly.*
 Hier, *adv. yesterday.*
 Hirondelle, *s. f. a swallow.*
 Histoire, *s. f. history, story.*
 Historien, *e. s. an historian.*
 Historique, *a. historical.*
 Hiver, *s. m. winter, old age.*
 Hollande, *Holland.*
 Holocauste, *s. m. a burnt-offering.*
 Hommage, *s. m. homage.*
 Homme, *s. m. a man.*
 Honnête, *a. honest, civil, creditable, decent.*
 Honnêteté, *s. f. virtue.*
 Honneur, *s. m. honor, credit.*
 Honorer, *v. a. to honor.*
 Honte, *s. f. shame, modesty.*
 Honteux, *se. a. shameful, bashful.*
 Horace, *Horace.*
 Horizon, *s. m. horizon.*
 Horreur, *s. f. horror, dread.*
 Horrible, *a. horrible, horrid.*
 Hors, *prep. out, except.*
 Hôte, *s. m. guest.*
 Humain, *e. a. human.* [men.
 Humains, *s. m. pl. — mortals,*
 Humanité, *s. m. human nature.*
 Humble, *a. humble, lowly.*
 Humeur, *s. f. humor, moisture.*
 Hymen, *s. m. Hymen, wedlock.*
 Hymne, *s. a. hymn.*
 Hypocrisie, *s. f. hypocrisy.*
 Hysope, *s. f. hyssop.*

I.

- Ici, *adv. here, hither.*
 Ici bas, *adv. here below.*
 Idée, *s. f. idea, notion.*
 Idiotisme, *s. m. dialect, idiom.*
 Idole, *s. f. an idol.*
 Idumée, *Idumea.* [*famy.*]
 Ignominie, *s. f. ignominy, in-*
 Ignorance, *s. f. ignorance.*
 Ignorant, *e. a. s. ignorant.*
 Ignorer, *v. a. not to know.*
 Il, *pr. he, there.*
 Illégitime, *a. illegal, illegiti-*
mate.
 Illustre, *a. illustrious.*
 Image, *s. f. image.*
 Imaginaire, *a. imaginary.*
 Imagination, *s. f. imagination,*
fancy.
 Imaginer, *v. a. to imagine.*
 Iman, *s. m. Imam, a mahome-*
tan priest.
 Imitatif, *ve. a. imitative.*
 Immense, *a. immense, vast.*
 Immensité, *s. f. immensity, vast-*
ness.
 Immobile, *a. immovable.*
 Immodéré, *e. a. immoderate.*
 Immoler, *v. a. to sacrifice, im-*
molate.
 Immonde, *a. unclean, foul.*
 Immortalité, *s. f. immortality.*
 Immortel, *le. a. immortal.*
 Immuable, *a. immutable.*
 Impatient, *e. a. impatient.*
 Impénétrable, *a. impenetrable.*
 Imperceptible, *a. imperceptible.*
 Impétueux, *se. a. impetuous.*
 Important, *e. a. important.*
 Importer, *v. n. to import.*
 Importun, *e. a. s. importunate,*
troublesome.
 Impossible, *a. impossible.*
 Imposture, *s. f. imposture.*
 Impression, *s. f. impression.*
 Imprimer, *v. a. to print.*
 Improvisateur, *trice. a. extem-*
pore.
 Imprudent, *e. a. impru-*
dent.
 Impudence, *s. f. impudence.*
 Impuissant, *e. a. impotent.*
 Impulsion, *s. f. impulsión.*
 Impunément, *adv. with impu-*
nity.
 Impur, *e. a. impure.*
 Inaltérable, *a. unalterable.*
 Inanimé, *e. a. inanimate.*
 Incendie, *s. f. burning, combus-*
tion. [*ful.*]
 Incertain, *e. a. uncertain, doubt-*
 Incessamment, *adv. incessantly.*
 Incliner, *v. to incline, bend, bow*
down.
 Incomparablement, *adv. admi-*
rably.
 Inconnu, *e. a. s. unknown.*
 Incrédulité, *s. f. incredulity, un-*
belief.
 Indestructible, *a. indestructible.*
 Indifférence, *s. f. indifference.*
 Indigence, *s. f. indigence, want.*
 Indigent, *e. a. indigent, poor.*
 Indigne, *a. unworthy.*
 s'Indigner, *v. r. to be filled with*
indignation, fret.
 Indiquer, *v. a. to indicate.*
 Indompté, *e. not tamed, unruly.*
 Industrieux, *se. a. industrious.*
 Ineffaçable, *a. indelible.*
 Inégal, *e. a. unequal, uneven.*
 Inégalité, *s. f. inequality.*
 Inépuisable, *a. inexhaustible.*
 Infaillible, *a. infallible.*
 Infame, *a. infamous.*
 Infamie, *s. f. infamy.*

- Infatigable, *a. indefatigable.*
 Inférieur, *e. a. inferior, lower.*
 Infernal, *e. a. infernal, hellish.*
 Infini, *e. a. infinite.*
 Infirmité, *s. f. infirmity, sickness.*
 Inflexion, *s. f. inflexion.*
 Influence, *s. f. influence.*
 Informe, *a. shapeless.*
 Infortuné, *e. a. unlucky, unfortunate.*
 Ingénieux, *se. a. ingenious.*
 Ingrat, *e. a. ungrateful.*
 Inimitable, *a. inimitable.*
 Iniquité, *s. f. iniquity, injustice.*
 Injurier, *v. a. to abuse, revile.*
 Injustement, *adv. unjustly.*
 Injustice, *s. f. injustice.*
 Inné, *e. a. innate.*
 Innocence, *s. f. innocence.*
 Innombrable, *a. innumerable.*
 Inquiet, *e. a. uneasy, restless.*
 Inquiéter, *v. a. to disturb, vex.*
 Inquiétude, *s. f. disquiet, uneasiness.*
 Inscription, *s. f. inscription.*
 Inscrire, *v. a. to inscribe.*
 Insecte, *s. m. an insect.*
 Insigne, *a. notable, signal.*
 Insinuant, *e. a. engaging, pleasing.*
 Inspirer, *v. a. to inspire, suggest.*
 Instant, *s. m. instant.*
 Instinct, *s. m. instinct.*
 Instituer, *v. a. to institute.*
 Institution, *s. f. institution.*
 Instruction, *s. f. instruction.*
 Instruire, *v. a. to instruct, inform.* [tool.
 Instrument, *s. m. instrument,*
 Insu, à l'insu, *without the knowledge.*
 Insulter, *v. a. to insult.*
 Intelligence, *s. f. intelligence, understanding.*
 Intéressant, *e. a. affecting.*
 Intérêt, *s. m. interest, profit.*
 Intérieur, *e. a. s. interior, inward.*
 Interprète, *s. interpreter.*
 Interrompre, *v. a. to interrupt.*
 Interruption, *s. f. interruption.*
 Intervalle, *s. m. interval, space.*
 Intime, *a. intimate.*
 Intrépide, *a. intrepid.*
 Intrépidité, *s. f. intrepidity.*
 Inventer, *v. a. to invent, contrive.*
 Invincible, *a. invincible.*
 Inviter, *v. a. to invite.*
 Inusité, *e. a. unusual, not used.*
 Inutile, *a. useless.*
 Irrévocable, *a. irrevocable.*
 Irriter, *v. a. to irritate, incense.*
 s'Irriter, *v. r. to grow fierce.*
 Isolé, *e. insulated, lonely.*
 Italie, *Italy.*
 Italien, *ne. a. s. Italian.*
 Ivresse, *s. f. drunkenness.*
 Ivrogne, *a. s. a drunkard.*

J.

- Jadis, *adv. of old, in old times.*
 Jalousie, *s. f. jealousy.*
 Jaloux, *se. a. jealous.*
 Jamais, *adv. never, ever.*
 Jambe, *s. f. leg.*
 Janissaire, *s. m. a janissary.*
 Japon, *Japan.*
 Jardin, *s. m. garden.*
 Jaune, *a. s. m. yellow.*
 Jaunir, *v. a. to make yellow.*
 Je, *pr. I.*
 Jeanne d'Arc, *Joan of Arc.*

Jérusalem, *Jerusalem*.
 Jésuite, *s. m. a Jesuit*.
 Jésus Christ, *Jesus Christ*.
 Jet, *s. m. cast, throw*.
 Jeter, *v. a. to throw, cast, utter*.
 Jeu, *s. m. game, sport, play*.
 Jeune, *a. young*.
 Jeunesse, *s. f. youth, frolic*.
 Joie, *s. f. joy, delight*.
 Joindre, *v. n. to join*.
 Jointure, *s. f. joints*.
 Joli, *e. a. pretty, genteel*.
 Jouer, *v. a. to play, act*.
 Jouet, *s. m. plaything, sport*.
 Joueur, *se. s. gamester, player*.
 Joug, *s. m. yoke, slavery*.
 Jouir, *v. n. to enjoy, possess*.
 Jouissance, *s. f. enjoyment*.
 Jour, *s. m. day, light, day-light*.
 Jourdain, *Jordan*.
 Joyeux, *se. a. joyful, merry*.
 Juge, *s. m. a judge*. [tence.
 Jugement, *s. m. judgment, sen-*
 Juger, *v. a. to judge, try*.
 Jules, *family of the Julii*.
 Jupiter, *s. m. Jupiter*.
 Jurer, *v. to swear*.
 Jurisconsulte, *s. m. a lawyer*.
 Jus, *s. m. juice*.
 Jusque, Jusques, *prep. to, as*
far as, until.
 Jusqu'à, Juqu'au, *even to*.
 Jusqu'ici, *hitherto*.
 Juste, *a. s. m. just, just man*.
 Juste, *adv. right, exactly*.
 Justesse, *s. f. justness*.
 Justice, *s. f. justice*.

L.

La, *art. the*.
 La, *pr. her, it*.
 Là, *adv. there*.

Là-dessus, *adv. upon that, up*
there.
 Labeur, *s. m. labor, work*.
 Laboureur, *s. m. ploughman*.
 Lac, *s. m. a lake*.
 Lacédémone, *Lacedemon*.
 Lacédémonien, *Lacedemonian*.
 Lâche, *a. loose, faint, cowardly*.
 Lâche, *s. m. a polltroon*.
 Laisser, *v. a. to leave, let*.
 Lait, *s. m. milk*.
 Lambeau, *s. m. a rag, a shred*.
 Lamoignon, *Lamoignon*.
 Lance, *s. f. a lance, spear*.
 Lampe, *s. f. lamp*.
 Langage, *s. f. language, tongue*.
 Langue, *s. f. tongue, language*.
 Languir, *v. n. to languish*.
 Languissant, *e. a. languishing,*
weak, faint.
 Lanterne, *s. f. lantern*.
 Laquais, *s. m. a lackey, footman*.
 Laquelle, *pr. f. which*.
 Large, *a. large, broad*.
 Large, *s. m. breadth*.
 Larime, *s. f. a tear*.
 Lasser, *v. a. to tire, weary*.
 Laurier, *s. m. laurel; bay*.
 Le, *art. m. the*.
 Le, *pr. him, it, so*.
 Lécher, *v. a. to lick*.
 Leçon, *s. f. lecture, lesson*.
 Lecteur, *s. m. a reader*.
 Lecture, *s. f. reading*.
 Léger, *e. a. light, nimble, tri-*
fling. [bly.
 Légèrement, *adv. lightly, nim-*
 Légion, *s. f. legion*. [giver.
 Législateur, *s. m. legislator, law-*
 Législation, *s. f. legislation*.
 Légumes, *pl. greens, roots*.
 Lendemain, *s. m. the next day,*
morrow.

Lent, *e. slow, dull.*
 Lenteur, *s. f. slowness, dullness.*
 Léonidas, *Leonidas.*
 Lequel, *pr. m. which, who, that.*
 Les, *art. pl. & pr. the, them.*
 Lettre, *s. f. letter, epistle.*
 Lettres, *pl. literature.*
 Levant, *s. m. the east, the Levant.*
 Lever, *v. to lift up.*
 (se) Lever, *v. r. to rise, arise.*
 Leur, *pr. their, them.*
 Liaison, *s. f. connexion.*
 Liant, *e. a. affable, mild.*
 Libéral, *e. a. liberal.*
 Liberté, *s. f. liberty, freedom.*
 Libertain, *e. a. licentious, lewd.*
 Libertain, *e. s. a lewd person, libertine.*
 Libre, *a. free, easy, open.*
 Librement, *adv. freely.*
 Lié, *part. connected.*
 Lien, *s. m. tie, band.*
 Lier, *v. a. to bind, tie, unite.*
 Lierre, *s. m. ivy.*
 Lieu, *s. m. place, room.*
 Lieue, *s. f. a league, three miles.*
 Ligne, *s. f. line, race.*
 Lilas, *s. m. lilac.*
 Limiter, *v. a. to limit.*
 Limites, *s. f. pl. limits, bounds.*
 Limon, *s. m. mud.*
 Lire, *v. a. to read.*
 Lit, *s. m. a bed.*
 Littérature, *s. f. literature.*
 Livre, *s. m. a book.*
 Livrer, *v. a. to deliver up.*
 Loger, *v. to lodge.*
 Logis, *s. m. dwelling.*
 Loi, *s. f. law.*
 Loin, *adv. far, far off.*
 Loin de, *far from.*
 Lointain, *e. a. remote, far.*

Loisir, *s. m. leisure.*
 Long, Longue, *a. long, great.*
 Long-temps, *adv. a long while.*
 Longueur, *s. f. length.*
 Lors, *adv. then.*
 Lorsque, *c. when.*
 Louange, *s. f. praise.*
 Louche, *a. squint-eyed, ambiguous.*
 Louer, *v. n. to praise.*
 Louis, *s. m. Lewis, louis.*
 Lourd, *e. a. heavy, dull.*
 Lubin, *Lubin.*
 Lucifer, *s. m. Lucifer.*
 Lucius Cornelius, *Lucius Cornelius.*
 Lugubre, *a. doleful, sad.*
 Lui, *pr. him, her, to him, to her.*
 Lui-même, *himself.*
 Luire, *v. n. to glitter, shine.*
 Lumière, *s. f. light.*
 Luminaire, *s. m. luminary, light.*
 Lutter, *v. n. to wrestle, struggle.*
 Luxe, *s. m. luxury.*
 Lyre, *s. f. a lyre, harp.*

M.

Ma, *pr. f. my, mine.*
 Madame, *s. f. madam.*
 Mademoiselle, *s. f. miss.*
 Magie, *s. f. magic, black-art.*
 Magister, *s. m. country school-master, pedant.*
 Magistrat, *s. m. a magistrate.*
 Magnificence, *s. f. sumptuousness, state.*
 Magnifique, *a. magnificent.*
 Majesté, *s. f. majesty.*
 Majestueux, *se. a. majestic.*
 Maigre, *a. lean, thin.*

- Main**, *s. f.* hand.
Maint, *e. a.* many.
Maintenant, *adv.* now.
Maintenir, *v.* to maintain.
Maintien, *s. m.* deportment.
Mais, *c.* but.
Maison, *s. f.* house, family.
Maitre, *s. m.* a master.
Maitresse, *s. f.* mistress.
Mal, *s. m.* evil, ill, harm, hurt.
Mal, *adv.* badly, ill.
Malade, *a. s.* sick, patient.
Maladie, *s. f.* sickness, disease.
Mâle, *a.* manly.
Malgré, *prep.* in spite of, notwithstanding.
Malheur, *s. m.* misfortune.
Malheureux, *se. a.* unhappy.
Malheureux, *s. m.* an unfortunate.
Malin, *igne, a.* mischievous.
Manger, *v. a.* to eat.
Manie, *s. f.* madness.
Manière, *s. f.* manner, way, style.
(se) Manifester, *v. r.* to show one's self.
Manque, *s. m.* want, lack.—
Manque de, *for want of.*
Manquer, *v. a.* to fail, want.
Manteau, *s. m.* a cloak.
Marbre, *s. m.* marble.
Marchand, *s. m.* a merchant.
Marche, *s. f.* march, step.
Marché, *s. m.* market.
Marcher, *v. n.* to walk, march, go.
Marie, *Mary.*
Marier, *v. a.* to marry.
Marinier, *s. m.* mariner, seaman.
Marius, *Marius.*
Marquer, *v. a.* to mark, show.
Marteau, *s. m.* hammer.
Martyr, *e. s.* a martyr.
Masque, *s. m.* a mask.
Masqué, *e. a.* masked, counterfeited, dissembling.
Masure, *s. f.* the ruins of a house, a paltry house.
Mât, *s. m.* a mast.
Matière, *s. f.* matter.
Matin, *s. m.* *adv.* — morning.
Maudire, *v. a.* to curse.
Maudit, *e. a.* cursed.
Maure, *Moor.*
Mauresque, *Moorish.*
Mauvais, *e. a.* bad, evil, ill.
Maux, *evils, pl. of Mal.*
Maxime, *s. f.* maxim.
Me, *pr. me, to me.*
Méchanceté, *s. f.* wickedness.
Méchant, *e. a.* wicked, bad.
Mécontent, *e. a.* dissatisfied.
Médiocrement, *adv.* indifferently, so so, moderately.
Méditation, *s. f.* meditation.
Méditer, *v. a.* to meditate, think.
Méduse, *Medusa.*
Meilleur, *e. a.* better.
Mélange, *s. m.* mixture.
Mélodie, *s. f.* melody.
Mélodieux, *se. a.* melodious.
Membre, *s. m.* member.
Même, *a.* same, self, itself.
Même, *adv.* even.
Mémoire, *s. f.* memory.
Memnon, *Memnon.*
Memphis, *Memphis.*
Menacer, *v. a.* to threaten.
Menager, *v. a.* to conduct.
Mendoze, *Mendoza.*
Mener, *v. a.* to lead, carry.
Mensonge, *s. m.* lie.
Menteur, *se. a. s.* lying, liar.
Mentir, *v. n.* to lie.
Menton, *v. n.* the chin.

- Mépris, *s. m. contempt, scorn.*
 Mépriser, *v. a. to despise.*
 Mer, *s. f. the sea.*
 Merci, *s. f. mercy, pity, thanks.*
 Mère, *s. f. mother.*
 Mérite, *s. m. merit, desert, worth.*
 Mériter, *v. a. to deserve.*
 Merveille, *s. f. wonder, marvel.*
 Merveilleux, *se. a. wonderful.*
 Mes, *pl. my.*
 Mesure, *s. f. measure.—à Measure, adv. in proportion.*
 Mesurer, *v. a. to measure.*
 Métal, *s. m. metal.*
 Métaphore, *s. f. metaphor.*
 Metellus, *Metellus.*
 Métier, *s. m. trade.*
 Mettre, *v. a. to put, set.*
 Meurtrier, *e. a. murderous.*
 Meurtrière, *s. f. a loop-hole.*
 Meute, *s. f. pack (of hounds.)*
 Mézence, *Mezentius.*
 Michel-Ange, *Michael Angelo.*
 Midi, *s. m. noon, south.*
 Mieux, *adv. better, best.*
 Milice, *s. f. militia, soldiery.*
 Milieu, *s. m. middle, midst.*
 Militaire, *a. s. military.*
 Mille, or Mil, *s. m. thousand.*
 Millier, *s. m. a thousand.*
 Million, *s. m. a million.*
 Mine, *s. f. a mien, show, looks.*
 Ministère, *s. m. ministry.*
 Ministre, *s. m. minister.*
 Minute, *s. f. minute.*
 Miracle, *s. m. miracle, wonder.*
 Miraculeux, *se. a. miraculous.*
 Misérable, *a. miserable.*
 Misère, *s. f. misery, calamity.*
 Mocha, *Mocha.*
 Mode, *s. f. mode.*
 Modèle, *s. m. model.*
 Modération, *s. f. moderation.*
 Modéré, *e. a. moderate, abated.*
 Modérer, *v. a. to moderate.*
 Moderne, *a. modern.*
 Modernes, *s. m. pl. — the moderns.*
 Modeste, *a. modest.*
 Modestie, *s. f. modesty.*
 Modifier, *v. a. to modify.*
 Mœurs, *s. f. pl. manners, ways.*
 Moi, *pr. me, I. — Moi-même, myself.*
 Moindre, *a. less, least.*
 Moins, *adv. less.*
 Moins, *s. m. the least.*
 Mois, *s. m. a month.*
 Moissonner, *v. a. to reap.*
 Moitié, *s. f. half, moiety.*
 Molécule, *s. f. particle.*
 Mollesse, *s. f. softness.*
 Moment, *s. m. moment, minute.*
 Mon, *pr. my.*
 Monarchie, *s. f. a monarchy.*
 Monarque, *s. m. monarch.*
 Monde, *s. m. the world, company.*
 Monnaie, *s. f. money.*
 Monotone, *a. monotonous.*
 Monsieur, *s. m. Sir, master.*
 Monstre, *s. m. a monster.*
 Montagne, *s. f. mountain, hill.*
 Monter, *v. n. to go or come up, get up.*
 Montesquieu, *Montesquieu.*
 Montrer, *v. a. to show.*
 Monument, *s. m. a monument.*
 (se) Moquer de, *v. r. to laugh at, jeer.*
 Moral, *e. a. moral.*
 Morale, *s. f. morality.*
 Morbleu, *i. zounds!*
 Morgue, *s. f. haughty surly look.*
 Mort, *s. f. death, decease.*
 Mort, *e. a. dead, deceased.*

Mort, e. s. *a dead body.*
 Mortel, le. a. s. *mortal.*
 Mot, s. m. *word.*
 Motif, s. m. *a motive, aim.*
 Mouche, s. f. *a fly.*
 Moucher, v. a. *to blow one's nose.*
 Moucheron, s. m. *gnat.*
 Mouchoir, s. m. *handkerchief.*
 Moule, s. m. *a mould.*
 Mourant, e. a. *dying.*
 Mourir, v. n. *to die.*
 Mousquet, s. m. *musket.*
 Moustache, s. f. *whiskers.*
 Mouvement, s. m. *motion, movement.*
 Mouvoir, v. a. *to move.*
 Moyen, s. m. *means.*
 Muet, te. a. s. *dumb, mute.*
 Mugissement, s. m. *lowing, roaring.*
 Multiplier, v. a. *to multiply.*
 Multitude, s. f. *multitude.*
 Mur, s. m. *a wall.*
 Muraille, s. f. *a wall.*
 Murmure, s. m. *murmur.*
 Murmurer, v. n. *to murmur.*
 Museau, s. m. *muzzle, snout, nose.*
 Musique, s. f. *music.*
 Mutuel, le. a. *mutual.*
 Mutuellement, adv. *mutually.*
 Mystère, s. m. *a mystery.*
 Mystérieux, se. a. *mysterious.*

N.

Naissance, s. f. *birth, nativity.*
 Naissant, e. a. *nascent, rising.*
 Naître, v. n. *to be born, arise, spring, grow.*
 Naples, *Naples.*

Nappe, s. f. *table-cloth.*
 Narratif, ve. a. *narrative.*
 Naseau, s. m. *nostril.*
 Nation, s. f. *nation.*
 Naturaliste, s. m. *a naturalist.*
 Nature, s. f. *nature.*
 Naturel, le. a. *natural, native.*
 Naturellement, adv. *naturally.*
 Naufrage, s. m. *shipwreck.*
 Navire, s. m. *a ship, vessel, sail.*
 Nautonier, s. m. *a mariner, a sailor.*
 Ne, adv. *not, no.*
 Né, e. a. *born.*
 Néanmoins, c. *nevertheless.*
 Néant, s. m. *nothingness.*
 Nécessaire, a. *necessary.*
 Nécessairement, adv. *necessarily.*
 Nécessité, s. f. *necessity.*
 Nectar, s. m. *nectar.*
 Neige, s. f. *snow.*
 Neveu, s. m. *a nephew.*
 Neveux, pl. *posterity.*
 Neuf, ve. a. *new.*
 Neuvième, a. s. *ninth.*
 Ni, c. *neither, nor.*
 Nid, s. m. *a nest.*
 Nièce, s. f. *a niece.*
 Nier, v. a. *to deny.*
 Nil, *Nile.*
 Noble, a. s. *noble.*
 Noblesse, s. f. *nobility.*
 Noce, Noces, s. f. *marriage, nuptials.*
 Noir, e. a. *black, base, dismal.*
 Noirâtre, a. *blackish.*
 Nom, s. m. *name, fame.*
 Nombre, s. m. *number.*
 Nombreux, se. a. *numerous.*
 Nommer, v. a. *to name.*
 Non, adv. *no, not.*
 Nopal, s. *nopal (Indian fig).*

Nord, *s. m. North.*
 Nos, *pr. pl. our.*
 Notre, *pr. our.*
 Nourrir, *v. a. to nourish, feed.*
 Nous, *pr. we, us, to us.*
 Nous-mêmes, *pr. ourselves.*
 Nouveau, Nouvel, *le. a. new.*
 Nouveauté, *s. f. novelty.*
 Nouvelle, *s. f. news.*
 Noyer, *v. a. to drown.*
 Nu, Nue, *a. naked, plain.— A'*
 nu, adv. nakedly, clearly.
 Nuage, *s. m. a cloud, mist.*
 Nuance, *s. f. shadowing, shade.*
 Nue, *s. f. a cloud, sky.*
 Nuire, *v. n. to hurt, annoy.*
 Nuit, *s. f. night.*
 Nul, *le. a. void, none, not one, no.*
 Numa, *Numa.*
 Nu-pieds, *a. bare-footed.*
 Nuptial, *e. a. nuptial, bridal.*

O.

O ! *i. ah !*
 Obéissance, *s. f. obedience.*
 Objet, *s. m. object.*
 Obliger, *v. a. to oblige, bind.*
 Oblique, *a. oblique, indirect.*
 Obscur, *e. a. dark.*
 Obscurcir, *v. a. to darken, dim.*
 Obscurité, *s. f. obscurity.*
 Observateur, *a. observing.*
 Observateur, *rice, s. observer.*
 Observer, *v. a. to observe, watch.*
 Obstiné, *a. s. stubborn, obstinate.*
 Obtenir, *v. a. to obtain, get.*
 Occasion, *s. f. occasion, opportunity.*
 Occuper, *v. a. to occupy, employ, possess, hold.*

s'Occuper, *v. r. to busy one's self.*
 Océan, *s. m. the ocean.*
 Ode, *s. f. an ode.*
 Odieux, *se. a. odious, heinous.*
 Odorat, *s. m. smell.*
 Odoriférant, *e. a. odoriferous, sweet.*
 Oeil, *s. m. eye.*
 Oeuvre, *s. f. work.*
 Offenser, *v. a. to offend, injure.*
 Offrir, *v. a. to offer.*
 Oh ! *i. oh !*
 Oiseau, *s. m. a bird.*
 Olympie, *Olympus.*
 Olympique, *a. Olympic.*
 Ombrageux, *se. a. suspicious, jealous.*
 Ombre, *s. f. shade, shadow, ghost.*
 On, *pr. they, one, somebody, people, we.*
 Onction, *s. f. unction.*
 Onde, *s. f. a wave, water.*
 Ondoyant, *e. a. undulating.*
 Onze, *a. s. m. eleven.*
 Opérer, *v. a. to operate, work.*
 Opinion, *s. f. opinion, belief.*
 Opposé, *s. m. opposite.*
 Opposer, *v. a. to oppose.*
 Oppression, *s. f. oppression.*
 Opprobre, *s. m. disgrace, reproach.*
 Orage, *s. m. a storm.*
 Oraison, *s. f. speech, oration.*
 Oranger, *s. m. an orange-tree.*
 Orateur, *s. m. an orator.*
 Ordinaire, *a. ordinary.*
 Ordre, *s. m. order.*
 Oreille, *s. f. the ear.*
 Organe, *s. f. organ.*
 Organique, *a. organic.*
 Organiser, *v. a. to organize.*

Orgueil, *s. m. pride, loftiness.*
 Orient, *s. m. east.*
 Oriental, *e. a. eastern, oriental.*
 Origine, *s. f. origin.*
 Ornement, *s. m. ornament.*
 Orner, *v. a. to adorn, embellish.*
 Oser, *v. n. to dare.*
 Ostentation, *s. f. ostentation.*
 Oter, *v. a. to take away, remove.*
 Ou, *c. or, either, else.*
 Où, *adv. where, whither, in which, to which.*
 Oubli, *s. m. forgetfulness, oblivion.*
 Oublier, *v. a. to forget.*
 s'Oublier, *v. r. to forget one's self.*
 Oui, *adv. yes.*
 Outrage, *s. m. outrage, injury.*
 Outrager, *v. a. to affront.*
 Outre, *adv. farther.*
 Ouvrage, *s. m. work, workmanship.*
 Ouvrier, *s. m. artificer.*
 Ouvrir, *v. to open, begin.*

P.

Pactole, *Pactolus.*
 Page, *s. f. page.*
 Pain, *s. m. bread, loaf.*
 Paix, *s. f. peace.*
 Palais, *s. m. palace.*
 Pâle, *a. pale, wan.*
 Pâlir, *v. a. to grow pale.*
 Palmier, *s. m. palm-tree, date-tree.*
 Palpiter, *v. n. to palpitate, pant.*
 Pan, *s. m. pane, front, sheet, layer.*
 Panache, *s. m. tuft of feathers.*
 Panathénées, *Panathenæa.*

Panthère, *s. f. a panther.*
 Pantoufle, *s. f. a slipper.*
 Par, *prep. by, on, through.*
 Paraître, *v. a. to appear.*
 Parasol, *s. m. an umbrella.*
 Paravent, *s. m. folding screen.*
 Parceque, *c. because.*
 Parcourir, *v. a. to travel over, run over.*
 Pardessus, *adv. over and above.*
 —, *prep. over, higher, beyond.*
 Pardonner, *v. a. to pardon, forgive.*
 Pareil, *le. a. s. like, such.*
 Parent, *s. m. relation, kinsman.*
 Parens, *s. m. pl. parents, parentage.*
 Parer, *v. a. to deck.*
 Paresse, *s. f. sloth, laziness.*
 Parfum, *s. m. perfume.*
 Parfumer, *v. a. to perfume.*
 Pari, *s. m. a wager, bet.*
 Parjure, *s. m. perjury.*
 Parler, *v. n. to speak, talk.*
 (se) Parler, *v. r. to converse.*
 Parole, *s. f. word.*
 Parmi, *prep. among, amidst.*
 Parque, *s. f. destiny, fate, Fate.*
 Part, *s. f. part, share. Nulle part, no where.*
 Partage, *s. m. a share.*
 Partager, *v. a. to share, divide.*
 Parti, *s. m. party, way.*
 Particule, *s. f. particle.*
 Particulier, *s. m. private man.*
 Partie, *s. f. part.* [spring.
 Partir, *v. n. to proceed, start.*
 Partout, *adv. every where.*
 Parvenir, *v. a. to arrive, come to, attain, succeed.*
 Pas, *s. m. step, pace, precedence.*
 —, *adv. no, not.*
 Pascal, *e. a. paschal.*

Pascal, *Pascal*.

Passant, *s. m. a passenger, traveller*.

Passé, *a. past, faded*. —, *s. m. time past, things past*.

Passer, *v. to pass*.

Passion, *s. f. passion*.

Pastoral, *e. a. pastoral, rural*.

Patricien, *ne. a. s. patrician*.

Patrie, *s. f. native country*.

Patriotisme, *s. m. patriotism*.

Pâturage, *s. m. pasturage*.

Pâture, *s. f. provender, food*.

Pavé, *s. m. pavement*.

Pauvre, *a. poor, beggar*.

Pauvret, *te. a. poor*.

Pauvreté, *s. f. poverty*.

Payen, *ne. a. s. pagan*.

Payer, *v. a. to pay*.

Pays, *s. m. country*.

Paysage, *s. m. landscape*.

Péché, *s. f. a sin*.

Pédant, *e. s. a pedant*.

Peindre, *v. a. to paint, describe*.

Peine, *s. f. pain, penalty, pains, trouble*.

(à) Peine, *adv. hardly*.

Peinture, *s. f. painting, picture*.

Penchant, *s. m. declivity, inclination*. —, *e. a. declining*.

Pendant, *pr. during*. —*que, adv. whilst*.

Pénétrant, *e. a. penetrating*.

Pénétrer, *v. a. to penetrate*.

Pénible, *a. laborious*.

Péniblement, *adv. painfully*.

Pensée, *s. f. thought, sketch*.

Penser, *v. to think, come near*. —, *s. m. thought*.

Pensif, *ve. a. pensive*.

Pension, *s. f. pension*.

Pente, *s. f. declivity*.

Perçant, *e, a. piercing, acute*.

Perceptible, *a. perceptible*.

Percer, *v. a. to pierce, break through*.

Perdre, *v. a. to lose, ruin*.

(se) Perdre, *v. r. to lose one's self*.

Perdu, *e. a. lost*.

Père, *s. m. father*.

Perfection, *s. f. perfection*.

Perfectionner, *v. a. to perfect*.

Péril, *s. m. danger, peril*.

Périodique, *a. periodical*.

Périr, *v. n. to perish*.

Permanent, *e. a. lasting*.

Permettre, *v. a. to permit, let, allow*.

Perpétuellement, *adv. perpetually*.

Perpétuer, *v. a. to perpetuate*.

Persan, *ne. a. Persian*.

Perse, *Persian*.

Personnage, *s. m. person, part*.

Personne, *s. f. a person*. —, *pr. nobody, any one*.

Personnel, *le. a. personal*. *l'adj.*

Personnellement, *adv. personal*.

Persuader, *v. a. to persuade, satisfy, advise*.

Persuasif, *ve. a. persuasive*.

Perte, *s. f. loss*.

Pesant, *e. a. heavy, dull*.

Peser, *v. n. to weigh*. —, *v. a. to to bore, tire*.

Peste, *s. f. the plague*.

Petillant, *e. a. sparkling*.

Petiller, *v. n. to crackle, sparkle*.

Petit, *e, a. little, small, petty*.

Petit-enfant, *s. m. grandson*.

Petitesse, *s. f. littleness*.

Peu, *adv. little, few*.

(un) Peu, *s. m. a little, some*.

Peu-à-peu, *adv. by degrees*.

Peuple, *s. m. people, nation*.

- Peuplier, *s. m. popular.*
 Peur, *s. f. fear, dread, fright.*
 Peut-être, *adv. perhaps.*
 Phalange, *s. f. phalanx.*
 Phébus, *s. m. the sun, Phæbus.*
 Phédon, *Phædo.*
 Phénomène, *s. m. phenomenon.*
 Phidias, *Phidias.*
 Philosophe, *s. m. philosopher.*
 Philosophe, *v. n. to philosophize.*
 Philosophie, *s. f. philosophy.*
 Phrase, *s. f. phrase, expression.*
 Pied, Pié, *s. m. foot.—à pied, on foot.*
 Pièce, *s. f. a piece.*
 Pierre, *s. f. a stone.*
 Piété, *s. f. piety, godliness.*
 Pieux, *se, a. pious, godly.*
 Pilier, *s. m. a pillar, post.*
 Pinceau, *s. m. pencil, brush.*
 Pincettes, *pl. tongs.*
 Pipe, *s. f. a pipe.*
 Piquant, *e. a. keen, sharp.*
 Pistole, *s. f. a pistole.*
 Pitié, *s. f. pity, compassion.*
 Pittoresque, *a. picturesque.*
 Place, *s. f. place, room.*
 Placer, *v. a. to place.*
 Plaie, *s. f. a wound.*
 Plaindre, *v. a. to pity.*
 (se) Plaindre, *v. r. to complain.*
 Plaine, *s. f. a plain.*
 Plainte, *s. complaint, lamentation.*
 Plaintif, *ve. a. plaintive, doleful.*
 Plaire, *v. n. to please.*
 (se) Plaire, *v. r. to love, delight.*
 Plaisant, *e. a. pleasing, pleasant.*
 Plaisir, *s. m. pleasure, joy.*
 Plan, *s. m. plan, scheme.*
 Plant, *s. m. a plant.*
 Plat, *e. a. flat.*
 Platon, *Plato.*
 Plein, *e. a. full.*
 Pleurer, *v. to weep, cry.*
 Pleurs, *s. m. pl. tears.*
 Pli, *s. m. a plait, fold.*
 (se) Plier, *v. r. to bend, conform.*
 Pline, *Pliny.*
 Plonger, *v. a. to immerse.*
 Pluie, *s. f. rain.*
 Plumage, *s. m. feathers, plumage.*
 Plume, *s. f. pen.*
 Plus, *adv. more, most, no more.*
 Plus, *adv. s. m. more.*
 (le) Plus, *s. the most.*
 (la) Plupart, *s. the most, the greatest part.*
 Plusieurs, *a. pl. many.*
 Plûtôt, *adv. sooner, rather.*
 Poésie, *s. f. poetry, poesy.*
 Poète, *s. a poet, poetess.*
 Poétique, *a. poetical.*
 Poids, *s. m. load, scales, weights.*
 Poignard, *s. m. dagger, poniard.*
 Poignet, *s. m. wrist.*
 Point, *adv. no, not, none.*
 Point, *s. m. point.*
 Pointe, *s. f. point.*
 Poison, *s. m. poison.*
 Politesse, *s. f. politeness.*
 Politique, *a. political, artful.*
 —, *s. f. politics, policy.*
 Poltronnerie, *s. f. cowardice.*
 Pompe, *s. f. pomp.*
 Pontife, *s. m. a pontiff.*
 Pontifical, *e. a. pontifical.*
 Porte, *s. f. a door, a gate.*
 Portée, *s. f. reach.*
 Porter, *v. a. to carry, bear, wear, induce.*
 Porteur, *s. m. a porter.*

- Portion, *s. f.* *part, portion.*
 Portrait, *s. m.* *portrait, picture.*
 Position, *s. f.* *position, situation.*
 Posséder, *v. a.* *to possess.*
 Possible, *a. s. m.* *possible.*
 Postérité, *s. f.* *posterity, offspring.*
 Pouce, *s. m.* *inch.*
 Poudre, *s. f.* *dust.*
 Poulet, *s. m.* *a chick.*
 Pouls, *s. m.* *pulse.*
 Pour, *prep.* *for, in order, to.*
 Pourpre, *s. m.* *purple.*
 Pourquoi, *adv. c.* *why?*
 Poursuite, *s. f.* *pursuit.*
 Poursuivre, *v. a.* *to pursue.*
 Pourtant, *c.* *however, notwithstanding.*
 Pourvoir, *v. to provide.* [*ter.*
 Pousser, *v. to push, thrust, ut-*
 Poussière, *s. f.* *dust.*
 Pouvoir, *v. to be able, may, can.*
 Pouvoir, *s. m.* *power, interest.*
 Pratique, *s. f.* *practice.*
 Pratiquer, *v. n.* *to practise.*
 Pré, *s. m.* *a meadow.* [*first.*
 Précéder, *v. r.* *to precede, go*
 Prêcher, *v. to preach.*
 Précipité, *e. a.* *precipitate.*
 Précipiter, *v. a.* *to precipitate.*
 Précis, *e. a.* *precise.*
 Précisément, *adv.* *precisely.*
 Préjugé, *s. m.* *prepossession, prejudice.*
 Premier, *e. a.* *first.*
 Prendre, *v. a.* *to take, find.*
 (se) Prendre, *v. r.* *to begin, set to.*
 Préparer, *v. a.* *to prepare.*
 Près, *adv.* *near, hard by, by, beside.*
 Prescrire, *v. n.* *to prescribe.*
 Présence, *s. f.* *presence.*
 Présent, *e. a.* *present, ready.*
 Présent, *s. m.* *a gift, present.*
 Présenter, *v. a.* *to present, offer.*
 Président, *s. m.* *president, speaker.*
 Présider, *v. a.* *to preside.*
 Présomptueux, *se. a.* *presumptuous.*
 Presque, *adv.* *almost.*
 Presser, *v. a.* *to press, urge, hasten.*
 Prestige, *s. m.* *prestige, illusion.*
 Prêt, *e. a.* *ready, at hand.*
 Prétendre, *v. to pretend, expect, aspire at, design.*
 Prétendu, *e. a.* *supposed.*
 Prétention, *s. f.* *pretention.*
 Prêter, *v. r.* *to lend.*
 Prétexte, *s. f.* *pretext, pretence.*
 Prévenir, *v. a.* *to prevent, anticipate.*
 Prévention, *s. f.* *prepossession.*
 Prevenu, *adj.* *prepossessed.*
 Prévoir, *v. a.* *to foresee.*
 Prier, *v. a.* *to pray, beg.*
 Prière, *s. m.* *prayer, desire.*
 Primitif, *ve. a.* *primitive.*
 Prince, *s. m.* *a prince.*
 Principal, *e. a.* *principal, chief.*
 Principe, *s. m.* *principle.*
 Printemps, *s. m.* *the spring.*
 Prise, *s. f.* *scuffle.*
 Prison, *s. f.* *a prison, a gaol.*
 Prisonnier, *e. a.* *s. prisoner.*
 Privé, *e. a.* *private.*
 Priver, *v. a.* *to deprive.*
 Privilégié, *e. a.* *privileged.*
 Prix, *s. m.* *price, rate, comparison, value, reward.*
 Procès, *s. m.* *law-suit.*
 Prochain, *e. a.* *next.*
 Proche, *prep.* *near, close to.*

Proclamer, *v. a. to proclaim.*
 Procurer, *v. a. to procure, get.*
 Prodige, *s. m. a prodigy.*
 Prodigue, *a. profuse, prodigal.*
 Production, *s. f. production, product.*
 Produire, *v. a. to produce, yield, cause, show.*
 (se) Produire, *v. r. to put one's self forward.* [ing.]
 Profession, *s. f. profession, call.*
 Profiter, *v. n. to improve, profit, take advantage.*
 Profond, *e. a. deep, profound.*
 Profondément, *adv. deep, deeply.*
 Profondeur, *s. f. depth.*
 Profusion, *s. f. profusion.*
 Proie, *s. f. prey, booty.*
 Projet, *s. m. project, design.*
 Prolonger, *v. a. to prolong.*
 Promenade, *s. f. walk, walking.*
 Promener, *v. a. to walk.*
 (se) Promener, *v. r. to walk.*
 Promettre, *v. a. to promise.*
 Prompt, *e. a. quick, sudden, active.*
 Promptement, *adv. quickly.*
 Prononcer, *v. a. to pronounce, deliver.*
 Propager, *v. n. to propagate.*
 Prophète, *s. m. a prophet.*
 Propice, *a. propitious.*
 Proportion, *s. f. proportion.*
 Propos, *s. m. discourse, proposal, design, subject.* A propos, *adv. suitably, now I think of it.* [intend.]
 (se) Proposer, *v. r. to propose.*
 Propre, *a. proper, own, fit.*
 Prose, *s. f. prose.*
 Protection, *s. f. protection.*
 Protée, *Proteus.*
 Protéger, *v. a. to protect, defend.*

Protester, *v. a. to protest, affirm.*
 Prototype, *s. m. prototype, first model.*
 Prouver, *v. a. to prove.*
 Psalmodie, *s. f. psalmody.*
 Public, *que. a. public, common.*
 Public, *s. m. the public.*
 Pudeur, *s. f. modesty.*
 Puis, *adv. then, afterwards.*
 Puisque, *c. since.*
 Puissamment, *adv. mightily.*
 Puissance, *s. f. power, might.*
 Puissant, *e. a. powerful.*
 Puits, *s. m. a well.*
 Punir, *v. a. to punish.*
 Punition, *s. f. punishment.*
 Pur, *e. a. pure, clear.*
 Pureté, *s. f. purity.*
 Purpurin, *e. a. purplish.*
 Pyramide, *s. f. pyramid.*

Q.

Quai, *s. m. quay.*
 Qualité, *s. f. quality, title.*
 Quand, *c. though, if.*
 —, *adv. when.*
 Quarante, *a. forty.*
 Quatre, *a. four.*
 Quatre-vingts, *a. fourscore.*
 Quatrième, *a. fourth.*
 Que, *pr. that, which, whom, what.*
 Que, *adv. but, that.*
 Quel? Quelle? *pr. what?*
 Quelque, *adv. however.*
 Quelque, *pr. some.—pl. a few.*
 Quelquefois, *adv. sometimes.*
 Quelques-uns, *a. some.*
 Quelqu'un, *pr. somebody, one.*
 Question, *s. f. question, matter.*
 Queue, *s. f. tail.*

Qui, *pr. that, who, whom, which, whoever, what.*
 Quitter, *v. n. to quit, leave.*
 Quoi, *pr. which, what, that.*
 Quoi ! *i. what ! how now !*

R.

Rabattre, *v. a. to abate, bate.*
 Race, *s. f. race, breed, kind.*
 Raconter, *v. a. to relate, tell.*
 Radieux, *se. a. radiant.*
 Raffermer, *v. a. to strengthen.*
 Railler, *v. a. to rally.*
 Raillerie, *s. f. bantering, jest.*
 Raison, *s. f. reason, sense, proof.*
 Raisonnable, *a. reasonable, rational, right.*
 Raisonnement, *s. m. reasoning.*
 Rallier, *v. a. to rally.*
 Ramas, *s. m. collection.*
 Rame, *s. f. an oar.*
 Rameau, *s. m. a bough, branch.*
 Ramener, *v. a. to bring back.*
 Ramper, *v. n. to crawl, creep.*
 Rang, *s. m. rank.*
 Ranimer, *v. a. to animate, revive.*
 Rapacité, *s. f. rapacity, greediness.*
 Raphael, *Raphael.*
 Rapide, *a. rapid, swift.*
 Rapidement, *adv. swiftly.*
 Rapidité, *s. f. rapidity, swiftness.*
 Rappeller, *v. a. to call back, recall.*
 Rapport, *s. m. report, affinity, relation.*
 Rapporter, *v. a. to bring back, relate.*
 Rapprocher, *v. a. to draw near again.*

Rare, *a. rare, uncommon, scarce.*
 Ras, *e. a. shaved close, smooth.*
 Raser, *v. a. to shave.*
 Rassembler, *v. a. to gather, collect.*
 (se) Rassurer, *v. r. to cheer up again, settle.*
 Rat, *s. m. a rat.*
 Ravir, *v. n. to ravish, seize.*
 Rayon, *s. m. a ray.*
 Rayonnant, *e. a. radiant.*
 Rayonner, *v. n. to emit rays.*
 Réalité, *s. f. reality.*
 Reaumur, *Reaumur.*
 Rebuter, *v. a. to thrust away, repel.*
 Récent, *e. a. recent, fresh, new.*
 Recevoir, *v. a. to receive.*
 Recherche, *s. f. inquiry.*
 Rechercher, *v. a. to seek again, make inquiry.*
 Réciproque, *a. reciprocal.*
 Réclamer, *v. a. to claim.*
 Recommencer, *v. a. to begin again.*
 Récompense, *s. f. a reward.*
 (en) Récompense, *adv. in return.*
 Reconnaissance, *s. f. gratitude.*
 Reconnaître, *v. a. to acknowledge, observe, recognize.*
 Reconstruire, *v. a. to reconstruct.*
 Recours, *s. m. recourse.*
 Recouvrir, *v. a. to cover again.*
 Recueilli, *part. collected.*
 Recueillir, *v. a. to gather, sum up.*
 Reculer, *v. a. to fall back, recoil.*
 Redemander, *v. a. to ask again, require.*
 Redempteur, *a. redeeming.*

- Redoubler, *v. a. to redouble.*
 Redouter, *v. a. to fear, dread.*
 Redresser, *v. a. to rectify.*
 Réel, *le. a. real, true.*
 Réflet, *s. m. reflection.*
 Réfleuir, *v. n. to blossom, or flourish again.*
 Réflexion, *s. f. reflection, meditation.*
 Réformation, *s. f. reformation, reform.*
 Réforme, *s. f. reformation.*
 Refouler, *v. a. to ebb, go against tide.*
 Refraichissant, *e. a. refreshing.*
 Regard, *s. m. a look, view.*
 Regarder, *v. a. to look at or on, behold, consider.*
 Région, *s. f. a region.*
 Règle, *s. f. a rule.*
 Régulé, *e. a. regular.*
 Régler, *v. a. to regulate.*
 Régnant, *e. a. reigning.*
 Régner, *v. a. to reign, rule.*
 Ragnier, *Ragnier.*
 Regret, *s. m. regret. — Regrets, s. m. pl. complaints, lamentations.*
 Regretter, *v. a. to regret.*
 Régulier, *e. a. regular.*
 Rejetter, *v. a. to throw back, reject.*
 Reine, *s. f. a queen.*
 Rejoindre, *a. v. to meet again, rejoin.*
 Réjouir, *v. a. to rejoice.*
 Relever, *v. a. to raise again.*
 (se) Relever, *v. r. to get up again.*
 Religieux, *se. a. religious, pious.*
 Religion, *s. f. religion, piety.*
 Remarquer, *v. a. to observe.*
 Remède, *s. m. remedy.*
 Remédier, *v. n. to remedy.*
 Remettre, *v. a. to restore, commit, remit, send.*
 Remonter, *v. a. to go up again, remount.*
 Rémora, *s. m. remora (fish), obstacle.*
 Remords, *s. m. remorse.*
 Remplacer, *v. a. to replace.*
 Remplir, *v. a. to fill up.*
 Rémunérateur, *s. m. rewarder.*
 Renard, *s. m. a fox.*
 Rencontre, *s. f. rencounter, occasion.*
 Rencontrer, *v. a. to meet.*
 Rendre, *v. a. to render.*
 (se) Rendre, *v. r. to repair, resort.*
 Renfermer, *v. a. to shut up again, enclose, include.*
 Renommée, *s. f. fame, report.*
 Renouveler, *v. a. to renew, revive.*
 Rentrer, *v. n. to come, go, or get in again.*
 Renversement, *s. m. overturn.*
 Renverser, *s. m. throw down, overthrow.*
 Renvoyer, *v. a. to send again, send back, dismiss.*
 Répandre, *v. to scatter, spread.*
 Réparer, *v. a. to repair, make amends.*
 Repartie, *s. f. repartee, reply.*
 Repartir, *v. n. to reply.*
 Répéter, *v. to repeat.* [cess.
 Repli, *s. m. a fold, winding, re-*
 Replier, *v. a. to fold again.*
 Répondre, *v. to answer, reply.*
 Réponse, *s. f. answer, reply.*
 Reporter, *v. a. to carry back.*
 Repos, *s. m. rest, quiet.*
 Reposer, *v. n. to rest, slumber.*

- (se) Reposer, *v. r. to take rest, settle.*
 Repousser, *v. a. to repel, repulse.*
 Reprendre, *v. a. to retake, resume, reply.*
 Représenter, *v. a. to represent.*
 Reprocher, *v. a. to reproach.*
 Reproduire, *v. a. to reproduce.*
 Républicain, *e. s. a. republican.*
 République, *s. f. republic.*
 Réputation, *s. f. reputation, repute, fame.*
 Requête, *s. f. request, petition.*
 Réseau, *s. m. bag-net, net-work.*
 Réserve, *s. f. reserve, proviso.*
 (à la) Réserve, *adv. except.*
 Réserver, *v. a. to reserve, keep.*
 Résider, *v. a. to reside, abide.*
 Résigner, *v. a. to resign.*
 Résister, *v. n. to resist, oppose.*
 Résolution, *s. f. resolution, resolve.*
 Résoudre, *v. a. to resolve.*
 (se) Résoudre, *v. r. to be resolved.*
 Respect, *s. m. respect, regard.*
 Respecter, *v. a. to respect.*
 Respectueux, *se. a. respectful.*
 Respirer, *v. to breathe.*
 Resplendissant, *e. a. resplendent, glittering. [likeness.*
 Ressemblance, *s. f. resemblance,*
 Ressembler, *v. n. to resemble.*
 Ressentir, *v. a. to feel, resent.*
 (se) Ressentir, *v. r. to savor, smack.*
 Resserrer, *v. a. to bind up, contract. bind.*
 Ressort, *s. m. spring, cause.*
 Ressortir, *v. n. to be under the jurisdiction of.*
 Ressource, *s. f. resource.*
 Ressusciter, *v. to raise, revive.*
 Reste, *s. m. remainder, residue.*
 Rester, *v. n. to remain, stay.*
 Résulter, *v. to result.*
 Retentir, *v. n. to resound, ring.*
 Retiré, *e. a. retired.*
 (se) Retirer, *v. r. to retire.*
 Retomber, *v. n. to fall again.*
 Retour, *s. m. return, vicissitude.*
 Retourner, *v. to return, turn.*
 Retranchement, *s. m. retrenchment.*
 Retrouver, *v. a. to find again.*
 Rêve, *s. m. a dream.*
 Réveil, *s. m. awaking, alarm.*
 Révéler, *v. a. to reveal.*
 Revenir, *v. n. to return.*
 Rêver, *v. n. to dream, rave, be light-headed, muse, think.*
 Révéler, *v. a. to revere, reverence.*
 Revêtir, *v. a. to clothe, invest.*
 Rêveur, *se. a. thoughtful.*
 Revivre, *v. a. to come to life again, renew.*
 Réunir, *v. a. to reunite.*
 Revoir, *v. a. to see again.*
 Révolution, *s. f. revolution.*
 Réussir, *v. a. to succeed, prosper.*
 Rhodes, *Rhodes. [smiling.*
 Riant, *e. a. cheerful, pleasant,*
 Riche, *a. rich, wealthy, —, s. m. a rich man.*
 Richesses, *s. f. pl. riches,*
 Rideau, *s. m. a curtain.*
 Ridicule, *s. m. ridicule, ridiculous thing. —, a. ridiculous.*
 Rien, *pr. nothing, anything.*
 Rienzi, *Rienzi.*
 Rieur, *se. s. a. laughter.*
 Rigide, *a. rigid, stiff, stern.*
 Rigoureux, *se. a. rigorous.*
 Rigueur, *s. f. rigor, severity, sharpness,*

Rime, *s. m.* rhyme.
 Rire, *v. n.* to laugh, joke.
 Rivage, *s. m.* a shore, bank.
 Rival, *e. a.* rival, competitor.
 Rive, *s. f.* bank.
 Roc, *s. m.* a rock.
 Rocailleux, *a.* pebbly.
 Roche, *s. f.* a rock.
 Rocher, *s. m.* a rock.
 Rôder, *v. a.* to rove, ramble.
 Roi, *s. m.* a king.
 Roidir, *v. a.* to stiffen, stretch out.
 Rôle, *s. m.* part.
 Romain, *e. a. s.* Roman.
 Rome, *Rome.*
 Rompre, *v.* to break.
 Romulus, *Romulus.*
 Ronce, *s. f.* briar.
 Rond, *e. a.* round, circular.
 Ronfler, *v. n.* to snore.
 Ronger, *v. a.* to eat, fret.
 Rose, *Rose.* —, *s. f.* a rose.
 Rôti, *s. m.* roasted meat.
 Roue, *s. f.* a wheel.
 Rouer, *v. a.* to break on the wheel.
 Rouge, *a.* red.
 Rougir, *v.* to redden.
 Rouler, *v. a.* to roll, run, revolve.
 Route, *s. f.* road, way, route.
 Royal, *e. a.* royal.
 Royaume, *s. m.* kingdom, realm.
 Royauté, *s. f.* royalty.
 Ruban, *s. m.* ribbon.
 Rude, *a.* harsh, rough.
 Rudesse, *s. f.* harshness, rudeness, severity.
 Rue, *s. f.* a street, lane.
 Ruine, *s. f.* ruin.
 Ruineux, *se. a.* ruinous.
 Ruisseau, *s. m.* brook, rivulet.
 Rustique, *a.* rural, clownish.

Rut, *s. m.* rutting.
 Rutilius, *Rutilius.*

S.

Sa, *pr. f.* his, her, its.
 Sable, *s. m.* sand.
 Sac, *s. m.* sack.
 Sacré, *e. a.* sacred, holy.
 Sacrifice, *s. m.* a sacrifice.
 Sacrifier, *v. a.* to sacrifice.
 Sage, *a.* wise.
 Sage, *s. m.* sage, wise man.
 Sagement, *adv.* wisely.
 Sagesse, *s. f.* wisdom.
 Saint, *e. a.* holy.
 Saint Marc, *St. Mark.*
 Sainteté, *s. f.* holiness.
 Saisir, *v. a.* to seize.
 Saison, *s. f.* season.
 Salaire, *s. m.* salary, wages.
 Salle, *s. f.* hall, room.
 Salpêtre, *s. m.* saltpetre, nitre.
 Saluer, *v. a.* to salute.
 Salut, *s. m.* salutation.
 Salut ! *i.* hail !
 Salulaire, *a.* salutary.
 Sang, *s. m.* blood, race.
 Sanglant, *e. a.* bloody.
 Sanglot, *s. m.* sob, sigh, groan.
 Sans, *prep.* without.
 Santé, *s. f.* health.
 Satan, *Salan,* the devil.
 Satisfaction, *s. f.* satisfaction.
 Satisfaire, *v.* to satisfy.
 Satisfait, *e. a.* contented.
 Savant, *e. a. s.* learned.
 Savoie, *Savoy.*
 Savoir, *v. a.* to know.
 Sauvage, *a.* savage, wild.
 Sauver, *v. a.* to save.
 Scandale, *s. m.* scandal, offence.

- Sceau, *s. m. a seal.*
 Sceller, *v. a. to seal, cramp.*
 Sceptre, *s. m. a sceptre.*
 Science, *s. f. science.*
 Scipion, *Scipio.*
 Scrupuleux, *se. a. scrupulous.*
 Sculpture, *s. f. sculpture.*
 Scutari, *Scutari.*
 Se, *pr. one's self, himself, herself, themselves, itself.*
 Sec, Sèche, *a. dry.*
 Sécheresse, *s. f. dryness.*
 Second, *e. a. s. second.*
 Secouer, *v. a. to shake.*
 Secourir, *v. a. to succor, help.*
 Secours, *s. m. succor, help.*
 Secousse, *s. f. shake, jolt, spring.*
 Secret, *te. a. secret.*
 Secret, *s. m. secret, mystery.*
 Secrétaire, *s. m. secretary.*
 Sectaire, *s. m. a sectary.*
 Séditieux, *se. s. rebel.*
 Séduire, *v. a. to seduce.*
 Sein, *s. m. bosom.*
 Séjour, *s. m. abode, mansion.*
 Seller, *v. a. to saddle.*
 Selon, *prep. according to, after.*
 Semblable, *a. like, similar, alike, such.*
 Semblable, *s. m. fellow creature.*
 Sembler, *v. a. to seem, look.*
 Semelle, *s. f. sole.*
 Semer, *v. a. to sow, spread.*
 Sénateur, *s. m. senator.*
 Sens, *s. m. sense.*
 Sensation, *s. f. sensation.*
 Sensibilité, *s. f. sensibility.*
 Sensible, *a. sensible, tender.*
 Sensitive, *s. f. sensitive plant.*
 Sentiment, *s. m. sentiment, sense, feeling, sensation.*
 Sentinelle, *s. f. sentinel, sentry.*
 Sentir, *v. a. to feel, be sensible of, savor of, perceive.*
 (se) Sentir, *v. r. to feel.*
 Séparer, *v. a. to separate, part.*
 Sépulcre, *s. m. sepulchre, grave.*
 Sérail, *s. m. seraglio.*
 Serein, *e. a. serene, quiet.*
 Sérieux, *se. a. serious, grave.*
 Sermon, *s. m. a sermon, discourse.*
 Serpent, *s. m. serpent, snake.*
 Serpenter, *v. n. to wind.*
 Serre, *s. f. a talon.*
 Serré, *e, a. close.*
 Serré, *part. drawn up.*
 Serrer, *v. a. to squeeze.*
 Servante, *s. f. servant-maid.*
 Service, *s. m. service.*
 Servir, *v. to serve, help, be of use.* [of.
 (se) Servir de, *v. r. to make use*
 Servitude, *s. f. servitude, slavery.*
 Ses, *pr. pl. his, her, its.*
 Sévère, *a. stern.*
 Seul, *e. a. alone, sole, only.* (un)
 Seul, (une) Seule, *a. one.*
 Seulement, *adv. only.*
 Si, *c. if, so.*
 Si bien que, *c. so that.*
 Siècle, *s. m. a century, an age.*
 Siège, *s. m. seat, siege.*
 Sien, ne, *pr. his, hers.*
 Siffler, *v. to whistle, hiss.*
 Signal, *s. m. signal.*
 Signaler, *v. a. to signalize.*
 Signe, *s. m. sign, token.*
 Signifier, *v. a. to signify, mean.*
 Silence, *s. m. silence.*
 Silencieux, *se. a. silent, of few words.*
 Silencieusement, *adv. silently.*
 Sillage, *s. m. track.*

- Sillon, *s. m. a furrow.*
 Sillonner, *v. a. to furrow.*
 Simple, *a. simple, plain.*
 Simplement, *adv. merely, plainly, only.*
 Simplicité, *s. f. simplicity.*
 Sincère, *a. sincere, honest.*
 Sincérité, *s. f. sincerity, candor.*
 Singulier, *e. a. s. m. singular.*
 Singulièrement, *adv. singularly.*
 Sinistre, *a. sinister.*
 Sire, *s. m. sire, lord, Sir.*
 Site, *s. m. site.*
 Sitôt que, *c. as soon as.*
 Situation, *s. f. situation.*
 Six, *a. six.*
 Sixième, *a. s. m. sixth.*
 Sobre, *a. sober, discreet.*
 Sobriété, *s. f. sobriety, temperance.*
 Social, *e. a. social.*
 Société, *s. f. society.*
 Socque, *s. f. sandal, wooden clog.*
 Socrates, *Socrates.*
 Sœur, *s. f. a sister.*
 Soi, *pr. one's self, itself, one.*
 Soi-même, *pr. one's self, himself, herself, itself.*
 Soie, *s. f. silk.*
 Soin, *s. m. care, anxiety.*
 Soir, *s. m. evening, night.*
 Soixante, *a. sixty.*
 Sol, *s. m. soil.*
 Soldat, *s. m. a soldier.*
 Soleil, *s. m. sun.*
 Solide, *a. s. m. solid, strong.*
 Solidement, *adv. solidly, strongly.*
 Solitaire, *a. solitary.*
 Solitude, *s. f. solitude.*
 Sombre, *a. dull, gloomy.*
 Somme, *s. f. a sum.*
 Sommeil, *s. m. sleep.*
 Sommet, *s. m. top, summit.*
 Somp tueux, *se. a. sumptuous, splendid.*
 Son, *s. m. sound, rhyme.*
 Son, *pr. m. his, her, its.*
 Songer, *v. to think, mind.*
 Sonore, *a. sonorous.*
 Sophiste, *s. m. sophist.*
 Sophronisque, *Sophroniscus.*
 Sort, *s. m. fate, lot.*
 Sorte, *s. f. sort, kind, manner.*
 Sortir, *v. n. to go or come out, issue.*
 Sot, Sotte, *a. s. silly, a fool.*
 Sottement, *adv. foolishly.*
 Souci, *s. m. anxiety.*
 Soudain, *e. a. sudden.*
 Soudain, *adv. forthwith.*
 Souffle, *s. m. puff, breath.*
 Souffler, *v. to blow, breathe, whisper.*
 Souffrance, *s. f. suffering.*
 Souffrir, *v. to suffer, endure.*
 Souhait, *s. m. a wish, desire.*
 Souhaiter, *v. a. to wish, desire.*
 Souiller, *v. a. to defile, stain.*
 Soulever, *v. a. to lift, stir up.*
 (se) Soulever, *v. r. to rise.*
 Soulier, *s. m. a shoe.*
 Soumettre, *v. to subdue, submit, subject.*
 Soupçon, *s. m. suspicion.*
 Soupir, *s. m. sigh.*
 Soupirer, *v. n. to sigh.*
 Souplesse, *s. f. suppleness.*
 Source, *s. f. source, spring.*
 Sourcil, *s. m. eye-brow.*
 Sourd, *e. a. s. deaf.*
 Sourire, *v. n. to smile.*
 Sourire, Souris, *s. m. a smile.*
 Souris, *s. f. a mouse.*

- Sous, *prep.* under.
 Soutenir, *v. a.* to support, *sustain, maintain.*
 Souterrain, *s. m.* vault.
 Souterrain, *a.* subterraneous.
 Soutien, *s. m.* a support.
 (se) Souvenir, *v. r.* to remember.
 Souvenir, *s. m.* remembrance.
 Souvent, *adv.* often, frequently.
 Souverain, *e, a. s.* sovereign.
 Sparta, *Sparta.*
 Spartiate, *Spartan.*
 Spectacle, *s. m.* spectacle, show.
 Spectateur, *rice. s.* spectator.
 Spectre, *s. m.* spectre, ghost.
 Spéculation, *s. f.* speculation.
 Sphère, *s. f.* sphere.
 Splendeur, *s. f.* splendor, pomp.
 Statue, *s. f.* statue, figure.
 Stérile, *a.* sterile, barren.
 Structure, *s. f.* structure.
 Stupide, *a.* stupid, dull.
 Stupide, *s.* blockhead, dunce.
 Style, *s. m.* style.
 Styx, *Styx.*
 Subir, *v. n.* to undergo, suffer.
 Subjuguer, *v. a.* to subdue.
 Sublime, *a.* sublime, grand.
 Submerger, *v. a.* to drown, submerge, sink. [*nate.*]
 Subordonner, *v. a.* to subordinate.
 Subsistance, *s. f.* subsistence.
 Substance, *s. f.* substance, being.
 Subtil, *e. a.* subtle, fine.
 Succéder, *v. n.* to succeed.
 Succès, *s. m.* success.
 Successeur, *a. s. m.* successor.
 Successif, *ve. a.* successive.
 Succession, *s. f.* succession.
 Suffire, *v. n.* to suffer, satisfy.
 Suffrage, *s. m.* suffrage, vote, approbation.
 Sujet, *te, a.* subject.
 Sujet, *s. m.* subject, cause, reason.
 Suisse, *Switzerland.*
 Suite, *s. f.* train, series, succession, consequence.
 Suivant, *e. a.* following, next.
 Suivant, *s. m.* a follower.
 Suivante, *s. f.* waiting-gentlewoman, companion.
 Suivre, *v. a.* to follow, attend, pursue.
 Superbe, *a.* haughty, sumptuous, superb.
 Supérieur, *e. a. s.* superior.
 Supériorité, *s. f.* superiority.
 Superstitieux, *se. a.* superstitious.
 Supplice, *s. m.* punishment, pain.
 Supporter, *v. a.* to support, bear.
 Supposer, *v. a.* to suppose.
 Suppôt, *s. m.* agent, member.
 Suprême, *a.* supreme.
 Sur, *prep.* on, upon, over, about, in, by, near, from.
 Sûr, *e, a.* sure, certain.
 Sûreté, *s. f.* safety, security.
 Surface, *s. f.* surface. [*ly.*]
 Sur-le-champ, *adv.* immediate.
 Surpasser, *v. a.* to excel.
 Surprendre, *v. a.* to surprise, astonish.
 Surprise, *s. f.* surprise.
 Surtout, *adv.* above all, especially.
 Survenir, *v. n.* to happen.
 Susceptible, *a.* susceptible.
 Susciter, *v. a.* to raise.
 Suspendre, *v. a.* to hang up, suspend.
 (en) Suspens, *adv.* in suspense.
 Sylla, *Sylla.*
 Sylva, *Sylva.*
 Système, *s. m.* system.

T.

Ta, *pr. f. thy.*Table, *s. f. table.*Tableau, *s. m. a picture.*Tâcher, *v. n. to endeavor, strive.*Taille, *s. f. size.*Taillis, *s. m. copse, underwood.*(se) Taire, *v. r. to be silent.*Talent, *s. m. talent, parts.*Talisman, *s. m. a talisman.*Talon, *s. m. the heel.*Talus, *s. m. slopeness.*Tandis que, *c. whilst, as long as.*Tant, *adv. so many, as much.*Tante, *s. f. aunt.*Tantôt, *adv. a little while ago, sometimes.*Tard, *adv. late, too slow.*Tarder, *v. n. to delay.*Tardif, *ve. tardy, slow.*Tatius, *Tatius.*Taureau, *s. m. a bull.*Te, *pr. thee thyself.*Teint, *s. m. complexion.*Tel, Telle, *a. such, like.*Tel, Telle, *s. such a one, many a one.*Télémaque, *Telemachus.*Tellement, *adv. so much, so.*Téméraire, *a. s. rash.*Témoigner, *v. to testify.*Témoin, *s. m. witness.*Tempérament, *s. m. constitution, temper.* [*per.*]Tempérer, *v. a. to qualify, tem-*Tempête, *s. f. tempest, storm.*Temple, *s. m. temple, church.*Temporel, *le. a. temporal.*Temps, *s. m. time.*Tendre, *a. tender, soft, nice.*Ténébreux, *se. a. gloomy.*Tenir, *v. to hold, keep, stick, be connected.*(se) Tenir, *v. r. to have.*Tente, *s. f. a tent.*Tenter, *v. a. to tempt, tempter.*Terme, *s. m. term, bound.*Terminer, *v. a. to terminate, end.*Terrain, *s. m. ground, soil.*Terrasse, *s. f. terrace, platform.*Terre, *s. f. earth, land.*Terreur, *s. f. terror.*Terrible, *a. terrible.*Tes, *pr. pl. thy.*Tête, *s. f. head.*Thé, *s. m. tea.*Théâtre, *s. m. theatre, stage.*Théorie, *s. f. theory.*Thomas, *Thomas.*Tibulle, *Tibullus.*Tigre, *s. m. a tiger.*Timide, *a. timid, bashful.*Tirer, *v. to draw, pull, fire, take out or off, derive, go.*(se) Tirer, *v. r. to get out or off.*Tison, *s. m. brand, firebrand.*Tissu, *e. a. woven, interwoven.*Titre, *s. m. title.*Toi, *pr. thou, thee, thyself.*Toilette, *s. f. a toilet.*Toison, *s. f. fleece.*Toit, *s. m. the roof.*Tombe, *s. f. tomb, grave.*Tombeau, *s. m. tomb.* [*drop.*]Tomber, *v. n. to fall, tumble,*Ton, *s. m. tone, strain, style.*Ton, *pr. thy, thine.*Tonnant, *e. a. thundering.*Tonnerre, *s. m. thunder.*Torché, *s. f. torch.*Torrent, *s. m. a torrent.*Tort, *s. m. wrong, injury.*Tôt, *adv. soon, quickly.*Total, *e. a. total, whole, utter.*

- Touchant, *e. a. moving, affecting.*
 Toucher, *v. to touch, strike.*
 Toujours, *adv. always, ever.*
 Tour, *s. f. tower.*
 Tour, *s. m. turn, circumference.*
 Tour-à-tour, *adv. by turns.*
 Tourbillon, *s. m. whirlwind.*
 Tourment, *s. m. torment, torture.*
 Tousser, *v. n. to cough, hem.*
 Tout, *e. a. all, whole, every.*
 Tout, *s. m. whole, all.*
 Tout, *adv. wholly, entirely, quite.*
 Tout-à-coup, *adv. suddenly.*
 Tout-à-fait, *adv. quite, wholly.*
 Toutefois, *c. nevertheless, yet.*
 Toute-puissance, *s. f. omnipotence.*
 Tout-puissant, *e. a. almighty.*
 Trace, *s. f. footstep, track, trace.*
 Tracer, *v. a. to delineate, chalk out, describe, trace.*
 Traduire, *v. a. to translate.*
 Tragédie, *s. f. a tragedy.*
 Trahir, *v. a. to betray.* [son.
 Trahison, *s. f. treachery, treason.*
 Train, *s. m. track, way.*
 Traîner, *v. a. to draw, drag, trail.*
 Trait, *s. m. arrow, dart, trace, trait, feature, stroke.*
 Traiter, *v. a. to treat, use.*
 Trancher, *v. a. to cut off, decide, distinguish.*
 Tranquille, *a. quiet, calm.*
 Tranquillement, *adv. quietly.*
 (se) Transformer, *v. r. to be transformed.*
 Transition, *s. f. transition.*
 Transport, *s. m. transport, rap- ture.* [convey.
 Transporter, *v. a. to transport,*
- Travail, *s. m. work, labor.*
 Travailler, *v. to work, trouble.*
 Travaux, *s. m. pl. works, labors.*
 Travers, *s. m. misfortune.* A' travers, *Au travers, through.*
 Traverser, *v. a. to cross.*
 Treillage, *s. m. arbor-work.*
 Treille, *s. f. a vine-arbor.*
 Tremblant, *e. a. shaking.*
 Trembler, *v. to tremble, shake, quaver.*
 Trempe, *s. f. temper.*
 Tremper, *v. to soak, steep.*
 Trésor, *s. m. treasure.*
 Triangulaire, *a. triangular.*
 Tribu, *s. f. a tribe.*
 Tribun, *s. m. a tribune.*
 Tribune, *s. f. rostrum, tribune.*
 Tribut, *s. m. tribute, tax.*
 Triomphant, *e. a. triumphant.*
 Triomphe, *s. m. triumph.*
 Triste, *a. sad, dull.*
 Tristesse, *s. f. grief, sadness.*
 Troie, *Troy.*
 Trois, *a. s. m. three, third.*
 Troisième, *a. s. m. third.*
 Tromper, *v. a. to deceive, cheat.*
 (se) Tromper, *v. r. to be mistaken.*
 Trompeur, *se. a. deceitful.*
 Trône, *s. m. throne.*
 Trop, *adv. too.*
 Trou, *s. m. a hole, gap.*
 Trouble, *a. cloudy, dim, dull.*
 Troubler, *v. a. to trouble.*
 Troupe, *s. f. a troop, band.*
 Troupeau, *s. m. flock.*
 Trouver, *v. a. to find.*
 Tumulte, *s. m. a tumult, riot.*
 Turban, *s. m. a turban.*
 Turbulent, *e. a. turbulent.*
 Turc, *Turque, s. Turk.*
 Tyran, *s. m. tyrant.*

Tyrannie, *s. f. tyranny.*
 Tyrannique, *a. tyrannical.*

U.

Un, Une, *art. one, a, an.*
 Union, *s. f. union, concord.*
 Unique, *a. only, sole.*
 Uniquement, *adv. only, entirely.*
 Unir, *v. a. to unite.*
 Univers, *s. m. the universe.*
 Universel, *le. a. universal.*
 Urne, *s. f. urn.*
 Usage, *s. m. usage, use.*
 Usbek, *Usbek.*
 User, *v. to use, waste, wear out.*
 En user, *to practise.*
 Utile, *a. useful.*
 Utilité, *s. f. utility, profit, use.*

V.

Vagabond, *e. a. s. vagabond.*
 Vague, *s. m. void.*
 Vague, *s. f. a wave, surge.*
 Vague, *a. vague.*
 Vaillant, *e. a. valiant.*
 Vain, *e. a. vain.*
 Vaincre, *v. n. to vanquish, subdue.*
 Vainqueur, *a. conquering.*
 Vainqueur, *s. m. a conqueror.*
 Vaisseau, *s. m. a vessel, ship.*
 Valeur, *s. f. worth, valor.*
 Vallée, *s. f. valley, vale.*
 Vallon, *s. m. dale, little valley.*
 Valoir, *v. a. to be worth.*
 Vanité, *s. f. vanity, pride.*
 Vanter, *v. a. to extol.*
 (se) Vanter, *v. r. to boast of.*

Vapeur, *s. f. vapor.*
 Varier, *v. a. to vary.*
 Variété, *s. f. variety.*
 Vaste, *a. vast.*
 Vaucouleurs, *Vaucouleurs.*
 Vaux, *Vaux.*
 Végétation, *s. f. vegetation.*
 Végétaux, *s. m. pl. vegetables.*
 Végéter, *v. n. to vegetate.*
 Veiller, *v. to watch.*
 Veine, *s. f. a vein.*
 Vendre, *v. a. to sell.*
 Vénération, *s. f. veneration.*
 Vénétien, *Venetian.*
 Vengeance, *s. f. vengeance, revenge.*
 Venger, *v. a. to revenge, avenge.*
 Vénimeux, *se. a. venomous.*
 Venir, *v. n. to come, have just.*
 Venise, *Venice.*
 Vent, *s. m. wind.*
 Vénus, *Venus.*
 Ver, *s. m. worm.*
 Verbe, *s. m. the Word.*
 Verdure, *s. f. verdure.*
 Véritable, *a. true, genuine.*
 Vérité, *s. f. truth.*
 Vermeil, *le. a. vermillion, lively red.*
 Vers, *s. m. verse.*
 Vers, *prep. towards, about, to.*
 Verser, *v. a. to pour, shed.*
 Vert, *e. a. green.*
 Vertu, *s. f. virtue, power.*
 Vertueux, *se. a. s. virtuous.*
 Vêtement, *s. m. raiment, garment.*
 Vêtu, *e. a. clad.*
 Veuf, *s. m. widower.*
 Veuve, *s. f. a widow.*
 Vice, *s. m. vice.*
 Vicissitude, *s. f. vicissitude.*
 Victime, *s. f. a victim.*

- Victoire, *s. f.* victory.
 Vide, *a.* void, empty.
 Vie, *s. f.* life.
 Vieil, Vieux, *a.* old, ancient.
 Vieille, *s. f.* old woman.
 Vieillard, *s. m.* old man.
 Vieillesse, *s. f.* old age.
 Vieillir, *v. n.* to grow old.
 Vierge, *s. f.* a virgin.
 Vif, *ve. a.* alive, sprightly, bright.
 Vif, *s. m.* the quick.
 Vigne, *s. f.* vine.
 Vigneron, *s. m.* a vine-dresser.
 Vigoureux, *se. a.* vigorous, brisk.
 Vil, Vile, *a.* vile, mean.
 Village, *s. m.* village.
 Ville, *s. f.* city, town.
 Vin, *s. m.* wine.
 Vingt, *a.* twenty.
 Violence, *s. f.* violence.
 Violent, *e. a.* violent.
 Violette, *s. f.* a violet.
 Virgile, *Virgile*.
 Virginie, *Virginia*.
 Visage, *s. m.* face, look, countenance.
 Visible, *a.* visible.
 Visiter, *v. a.* to visit.
 Vite, *adv.* quickly, fast.
 Vivant, *e. a. s.* living, alive, quick.
 Vivement, *adv.* sensibly, to the quick.
 Vivre, *v. a.* to live, behave.
 Vivre, *s. m.* food.
 Vœu, *s. m.* a vow, a vote. Vœux, *pl.* wishes, vows.
 Voie, *s. f.* way.
- Voilà, *adv.* that is, those are, there is, there are, behold.
 Voile, *s. m.* veil.
 Voiler, *v. a.* to veil.
 Voir, *v. n.* to see, behold.
 Voisin, *e. a.* neighboring.
 Voiture, *s. f.* carriage.
 Voix, *s. f.* voice.
 Volage, *a. s.* fickle.
 Voler, *v. n.* to fly.
 Voleur, *se. s.* robber, thief.
 Volontairement, *adv.* voluntarily.
 Volupté, *s. f.* voluptuousness, pleasure.
 Votre, Vos, *pr.* your.
 Vouer, *v. a.* to devote.
 Vouloir, *v. a.* to will, be willing, wish.
 Vous, *pro.* you, ye.
 Voûte, *s. f.* vault, arch.
 Voyage, *s. m.* voyage.
 Voyageur, *se. s.* traveller.
 Vrai, *e. a.* true, right.
 Vraiment, *adv.* truly, indeed.
 Vue, *s. f.* sight, view.

X.

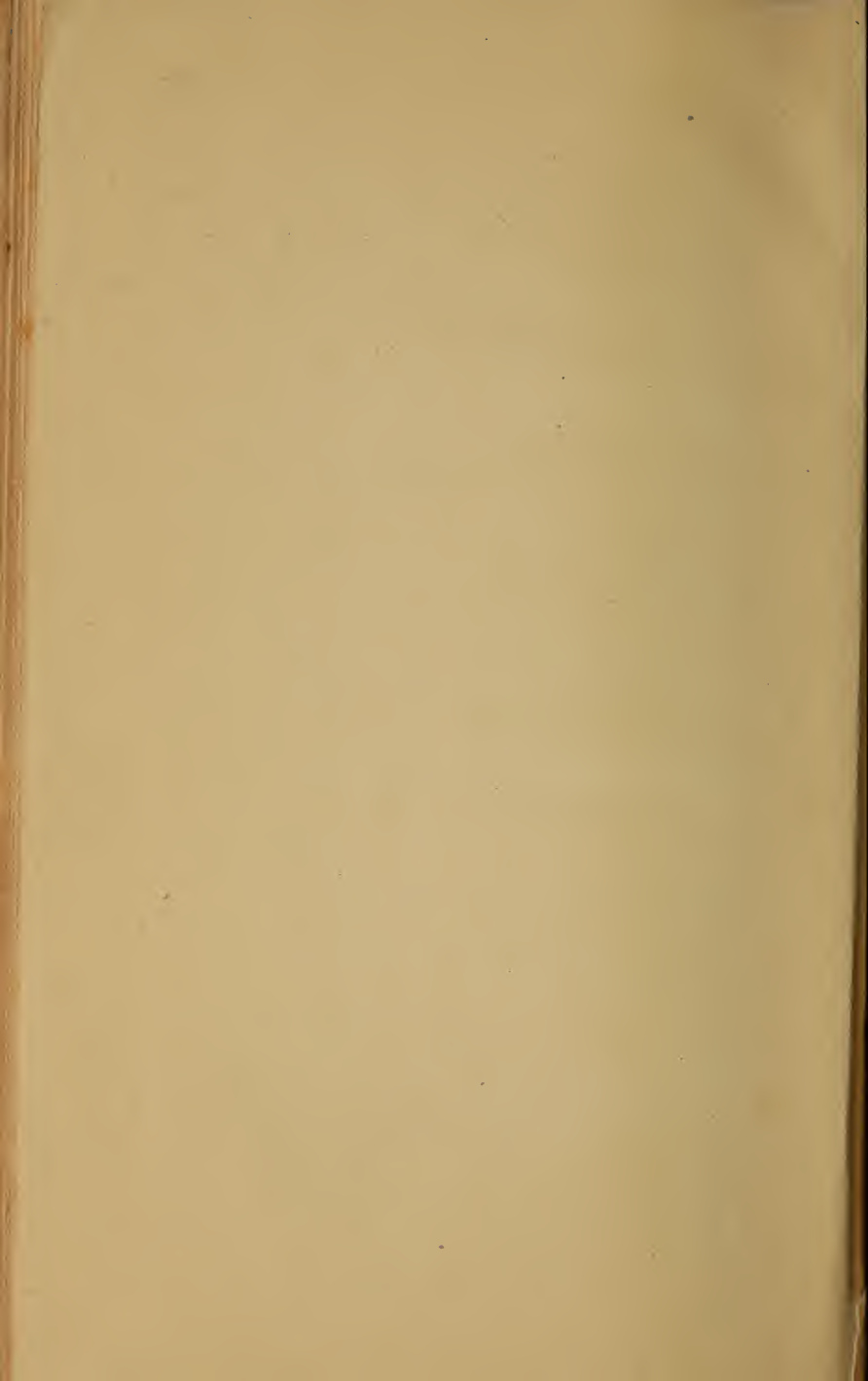
- Y, *adv. and pr.* there, thither, of it.
 Yemen, *Yemen*.
 Yeux, *s. pl.* the eyes. *Vid.* Oeil.

Z.

- Zèle, *s. m.* zeal, affection.
 Zéphyr, *s. m.* zephyr.

END.







Deacidified using the Bookkeeper process.
Neutralizing agent: Magnesium Oxide
Treatment Date: Sept. 2006

PreservationTechnologies

A WORLD LEADER IN PAPER PRESERVATION

111 Thomson Park Drive
Cranberry Township, PA 16066
(724) 779-2111



LIBRARY OF CONGRESS



0 003 116 752 8